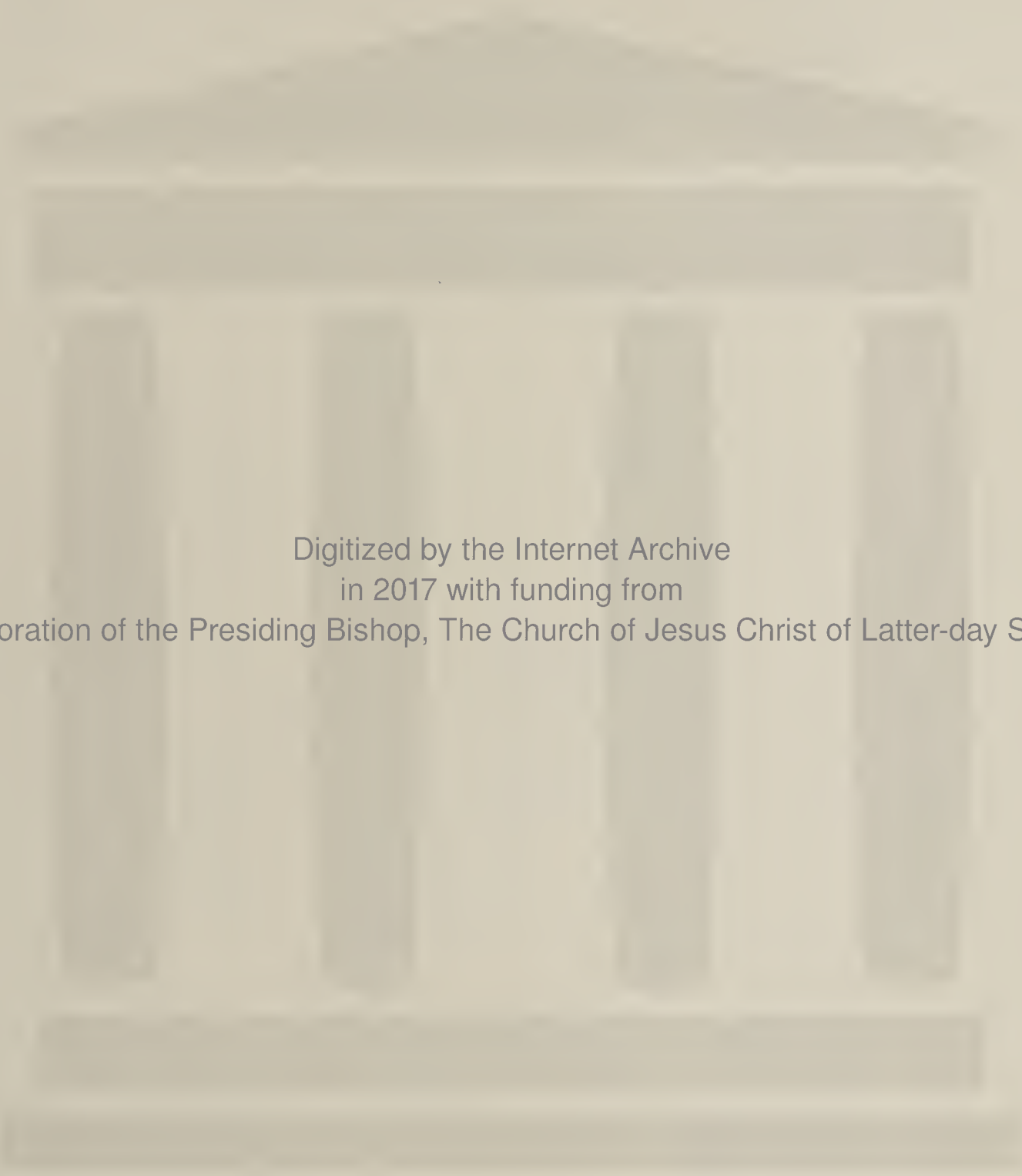


0113685



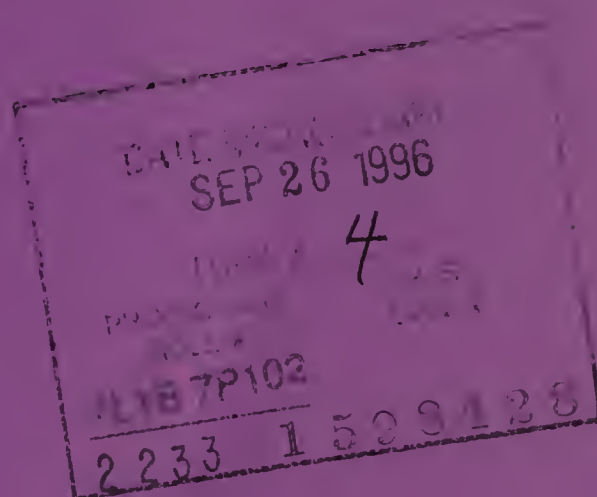
Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2017 with funding from
Corporation of the Presiding Bishop, The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints

A FAMILY GENEALOGY SCOTT AND SITES FAMILIES

1560 - 1995

BIOGRAPHICAL HISTORIES

FIFTH EDITION
JUNE 1995



FAMILY HISTORY LIBRARY
38 N. COO L WEST TEMPLE
SALT LAKE CITY, UTAH 84150

11/1/96
11/1/96
11/1/96



Donated to the Family History Library by

KENNETH M SCOTT

1401 30th ST E

INVER GROVE HEIGHTS MN 55077

PREFACE

This Biographical History is an attempt to tell the story of our branches of the Scott and Sites families as it was lived from the earliest time we can find records on them in America through the lives of the grandparents of the generation doing the research. Tracing our European roots may come at a later date.

The form and format of this book represents a somewhat different approach than most genealogical investigations. The intent has not been to list "who begat who" and when, but to in some way define who and what kind of people our ancestors were. In so doing it becomes a memorial to them, but more importantly, it provides a history of our beginnings and knowing that, we can better know ourselves.

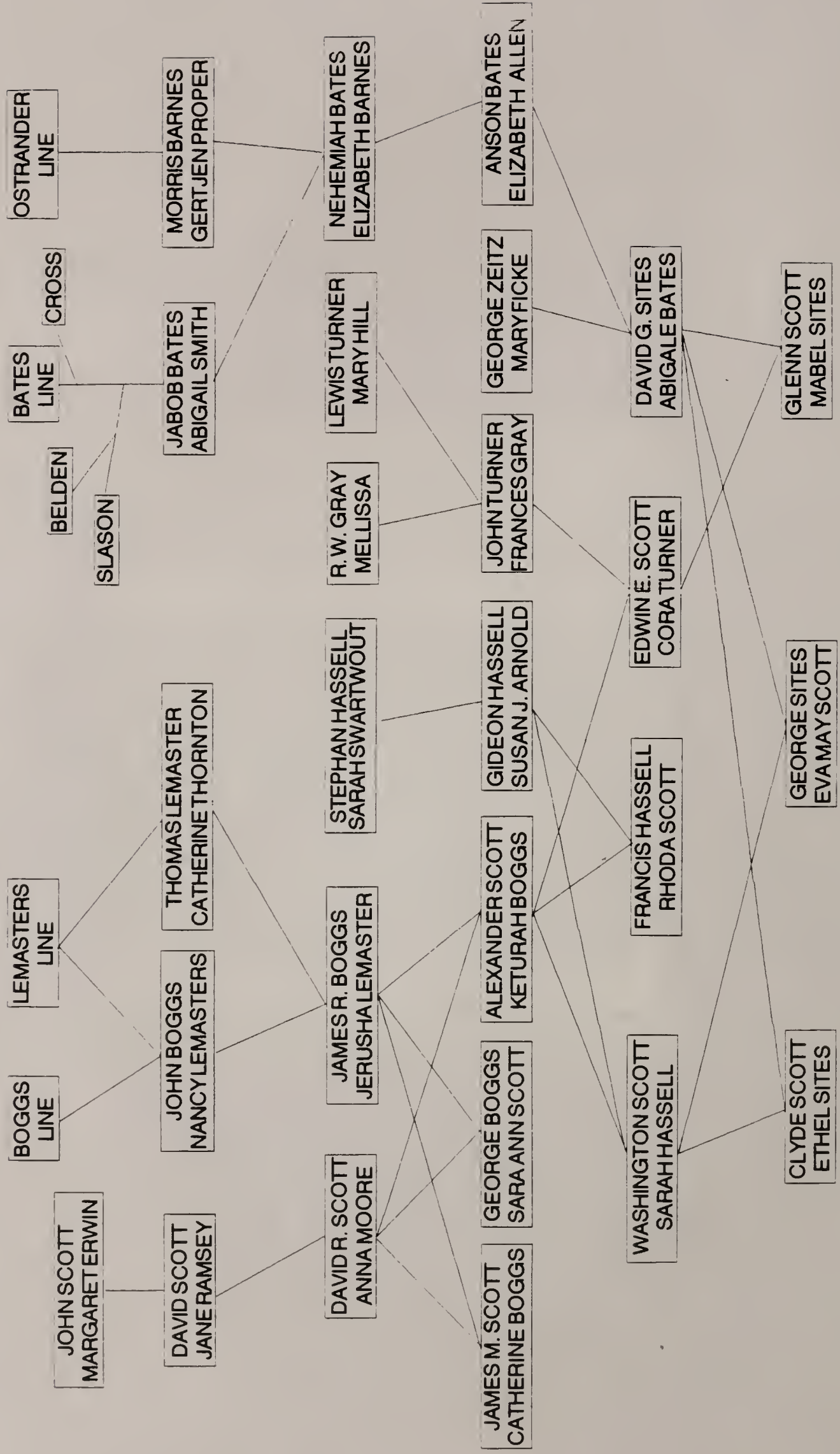
One of the most surprising things we have found during our investigation has been the very long history of the Scott family in America. We have branches of our family that arrived a mere ten years after the Pilgrims, coming ashore in Massachusetts in 1630. Two other branches are known to have arrived in the 1600's, several in the 1700's, and the very latest by 1854. We therefore have ancestors that lived through and were a part of all but a very few years of American History. We have been here from the beginnings of colonization through the Indian Wars, the French and Indian War, the Revolution, the War of 1812, the Civil War, and all that followed. Our ancestors were a part of the great migrations that settled this vast land of ours, and helped turn raw wilderness, mountains and prairie into the nation we have today. So our history is American History, and it is in that context that we will attempt to tell our story.

However, this Biographical History could not have been written without first knowing the "who begat who". Therefore, a substantial data base has been built using the Church of Latter Day Saints (Mormon) computer program titled Personal Ancestral File. The data base presently contains records of over 2,000 individuals and nearly 500 families of our Scott and Sites family lines. It spans up to fourteen generations from the early 1500's in Europe to the present time. Since the output of this data in Family Group Record format requires over a ream of paper, this data has not been reproduced for distribution with this Biographical History. However, all of this data, or any subset of it, is available from the author by request. In addition, this data base is in the Mormon Family History Library in Salt Lake City and it is therefore available through any of the local Mormon Church Family History Centers throughout the country. A visit to one of these libraries will allow complete examination of the data base and extractions may be made of the information therein. The data base held by the Mormon Church will necessarily be out of date since research is continuing. For an up to date copy of the data base, I will provide a data disk containing all the current data. The Personal Ancestral File program is available to the general public for a very reasonable cost from the LDS Church. I will provide a printed subset of the Family Group Records to those interested. A sample of such a record appears at the end of this Preface.

I have also "personalized" most copies of this edition with a Pedigree Chart of each person for whom a book was printed. This chart was created by the Personal Ancestor File program and will be helpful in quickly determining just who your ancestors were and therefore which chapters of the book will be of the most interest to you. This chart appears at the end of this Preface.

A second data base has been collected for this project and consists of copies of the records used to construct the Biographical Histories. The data base contains copies of census records, birth and death certificates, wills, land deeds, newspaper obituaries, wedding announcements, legal notices and news articles, excerpts from family bibles, books, personal letters, wedding licenses, and even tax records. These records provide the evidential data required to establish the validity of our history, and every effort has been made to be as accurate in our story as possible. Where there is documented evidence, the evidence is cited. Where the story is conjectural, it is identified as such. However, all recorded data is subject to error and is often incomplete, as well as conflicting with other data. In addition, human memory has been found to be inaccurate and unreliable, including our own, though personal memories almost always contain some essential elements of truth. As a result, the story told is that which is supported by the "preponderance of evidence", and will be defended only to that limit. If anyone desires copies of any of these records, they will be provided on request.

GLENN LEROY SCOTT AND GEORGE ANSON SITES FAMILY GENEALOGY



The format of the Biographical History uses the Scott line as the trunk of the family tree and other families are attached to it at the generation level where marriages between them occurred. Page 2 depicts a "roadmap" of the Biographical History ending with the generation of the parents of the generation doing the research. The history of that generation has not yet been written and may be added at a later date.

The Biographical History begins with the story of the Scotch-Irish people, though that does not show on the "roadmap". The "preponderance of evidence" is that the Scott line and many lines associated with it were Scotch-Irish. Since that is the ethnic background of the Scott trunk of the family tree, the Scotch-Irish are given special treatment. To insist on that exclusive heritage however, would deny the contribution of other races.

The author and his siblings and first cousins all recall that family tradition has been that we were of Scotch-Irish, English, Dutch, and German decent. As our search for our family roots has progressed, the evidence as to the correctness of this tradition, and the source of the ethnic blood identified therein, has mounted, though we have been occasionally surprised at who brought what blood to the family line. At the level of our grand parents, it has become clear as to who contributed what to our genetic makeup.

David George Sites was full blooded German. His wife, Cora Abigale Bates, was nearly all English, but had a Dutch grandmother and was therefore at least one quarter Dutch. Edwin Everett and Washington Christopher Scott were Scotch-Irish, though their maternal line was partly English. Cora Turner was thought to be English, but we have since discovered that she was half English and half Dutch. For the record, but certainly of little consequence, my siblings and myself and most of my first cousins are: Scotch-Irish, 5/32nds. English, 14/32nds. Dutch, 5/32nds. German, 8/32nds. That all adds up to one American.

Indeed, all our ethnic roots are buried deep in American History. While we can't lay claim to a plank of the Mayflower or claim to be descendent from the Pilgrims that arrived in 1620, we are descended from people of that tradition, and only a few years later in arriving on American shores. Our first English landing, was in Massachusetts in 1630. Our English ancestors were in Connecticut helping to settle the town of Stamford in 1640 and 1641. Some of our Dutch ancestors arrived in "New Amsterdam", later New York, in 1659 and 1660. Another branch of the English arrived in Maryland in 1670. Our Scotch-Irish ancestors apparently all landed somewhere on the Delaware River during a Scotch-Irish migration in the 1720's, one branch pressing on to Pennsylvania, the other to Virginia. Our German blood was the last to arrive, within a very few years of 1850, well before one of the defining events of American History, the Civil War. Our German immigrant great grandfather gave his life in that war, as did other men of our family lines.

Our story begins with David Scott who is believed to be this Scott family line's primogenitor in America. His son John Scott is then treated in detail, followed by his son, David R. Scott. David R. Scott's brother Alexander Scott is also treated in that chapter. The Lemaster and Boggs family follows since three of David R. Scott's children married Boggs family members. This three way branching is treated under the James M. Scott, Sarah Ann Scott, and Alexander Scott chapters. One of James M. Scott's grandsons, George Robert Scott of Casper, Wyoming, now deceased, has been a major contributor to that branch and the Sarah Ann Scott line is represented by the Bill Taylor family now living in Ralston, Nebraska.

Alexander Scott is treated in detail in the Scott family line since he and Keturah Boggs had eleven children, four of them contributing significant progeny to the current Scott extended family. David R. Scott's last son, David Wallace Scott is then discussed, he was one of at least nine members of our ancestral lines who served in the Civil War. He did not survive and left no offspring.

The Hassell family is then introduced since two of Alexander Scott's children married Hassells. Most of the Hassell family lines after Gideon Hassell are presented. The Hassells are currently represented by Edna Cranor of Austin, Colorado, and the daughters of Zala Hassell in Minnesota and North Dakota. Other Hassell families reside in California and Australia.

Washington C. Scott and Sarah Ann Hassell are then treated in detail, while the Rhoda Melissa Scott/Frank Hassell and John Henry Hassell lines were discussed in the previous chapter.

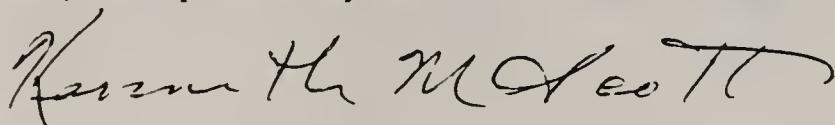
The Turner family is then introduced to set the stage for the marriage of Edwin Everett Scott to Cora Alice Turner. Edwin Everett Scott is also treated in detail, his history closely paralleling that of his brother Washington.

The Sites family begins with George Zeitz, the Sites family primogenitor in America, and a casualty of the Civil War. Then the Bates line takes us back to very early America to address our New England English and Dutch heritage. A product of those early American ethnic groups, Cora Abigale Bates, married David George Sites who is then treated in detail. Three of his children married children of Washington Christopher and Edwin Everett Scott. From these unions came the generation doing the research for this project.

While this completes the material presented in this edition of our families Biographical History, there are known branches of the tree that have been treated very lightly or not at all. These omissions are due primarily to lack of time and/or information, and hopefully, with the cooperation of members of those branches, their stories can be added in future editions.

As the family "Scribe", and publisher of this edition, I note that the research that has gone into this work has been a cooperative effort. The principal contributors have been my brothers, Donavon and Edwin Scott and my first cousin, Lester Sites. Other significant contributors have been my sister Lorraine Sanders, my first cousins Marjorie Stene and Edwin King, my first cousin once removed, Grace Wright, and lastly, Betty (Hassell) Fashant, first cousin to the Sites family line. My other brother and cousins have all contributed to some degree with research assistance and memories of times past, and many other family members took the time to record and pass to me the vital statistics relating to their families. To all of them my thanks. Also my thanks to the many un-named who contributed, knowingly and unknowingly, to our efforts. There are more of you than you can imagine.

Finally, I would like to solicit all readers cooperation in the correction and improvement of our Biographical History. We know there are errors, gaps, and omissions in the current edition. Your inputs will help to correct those, thereby increasing the value of future editions for future generations.



Kenneth M. Scott

1401 80th St. E.

Inver Grove Heights, MN 55077-3417 (612) 451-9026

FAMILY GROUP RECORD

24 May 1995

Page 1

=====

HUSBAND Kenneth Marvin SCOTT

BORN: 4 Apr 1930 PLACE: Bismarck, Burleigh Co., North Dakota
CHR.: 15 Feb 1942 PLACE: Congregational C, Hill City, Pennington Co., South Dakota
DIED: PLACE:
BUR.: PLACE:
MARR: 12 Mar 1955 PLACE: Long Beach, Los Angeles Co., California
FATHER: Glenn Leroy SCOTT
MOTHER: Mabel Claire SITES

=====

WIFE Mary Jane PASEWALDT

BORN: 6 Oct 1931 PLACE: Methodist Hosp., La Crosse, La Crosse Co., Wisconsin
CHR.: 15 Nov 1931 PLACE: La Crescent, Houston Co., Minnesota
DIED: 7 Mar 1982 PLACE: Inver Grove Hgts, Dakota Co., Minnesota
BUR.: PLACE: Mormon Coulee Pk, La Crosse, La Crosse Co., Wisconsin
FATHER: William George Arthur PASEWALDT
MOTHER: Elsie Marie Theresa SCHEIL

=====

CHILDREN

1. NAME: Susan Lorraine SCOTT
---- BORN: 7 Oct 1958 PLACE: Peninsula Hosp., Carmel, Monterey Co., California
F CHR.: 28 Dec 1958 PLACE: Chapel, Navy P.G. School, Monterey, California
DIED: PLACE:
BUR.: PLACE:
SPOUSE: David Milton LARSON
MARR: 27 Oct 1984 PLACE: Minneapolis, Hennepin Co., Minnesota
2. NAME: Julie Ann SCOTT
---- BORN: 2 Aug 1962 PLACE: Sharp Mem. Hosp., San Diego, San Diego Co., California
F CHR.: 3 Mar 1963 PLACE: English Lutheran, La Crosse, La Crosse Co., Wisconsin
DIED: PLACE:
BUR.: PLACE:
SPOUSE: Anthony John NELSON
MARR: 14 Jul 1984 PLACE: Fort Snelling Ch, Minneapolis, Hennepin Co., Minnesota
3. NAME: Linda Louise SCOTT
---- BORN: 27 Jun 1965 PLACE: Memorial Hosp., Long Beach, Los Angeles Co., California
F CHR.: 25 Jul 1965 PLACE: Bethlehem Lthrn, Los Alamitos, Orange Co., California
DIED: PLACE:
BUR.: PLACE:
SPOUSE:
MARR: PLACE:
4. NAME:
---- BORN: PLACE:
CHR.: PLACE:
DIED: PLACE:
BUR.: PLACE:
SPOUSE:
MARR: PLACE:

=====

Phone:

TABLE OF CONTENTS

PREFACE	
THE SCOTCH-IRISH	1
THE SCOTT PRIMOGENITOR	9
JOHN SCOTT	20
DAVID SCOTT	31
DAVID R. SCOTT	39
THE LEMASTER FAMILY	55
THE BOGGS FAMILY	76
JAMES MOORE SCOTT	83
SARAH ANN SCOTT	92
ALEXANDER SCOTT	97
DAVID WALLACE SCOTT	105
THE HASSELL FAMILY	108
WASHINGTON C. SCOTT	129
THE TURNER AND GRAY FAMILIES	135
EDWIN EVERETT SCOTT	145
GEORGE ZEITZ (SITES)	161
THE OSTRANDER FAMILY	165
THE BATES FAMILY	170
DAVID GEORGE SITES	188

THE SCOTCH-IRISH

The term Scotch-Irish, when applied to that unique racial strain of people that is so important in the colonial, revolutionary and contemporary history of the United States, is almost universally misunderstood. The common interpretation of the term is that the Scotch-Irish are a biological product of the two races, the Scotch and the Irish, the blood mix probably being in nearly equal parts. Quite the contrary, there is no Irish blood in the Scotch-Irishman, in spite of the name by which we know him. It is the purpose of this section of this Biographical History to trace the racial beginnings of our family, incidentally correcting the mistaken belief that we are part Irish, but more importantly, setting the historical and cultural context out of which we came. It is those contexts which are necessary for the current and future generations of this family line to understand who and what their ancestors were, and thereby better know themselves.

There is a limit to how far back in history one must go, and to what detail, to establish the required contexts. James Mitschner might begin with the geological creation of the British Isles, a strategy he has used in many of his books. This History will deal with that aspect not at all, it is the Scotch-Irishman's bloodline that is of interest, though the stones on which he trod necessarily shaped his foot as well as his character. In-so-far as prehistory is concerned, suffice it to say that we are dealing with that race of people who evolved from the Druids and Celts in what is now called the Lowlands of Scotland.

The Scottish Lowlands begin just north of the border with England, progressing northward to the Scottish Highlands in the northern and western part of Scotland. The Highlanders, Lowlanders and the Irish on their island to the west, were largely of Celtic Origin. Races of other people began to conquer these islands, for our purposes beginning about the time of the Roman Empire and the time of Christ. Neither Ireland nor the Scottish Highlands offered much incentive for raiders, or reason to stay, since the basis of wealth was agriculture, and taking of essentially worthless land away from the tough and warlike Celts of little wealth made little sense. The Lowland Scots, on the other hand, lived in an agriculturally productive area, and hence were worth the cost of conquest and occupation. This area then, developed a much different race. While the Lowlanders were originally Celts, their area came under the dominion of first the Romans, followed by Friesians, Angles, Saxons, Danes, Norwegians, Normans, and Flemings. As each group overcame the one before it, they added their blood to the original Celtic strain and slowly transformed the Lowland Scot into a different race. He became much like, but different from, the blood line of the English, different because of the original Celtic. The Highland Scot was not so differentiated. The Highlander, having less material goods and suitable land to plunder, and taking advantage of their rugged terrain and warlike nature, successfully avoided domination. As a result, they changed hardly at all. They lived with sword in hand in their wild uplands, staying with their own people, and having little or no intermarriage with their Lowland kin. In blood, they remained the warlike Celt, and evolved little, either socially or economically. While the Highlanders are a picturesque and valiant people, their contribution to the progress of civilization has been comparatively small. In fact, they were but slowly and reluctantly subdued to the company of civilized men.

The Irish too changed little, for much the same reasons that the Highlander retained his Celtic nature. The Irish also had the advantage of another body of water between them and the invaders, and it was not until the English Kings felt it necessary to conquer them for essentially political reasons, were they subdued by another race and their bloodline began to change.

The name Scott was that of a clan of Lowland Scots living near the English border in the southeast section of what is now Scotland. There is currently no evidence that the two names, Scott and Scotland, are derivations one of the other. If there is a derivation, it would seem that Scotland would more naturally derive as a name for that area in which the Scotts lived, as opposed to the clan being named for the country in which it resided. It would be nice for we Scotts to be able to claim that we have a country, or at least a part of one, named for our clan. It would also be quite presumptuous, and if claimed in the presence of a Highlander, perhaps dangerous. The only real point to be made by this discussion is that the Scott was a Lowland Scot, and his future became our past.

The history of the British Isles is a long and romantic one, full of battles won and lost, crowns stolen and usurped, lands taken and given away, blood feuds and holy alliances, gallantry and deceit, Courts of Kings, headman's axes, fantasy and legend, and Protestant fighting Catholic. There were also wars in the rest of the

world to deal with, an Empire to be built, and the crowned heads of Europe to contend with. Out of all this, some elements are particularly germane to the Scotch-Irish. The first is that the Lowland Scot was a Protestant, more specifically a Presbyterian. The second was that the Irishman was through and through a Catholic, often aligned militarily and politically with the Catholic European powers, mainly the French. Third, England had long since removed itself from the political and religious influence of the Roman Catholic Popes. It therefore followed that if any English King was going to rule the world, or even the whole of the British Isles, he had to successfully deal with the Catholic Irishman at his back while he dealt with the Catholic Church and countries across the channel. The current Catholic versus Protestant strife of modern day Northern Ireland is ample evidence that none of the English Kings succeeded. It also may be argued that the current situation in Northern Ireland is the direct result of their no end to trying. The Lowland Scot played a major role in this part of English history.

For literally centuries, there were recurring wars and rebellions involving the English and the Irish, most of it fought on Irish soil. Henry II in the twelfth century got things partly under control in Ireland and by the time of Henry the VIII, they almost had the job done. Queen Elizabeth finally gained full control, or seemed to have. At least there was full military control for a period. In that feudal society, the loss of a battle meant the loss of your fiefdom, along with your head, and so the barons and lords and kings changed, but those who tilled the land, and who died in greater numbers than the royalty they served, stayed much the same. Queen Mary had a better idea. Having reduced the local Irish population to the point where a fiefdom was no longer a viable business opportunity for anyone, even an Irishman, she decided to replace them with Englishmen, Protestant Englishmen, which included the Scots. At her time and later, it became policy; eliminate, confiscate, and colonize. Turn Ireland into England. King James the First took it to the limit with massive confiscation of Irish land and the settlement of Scotch and Englishmen in their place. This period became known as the Great Plantation. In the northern Irish province of Ulster his efforts were so completely successful that the population of the region became permanently altered to reflect the Protestant Scot and Englishman, with the Catholic Irishman reduced to a down trodden minority. So it is today, and the strife continues.

The Plantation of the Scots to Ulster was not, of course, an over night affair, nor was this the only region of Ireland where the English Kings and Queens used this tactic of replacing hostile Catholic Celtic Irishmen with loyal Protestant civilized Scotsmen and Englishmen. Over time however, the Irish Lords and tenants were replaced by English Lords and Scot tenants in most counties of northern Ireland, some counties being nearly 100% populated by Scots. The process continued sporadically from about 1600 to 1710. The rules imposed on the new "undertakers", those given grants of Irish land, had a far reaching effect. The Undertaker had to live on the land and improve it for defense, and enclosures were to be built to protect men and livestock in case of war. In addition, no Irish tenants were permitted, only Scot or English. Last, but far from least, since experience had shown that intermarriage with the Irish almost always resulted in more, not fewer Catholics, a law was passed forbidding such marriages. By 1610 Ulster was filling up with Scot and English emigrants, more Scot than English. The Scots were more suited to the land than the English, being from a like northern climate, their homeland was closer, and they had more economic reasons for emigration. By 1640 Ulster contained 100,000 Scots and 20,000 Englishmen, and the Irish were fed up with the whole arrangement. Their rebellion lasted for 10 bloody years until they were once again crushed by Cromwell in 1652. For their trouble, Cromwell took six million more acres of Irish land and distributed it among his soldiers, or anyone else that helped with sword or money, and most of all Ireland became the property of non-Irishmen. Cromwell didn't remember the lessons learned by James however, his soldiers married Irish women and begat more Catholics. His victory did increase the Scot migration to Ulster, however, where the Scot and Irish remained faithful to their own races and religions. The rest of Ireland returned to the Catholic fold.

In 1688 the Irish again revolted and it was all of Catholic Ireland against the Protestant Scot and English of Ulster. The Ulstermen held for weeks against great odds until William of Orange arrived from England with enough force to hand James a crushing defeat at the battle of Boyne. Again a loss of land by the Irish, and the flow of Scots to Ulster peaked, with more than 50,000 Scotsmen arriving in Ulster between 1690 and 1697.

The English King's attempt to change the racial and religious character of the Irish can be said, in a perverse way, to have had some merit. All of Ireland, in addition to being militarily and politically dangerous, was controlled by clansmen obeying hereditary chieftains not far removed from their warlike Celtic ancestors. There

was really not much agriculture, and livelihood was achieved in an almost nomadic herding culture augmented when possible by plunder of his neighbors goods. However, an English Lord reported that the people were so poor as to make plunder not worth the effort. The Scotsmen, who were encouraged to replace them, were a different sort. They were farmers, merchants, weavers, mechanics, and laborers. They built towns and villages and began manufacturing and trading. They replaced the robber castles, huts, and log cabins with farm houses and homesteads with walled fields and enclosures to hold animals. Marshes were drained and fields were planted, and churches and schools were built. In the process, and as influenced by the stern discipline of the Presbyterian Church, the Lowland Scot was reshaped into an industrious, self respecting, moral people; a new man, an Ulsterman.

The Scot Ulsterman, however, was in the midst of a hostile people whom he despised, and who in turn hated him as an alien and a usurper. Several times the races clashed with Scot genocide the Irish aim. The Ulsterman was hardened and toughened by this experience, conditions that had not prevailed in his native Scottish Lowlands. In this environment he ceased to be a Lowlander, he retained his essential characteristics but there was new habit of thought and conduct. There were other racial and religious groups to contend with, and to learn from, including French Huguenot, English Puritan, and the Hollander. He expanded his horizons and skills, no longer just a farmer but also a trader, manufacturer, and a man of commerce. He became more versatile than his Lowlander kin, more adaptable, less traditional, provincial and clannish. But in his Ulster home, he is almost a man without a country. He is threatened from all sides, knows injustice from having given and received it, he has labored and the fruits of his labor have been denied him. In the 17th century he filled Ulster. In the 18th he will move from and empty it. His movement will have far reaching effects on the history of a new world.

He left Ulster, not because the Irish defeated him, but because the English betrayed him. Having turned Northern Ireland into a prosperous functioning community of the realm, their reward from the English Government was a series of political, economic, social and religious persecutions. The Ulstermen were not a submissive people, and they chose a new home in the American wilderness rather than endure the accumulating wrongs they were asked to suffer. As sojourners in a foreign land, it was easy for them to accept the new adventure in America, and they departed with less than kindness in their hearts toward the English. On the battlefields of the American Revolution, they would finally escape the English tyranny.

In Ulster the English first restricted the woolen trade, cutting off all sales to any but England and Wales. A major industry in Ulster died. The English then, when the long term leases on the Irish land granted in the previous century began to run out, took the opportunity to double and triple the cost of the new leases. Lease costs soon reached the point where farming was no longer profitable. Having improved the lands, the Scots could no longer afford to live on them, and the Ulstermen refused to accept the arbitrary lowering of their living standard to the benefit of the largely English landlords. By 1717, a heavy emigration of Ulsterman farmers to America had commenced. Partly because of this rent gouging practice which depleted the competent farming community, two major famines occurred, one in 1727 and one in 1740. These created large waves of Ulsterman emigrants, as did the famine of 1770. Also at this time the linen trade declined dramatically and many thousands were out of work in Belfast. Religious persecutions also contributed. The Scots were denied permission to build any more Presbyterian churches, marriages performed by Presbyterian ministers were declared illegal, and even their right to conduct services for the dead was questioned. Ulster Presbyterians were excluded from all military and civil offices under the Crown, and they were required to tithe to support the Episcopal clergy who oppressed them. The Ulster Scots were made of sterner stuff than to compromise, and while many stayed, greater than 50% of the Scots in Ulster sought civil and religious liberty in America. In the words of Fronde:

"Men of spirit and energy refused to remain in a country where they were held unfit to receive the rights of citizens. Flights of Protestant settlers had been driven out earlier in the century by the idiocy of bishops.....Religious bigotry, commercial jealousy, and modern landlordism had combined to do their worst against the Ulster settlement....Vexed with suits in ecclesiastical courts, forbidden to educate their children in their own faith, treated as dangerous in a state which but for them would have had no existence, and associated with Papists in an Act of Parliament which deprived them of their civil rights, the most earnest of them at length abandoned the un-thankful service. They saw at last that the liberties for which their fathers had fought were not to be theirs in Ireland. During the first half of the 18th century, counties Down, Antrim, Armagh, and Derry were emptied of their Protestant families, who were of more value to Ireland than the California gold mines."

And so this Scotsman, after a century in Ireland, where he became known as an Ulsterman, went to America, many to the state of Pennsylvania, where he became known once again as a Scot. But he was different from the Scot from Scotland, he was a Scot honed and tempered by his century in Ulster. And in spite of the fact that there was no Irish blood in him, he came to be called Scotch-Irish, because he was not a Scot, but a Scot from Ireland. There was a real difference, and America would be the better for him.

For over three-quarters of a century the Ulstermen left Northern Ireland for America, with crests of waves of emigrants occurring in 1717-18, 1727-28, 1740-41 and 1771-73. The emigration slowed during the Revolutionary War and then returned to nearly a constant level for the remainder of the century and on into the next, lasting until well into the 1840s. In the 18th century alone, it is estimated that in excess of 250,000 Ulstermen arrived on our shores, with at least half going to Pennsylvania. Why Pennsylvania?

The Ulstermen, having no previous colonial constituency existing prior to their exodus from Ireland, were forced to settle in an area already established in basic governmental and religious proclivities. The Scotch-Irish found in Pennsylvania, to a greater degree than existed elsewhere, the political, economic, social and religious conditions that appealed to them. Civil and religious liberty and economic opportunity were to be found in Pennsylvania as nowhere else in the 13 colonies. Nowhere was the land more abundantly available nor so fertile. William Penn had established an excellent system of law, taxes were low, and all its social and religious institutions were widely perceived to be the most liberal and tolerant to any and all. By 1790, 80,000 Scotch-Irish lived in that state. By 1800 there were at least 100,000.

They arrived in Pennsylvania late, compared to the English who had come first and who had been followed by a second major racial group, the Germans. These two groups had established themselves with the English to the east and the Germans to the west of the English. While some of the Scotch-Irish who started to arrive about 1715 settled in with the Germans and English, the vast majority sought the frontier. Arriving at Philadelphia and other ports along the Delaware River, they pressed the frontier ever westward. They first settled the southern counties of Lancaster, Chester and Dauphin east of the Susquehanna River. They then crossed the Susquehanna and settled the southern Pennsylvania counties of York and Adams. At the same time, the Germans were expanding their numbers and began pressing the Scotch-Irish from the east. The friction was relieved by the simple expedient of offering the Scotch-Irish a better deal to the west, and they took it. This process continued throughout much of the settlement of Pennsylvania with the result that the Scotch-Irish were continually on the frontier, this of their own choice, taking on the hardships of frontier life, along with the freedom that went with it. Before churches and schools could be built, there was a lot of clearing of land to be done, and not just of trees. The Indian populations were not pleased that their land was being taken away, and while some of the frontier changed proprietorship peacefully, much of it did not. The Scotch-Irish, ever on the edge of civilization and claiming new territory for it, became woodsmen and Indian fighters second to none in the new world. He became more Indian than the Indian in hunting and tracking, and he was an expert with the rifle, which was as much with him as the plow. He brought his Presbyterian work ethic with him, and also the idea that education was necessary for his children to prosper. He was by nature and inclination, the right man at the right time in the right place for converting wilderness frontier to civilization in America.

The Cumberland Valley became the Scotch-Irish camp ground in the new world. It became the well from which their race spread, after filling to overflowing with arriving emigrants. From there they spread north, west, and south. The Pennsylvania authorities encouraged the settlement of the Scotch-Irish in this area, consciously putting a Scotch-Irish buffer between the rest of the commonwealth and the hostile Indians, and to prevent the Marylanders from penetrating into Pennsylvania from the south. The Scotch-Irish for their part, liked the arrangement. It left the Germans to the east and out of their hair, and they had begun to view the Quaker as at least peculiar in his religious beliefs. They at last had a land of their own and by 1730, began to fill it to overflowing. They moved north into the Juniata Valley by 1750, and up against the Alleghenys where their advance was halted. But not for long. In spite of the hostile frontier and the hardships it represented, the mountain barriers before them, and the Indian wars that were more often raging than not, they moved ever outward on the frontier, claiming it for the civilization that was growing stronger behind them.

In 1768 the Pennsylvania government purchased the land now comprising southwest Pennsylvania from the Indians and with that issue settled, movement of the Scotch-Irish across the Alleghenys into this area began in earnest. The Scotch-Irish became the dominant settler in this area and to this day is represented in strength by his succeeding generations. This area became the second, and larger, wellspring of Scotch-Irish that the Cumberland Valley had been before. From here the Scotch-Irish continued their advance, more slowly to the north but more rapidly to the southwest, down Braddock's road and out onto the Ohio and down the great river, to and through Kentucky, Ohio, Indiana, down to Texas, and on to the West. In many cases he moved to the frontier in such numbers that he left his already settled land vacant of his race, to be filled by waves of other nationalities coming to America to settle behind him. They found a much different land than the Scotch-Irish who had gone before.

In spite of the fact that the Scotch-Irishman was a tough and resourceful individualist well adapted to the frontier, he was also a civilized man. His civility was no less than that of the Englishman of the time, but his experience in Ulster, and now in America, gave him a far different view of what the nature of civilization should be. What he found when he first arrived in Pennsylvania and other colonies was far better than what he had left in Ulster, but when he got his feet firmly planted and he looked around, he found that he was still under English rule as modified by the local political realities of Pennsylvania. His first political problem was the Quakers.

When the Scotch-Irishman arrived in Pennsylvania, he found a Quaker oligarchy firmly in control. In the early 1700's this minority group had been able, because of their first arrival and the leadership of William Penn, to set things up for their own benefit. They fully controlled the Pennsylvania government and their retiring and pacifist philosophies gave the self assertive and combative Scotch-Irish concern. Though the Quakers were of high personal character, religiously tolerant, and wrote humane laws, they did shape the government to their own ends. As a result, the Quakers were in a minority rule position, and the Scotch-Irish had seen how that had worked before. That is what he had left in Ulster.

The first serious clash between the Scotch-Irish and the Quakers had to do with military preparedness, more specifically, the lack of it. The Quaker pacifist policies did not include the expenditure of funds to establish and arm a militia, or take any other action which would lead to a better defense of the frontier from the warring Indian. The Scotch-Irish frontiersman was left to take his lumps individually and alone. As a result, at the outbreak of the French and Indian War in 1754, Pennsylvania alone among the thirteen colonies was totally unprepared for war, and was completely defenseless. The French established forts along the Allegheny including Fort Dequense, (now Pittsburg) and took control of all of western Pennsylvania with the help of the Indians. Braddock, the English general who marched to throw the French back, taking no advice about how to fight the Indian from his American officers, including a gentleman from Virginia by the name of George Washington, took his men into ambush and defeat. The Indians went wild on the frontier and the Scotch-Irish were either killed or fled to the east. The Quakers, far from the scene of war and secure in their own persons and property, were amazingly indifferent to the problems of the imperiled frontiersmen. They sought reconciliation with the Indian, and did essentially nothing. The majority of Pennsylvanians, who had been content to let the Quakers run the show, saw the problem differently however, and by 1756 the Quaker oligarchy was temporarily shattered and Pennsylvania finally went to war.

The Quakers were not to be denied however, and they once again worked back into control with the help of their German political allies. The Scotch-Irish by 1763 had come to the conclusion that the only good Indian was a dead Indian and began to act accordingly. The Quakers were again talking appeasement. When the Quaker controlled Assembly took under its protection all Indians in the Lehigh Valley while denying military support and protection for the frontier, the Scotch-Irish, now in a rebellious state of mind, put together a delegation to seek redress from the Assembly. To make sure they were listened to, they provided a six hundred man rifle toting escort. They began their march in February of 1764. The eastern Pennsylvanians enlisted help from the British and even the Quakers took up arms to repel them. The frontiersmen, being met by a superior force, had the good sense to let the delegation do the talking. They presented "A Declaration and Remonstrance of the Distressed and Bleeding Inhabitants of the Province of Pennsylvania". Thereafter followed what is referred to as the Pamphlet War, wherein over 60 papers were written for and against the frontiersmen and the Scotch-Irish cause. Benjamin Franklin was one

of those writing on the subject in 1764, and this consummate politician originally came down on the side of the Quakers. While the Scotch-Irish did not immediately win their argument, it was the beginning of the end of the Quaker oligarchy in Pennsylvania.

The Scotch-Irish contended that representation in the Assembly was inequitable. Of the 36 seats, the Quakers held 26, with 1/5 of the population voting on who would be the 26. To equalize the representation was their goal and they set about it by political means. Their struggle had a parallel throughout the colonies, the same issues were those that all colonies opposed as policies of King George. While the pamphlets flew in Pennsylvania over issues of how the Province should be governed, the ideas in them were no less useful for pamphleteers like Franklin to set the mood throughout the colonies. The pressure on the Assembly was intense and they gave ground little by little. Finally, the Provincial Convention wrote a new constitution. The Quaker oligarchy was broken and the grievances of the Scotch-Irish were remedied. The Scotch-Irish had forced all the people of Pennsylvania to decide if theirs was to be a government of the few, or it was going to be a government of the many. The new Pennsylvania constitution gave every man a vote. It was the first genuine democracy in America. It was May, 1776. There was then no question where the Scotch-Irish and all Pennsylvanians would be on July 4th. They, and the Virginians, forced the question on the whole nation. The answer was the same.

To say that the Scotch-Irish were not fighters is to deny their history. It was ever their lot to struggle against hostile forces, on the Scottish Frontier, in Ulster, or the American Frontier. They met every menace to their liberties, from whatever direction. The French and Indian War was a struggle over English or French control of the Ohio Valley. The French used the Indian as a cruel and savage weapon against the English claim to the upper reaches of that river, the Allegheny, the Monongahela, and the Ohio itself. The massacres fell mostly on the Scotch-Irish due to their exposed position on the frontier and the Quaker lack of preparedness, especially after Braddock's dumb excursion to Fort Duquense. When finally Pennsylvania went to war against the French and Indians, they built 200 forts on the frontier and organized militia. They were in large part, manned by the Scotch-Irish. In addition, the Scotch-Irish organized companies of rangers for the defense of homes and farms. They became the deadliest foes of the savages, about whom they cherished no illusions. While others might seek to invest the Indian with romance and primal virtue of the "Noble Savage", the Scotch-Irish knew him as bloodthirsty, cruel and treacherous. He attacks at night and sets fire to house and barn. He shoots the farmer behind his plow without warning and from cover. He scalps women and children as they gather wood and food from the forest. He tortures and maims his captives before killing them, if they were men. If they were women, they were raped and enslaved. He had neither mercy for, nor generosity toward anyone or anything. The Indian wanted no part of civilization, and trying to appease him was akin to trying to pet a coiled rattlesnake. Having experienced the butcheries of the Indian, the Scotch-Irish knew better. If you wanted him to lay down his hatchet, you hit him on the side of his head with the butt of your gun, you met force with force, you carried the war to his haunts, and you shot him there. The Scotch-Irish approach to dealing with the Indian was finally heard.

Colonel John Armstrong was given the task of taking out the French Forts. He was Scotch-Irish and the force he recruited was almost entirely Scotch-Irish. He took the French and Indians by surprise at Fort Kittanning on the Allegheny and soundly defeated them, reducing the fort to ashes. It was the first real English victory of the French and Indian War.

To take Fort Dequense, the British appointed General John Forbes to lead a force against it. Forbes' force numbered 6,000 men, of whom 1,600 were British regulars, 1,700 were Virginians under George Washington, and 2,700 were Scotch-Irish Pennsylvanians, again under the command of Colonel Armstrong. They took Fort Duquense and drove the French from western Pennsylvania and the Ohio River, effectively ending the French and Indian War. The Scotch-Irish had provided the leadership and backbone of the effort against the French and Indian. At the time, only one Pennsylvanian in four was Scotch-Irish.

The ink had hardly dried on the treaty between France and England to end the war when Chief Pontiac of the Ottawas organized all the tribes along the Ohio, and by the time Forbes had got home to collect his medals, Pontiac again set the frontier aflame. Fort Duquense, now Fort Pitt, was eventually cut off, with the savages plundering, massacring and burning farms and homes to almost Carlisle, only a few miles from the Susquehanna. Colonel Bonquet,

with 500 British regulars and Scotch-Irish rangers again took the fight to the enemy and in relieving Fort Pitt, met Pontiac in the battle of Bushy Run. Pontiac was defeated decisively. It was the most important battle against the Indians in the history of Pennsylvania.

Colonel Armstrong organized a force of about 300 Scotch-Irishmen and led them against the Indians on their own ground. Their homes became the battleground and the Indian began to feel insecure about his own life and property, and not without reason. The Scotch-Irish, always fond of hunting, were now getting to the point where they considered hunting the savages the most exciting sport in which they had ever engaged. Even Scotch-Irish Presbyterian ministers figured prominently in the Indian Wars. Two were leaders of Scotch-Irish ranger groups whose sole purpose was to protect and defend settlements and pacify Indians. Pacification was conducted in the same way the Indian practiced the art.

Pontiac's War was short and bloody, and fought almost in an ad hoc sense by the Scotch-Irish on the frontier without much support from the Quaker government in Philadelphia. The Scotch-Irish were now a fighting people to be reckoned with, and they had strong opinions regarding war and independence. They had no Tories or pacifists in their ranks. They were enthusiastic for the causes of the Revolution, and they stepped to the front when the call came. They did not love the English. They left Ulster hating him. The Stamp Act, the Townshend Revenue Acts, and the Coercive Acts only increased their hostility. While other major racial groups of Colonial America were mixed as to how they stood on the matter of independence, not so the Scotch-Irish. They played a conspicuous role in the Revolution, both in starting it and ending it.

That they would do so was forewarned in 1775. In May of that year the Scotch-Irish of Westmoreland County issued a set of resolutions called the Westmoreland Declaration, in which they protested the acts of the English and expressed their willingness to oppose them with their lives and fortunes. The next year, another resolution was put forth by the Scotch-Irish of Clinton County, known as the Pine Creek Declaration. The members of this county had heard that the Congress was contemplating a Declaration of Independence and decided to make one of their own. They so declared on 4 July, 1776, not knowing or caring what the outcome of the argument going on 200 miles to the east would be. There was little difference of substance between the two declarations issued on the same day.

In England the Scotch-Irish were recognized as the head and right arm of the "Rebellion". Horace Walpole in the House of Commons said, "There is no use crying about the matter, America has run off with a Presbyterian parson, and that's the end of it." Lecky identifies the famous Pennsylvania Line as being mostly Scotch-Irish. General Henry Lee called it the "Line of Ireland", meaning Scotch-Irish since there were very few Irishmen in America at that time. Butler said "it was the Presbyterians of Ulster, driven from their homes by the mistaken religious and economic legislation of the 18th century, who furnished the backbone of the armies that put an end to the rule of England in what is now the United States." For it was not just the Pennsylvanian Scotch-Irish who rallied to the cause. General Morgan's Virginia Sharpshooters were mostly Scotch-Irish and almost the entire American Army at Kings Mountain were Scotch-Irishmen from Virginia and Carolina as well as Pennsylvania. The only superiority of the Scotch-Irish from Pennsylvania over the Scotch-Irish from other colonies was their number. Wherever they were found or from whatever colony they came, the Scotch-Irish stood shoulder to shoulder in defense of American liberty, civil and religious, in the forum, and in the field.

The First Regiment of the Pennsylvania Line, the first to be formed and perhaps the most famous of all Revolutionary War regiments, was commanded by Colonel William Thompson. He and most of his men were Scotch-Irish. This regiment formed the nucleus of the American Army and was absolutely loyal to the American cause. Seven of its nine companies were wholly Scotch-Irish while one was completely German and the last, mostly German. Most of the other regiments of the Pennsylvania Line were also Scotch-Irish with Germans intermixed with them. They were described thusly when they arrived at Boston.

"They are remarkably stout and hardy men; many of them exceed six feet in height. They are dressed in white frocks or rifle shirts and round hats. These men are remarkable for the accuracy of their aim, striking a mark with great certainty at two hundred yards distant. At a review a company of them, while in quick advance, fired their balls

into objects of seven inches in diameter at the distance of 250 yards. They are now stationed in our lines, and their shot have frequently proved fatal to British officers and soldiers who expose themselves to view at more than double the distance of common musket shot."

The Indian Wars had produced a remarkable soldier of the line, and he was led by strong and remarkable leaders of his own kind. The list of Scotch-Irish military officers of the Revolution is long and distinguished, as is the record of the Scotch-Irish race in the battles that led to the birth of freedom in America. The story of how they did it is best told by historians. What is important here is why they fought as they did, and the mettle of the men who risked their lives and fortunes for what they believed.

After the Revolutionary War, the Scotch-Irishman returned to his self appointed task of pushing back the frontier. He was no more settled back into his wellsprings of the Cumberland Valley and southwestern Pennsylvania, than he picked up his rifle and all his worldly goods, and sensing a better opportunity for himself and his offspring, he set out on the rivers and roads leading to the west to seize it. And as he moved on, through the Ohio Valley, across the Mississippi, up the Missouri and Platte, across the Snake and down the Columbia, up the Willamette, the San Joaquin, the Sacramento, beyond the Pecos and the Colorado,....he disappeared. In this great land of ours you see almost nothing of him. Other than his Presbyterian Church, he has left us no monuments to his race. There are no Scotch-Irish enclaves where a Scotch-Irish culture of dress or food or music or architectural style or language or anything else can be found. He left none of these because he came to our shores with none of these traditions. He was stripped of his past by his experience in Ulster and on the American frontier. But he had been strengthened of his courage, his love of freedom, his love of God, his sense of justice, his skills to adapt and change, not just himself but the world about him. These are the things he set up like shining blazing monuments for those who came behind him to follow, and these things became the heart of the American Civilization, embedded in our laws and institutions of government, and in the hearts and minds of the people. There are perhaps 12 million of the Scotch-Irish race in America today. Their monument, if there is one, is the 4th of July. No race contributed more to our nation, and none has greater claim to the name by which they are now known, Americans.

One of the early Scotch-Irish settlers in America was a man named David Scott. We currently have no record of his arrival on our shores, but we believe it was he who became the father of our Scott family in America. He was probably middle aged when we first detect vague images of him in the 1750's in that first Scotch-Irish wellspring along the Susquehanna River in southern Pennsylvania. There he and his son John Scott joined the march through the Indian Wars, the Revolution, the Civil War, and all of American history that followed. Indeed, his sons, and their sons, and their sons down to the present generation have been engaged in every fight for America's freedom since David Scott stepped on our shores. His Scotch-Irish heritage has mixed with that of the Dutch, English and German over ten generations born in America to produce what we are, Americans, of American Heritage. This is our story.

THE SCOTT PRIMOGENITOR

The investigation of a family genealogy naturally proceeds from the present time toward the past. As each generation is identified and its history known, the one before it becomes the next mystery to be solved. In recording history however, the natural flow is from the past to the present, since each generation's story builds on the one before it. This makes it very difficult to begin the first chapter of our genealogical history, since the story is not only without a beginning, what is known is related to what comes later.

Therefore, to begin our story, I will have to borrow from later chapters to explain how we got to where we are. The reader is asked to accept those items borrowed from later years without proof for the moment, they will all be fully explained as their natural place in our history comes into view.

First, who do we think the Scott Primogenitor in America really was? The only evidence we have at this time suggests that his name was David Scott, and he will be referred to as such until evidence of what his name really was comes to hand. Why was he named David?

The original Scott family line was, beyond any reasonable doubt Scotch-Irish. His sons and grandsons for several generations have all the characteristics of that race. He and the early history of the Scott family fit the story of the Scotch-Irish as outlined in the opening chapter of this book like it was written specifically about them. One of the customs of the Scotch-Irish was, for the genealogist, both helpful and at the same time very exasperating. That custom had to do with how they selected given names for their children.

The rules followed by a married couple in selecting names for their children were as follows. The first son was named after the paternal grandfather. The second son was named after the maternal grandfather. The third son was named after the father. The first daughter was named after the maternal grandmother. The second daughter was named after the paternal grandmother. The third daughter was named after the mother. Additional children of either sex were named after favorite brothers or sisters of the couple in no particular order, though older siblings were often the ones so honored. Almost no names outside those in use in the two families represented by the couple were ever used. In addition, it was the custom to give the first male child the middle name of the wife's maiden name.

The Scott family charts for the three generations following our primogenitor follow these conventions precisely, though there are cases that get somewhat complicated by lack of information or where there were multiple wives and children from multiple marriages. In the generation following that of our primogenitor, that of his son John Scott, we know from legal documents that John Scott named his first son David. David was therefore the name of John Scott's father, and so our first American ancestor was David Scott.

We have documented evidence that a David Scott did exist and did live at the time and place which would be logical for him to have been the father of John Scott, and it will be presented shortly. However, we also know from hard experience that the above reason for stating that John Scott's father was David Scott is hardly sufficient to make it true. In any case, he had a name, and we will use David until we find that he had another.

Coming forward several generations, in the year 1911, two men began a correspondence with the objective of determining the genealogy of the their Scott line. Both were Union Army veterans of the Civil War and proud of their contribution and heritage. One of those men intended to preserve part of that heritage in a book of personal memoirs he was writing for his grandchildren. His name was Capt. Alexander Marshall Scott of Indiana. In putting together his book, he quoted correspondence from the other man who was Capt. John Scott Jr. of Pennsylvania. Alexander M. Scott's efforts resulted in a small book which was first printed in the mid 1920s. It was printed for family use and edification and never circulated as a book but has been kept in the family over the years.

Alexander M. Scott was a son of Alexander Scott who was the brother of David R. Scott of our family line. Correspondence with members of Alexander M. Scott's line brought a copy of his memoirs to our hands, and that book provided the clues which led us to the story of our family history in early America.

A synopsis of the results of the investigation of Alexander M. Scott and John Scott Jr. as reported in Alexander M. Scott's Memoirs will not be given here, as it would lead to confusion. The Memoirs did provide a very clear path along our ancestral line, but there were only a few references cited and some information seemed suspect. Therefore considerable effort has been expended to verify the family history contained in the Memoirs. Much of the general outline has been proven to be true, but many details were not.

Our generation of genealogy researchers have several advantages over our erstwhile genealogy investigators of the past. Our library resources, communications resources, and the work of many historians and biographers gives us a much more fertile field to till and the means to do it quickly and economically. As a result, the story of our early family history as we now know it, is much richer and much more accurate than that written down by Alexander M. Scott. It must be acknowledged however, that had he not provided the essential clues and spent the time preserving his heritage as he was able to ascertain it, we would probably still not know the beginnings of our Scott line in America.

It must also be acknowledged that the story we now think to be true is in some part conjecture. There are few records in our early American history that cite positive proof of relationships, particularly as to who was the father of who. The Scotch-Irish child naming conventions seem to have been designed specifically to confuse later day genealogists, and sorting out several families headed by men of the same name is at times a frustrating puzzle. There was little government on the early American frontier, and hence few records of any kind. Therefore, the story of David Scott that follows is part truth, part conjecture, and part hopeful guess. It does however, represent the "Preponderance of Evidence" as we currently have it.

We will begin our history by looking at the history of another family as described in a book by Elizabeth Gilmore, written in 1932 titled "GILMORE HANNA SCOTT HAMILTON".

"Family tradition tells us that in about 1727 the Governor of Pennsylvania, in order to cut off further encroachment on the part of Maryland, sent word to the Penn brothers, sons of William Penn, to send him some fighting men. They sent over a colony of one hundred and forty families from Ulster, led by Capt. Hance Hamilton. The colony landed at New Castle, Delaware, August 24, 1729. They located at first in the Sir William Keith's tract called Newberry. This tract extended from Conewago Creek to Yellow Breeches Creek.

Old records in the Division of History at Harrisburg say Captain Hance Hamilton took up land on the Little Conewago over towards Wrightsville in 1732, and on Marsh Creek in 1739. An old map printed in 1759 gives two Little Conewago branches of the Great Conewago, one near its mouth, the other one north of Adams County. Wight's Mill is on the one near its mouth. These people soon pushed on to the "Manor of Maske", then Lancaster, then York, now Adams County." (Pennsylvania).

It could have been that our original Scott ancestor in America was a member of a group of 140 families led to America by Captain Hance Hamilton, but the evidence presented to support this family tradition is suspect. The number of 140 families is derived from a 1765 list of families then living in the Manor of Maske, and it can be proved that members of that list were not yet born in 1729. The broad outline of the story is true however. A large number of Scotch-Irish were arriving at New Castle between the years 1725 and 1730 and the migration of these peoples from the lands around the Delaware River to the Manor of Maske is as described by Elizabeth Gilmore. Indeed, a Captain Hance Hamilton plays a major role in this early history as both a civic and military leader. His title of Captain, though the source or reason for it are not clear, indicates that he might well have been the leader of a large group, but there is no evidence that David Scott was part of it. However, it is very likely that David Scott was one of these early Scotch-Irish immigrants. A man of that name appears several times in early York County records, and interestingly enough, sometimes associated with Captain Hance Hamilton. It is clear that they knew and were associated with each other, if not in 1729, then certainly by 1750 or so.

As a matter of convenience then, Elizabeth Gilmore's version of history will be used to begin our own, knowing full well David Scott may not have been associated with Captain Hance Hamilton in this precise way. Thus the stage will be set for what comes later.

It is interesting to note the character of the men requested by the governor of Pennsylvania. He wanted fighting men for reasons outlined below, and that is just what he got. He was able through these people, to accomplish exactly what he set out to do, but not without being badly burned by the "Law of Unintended Consequences". The group's difficulties with the Penns notwithstanding, they also would become the very heart of the core of fighting men who would defend and advance the frontier across Pennsylvania. But in the beginning....

The party headed west after their landing at New Castle, and located on the west bank of the Susquahanna River in then Lancaster County, Pennsylvania on a tract of land known as Newberry, which was owned by a Sir William Keith. This last leg of their journey out of Ulster was short, only about 60 miles, but this placed them on the very edge of the civilized world at the time. They were Scotch-Irish, and they were on the frontier.

In Pennsylvania, as in all other colonies where they settled, the Scotch-Irish sought the frontier, though there were substantial numbers who settled in the Philadelphia area and in Lancaster and Chester Counties. By 1733 the eastern half of York County was being settled by Scotch-Irish, and when the land west of the Susquehanna was purchased from the Indians in 1736, migration into these new lands began in earnest. In about 1739 the "Marsh Creek Settlement" was established, a Scotch-Irish enclave in the southwest part of York County, Pennsylvania, now Adams County. Hance Hamilton and at least two of his sons, along with many of the families who came to America with him in 1729, settled in the Marsh Creek area. Again from "GILMORE HANNA SCOTT HAMILTON":

"...a Gettysburg Compiler printed January 22, 1800, that gives a list printed in 1765 when the Penn brothers made their first successful survey of the "Manor of Maske" that they might know who had entered and improved the land prior to 1741. The following is a copy of that list." On that list is John Scott.

The records do state that John Scott, not David Scott, settled on Marsh Creek in 1740. That interpretation of this record will later be shown to be invalid, even though John Scott was given title to this land as if he had settled it in 1740. How that came to be is part of the reason the Penns invited Hance Hamilton and his group to the region in the first place.

The thirteen colonies in the early 1700's were more like thirteen little separate nations under different governments than the states as we now know them, hardly well knit together by the English in the far away courts of London. William Penn and his family controlled Pennsylvania, and Lord Baltimore and his Calvert family line was the government of Maryland, each operating under somewhat loose direction from the Crown. The Penns and Baltimores were in fact competitors, particularly as regards western expansion, and the lands east of the Appalachian Mountains along what is now the southern border of Pennsylvania was some of the most fertile and desirable land to be found anywhere. In addition, the charters under which William Penn and Lord Baltimore were operating were less than specific, and at times conflicting, as to the boundaries of their respective spheres of control. Even had they been precise, there would have been plenty of room for argument, given for those times, the lack of any reasonable capability to survey land. William Penn's strategy to ensure control of this most desirable area was simple and direct. He first bought the land from the Indians, and then invited the Scotch-Irish in to settle it "upon common terms", being reasonably sure that these tough and hard working Presbyterians would hold it for him. Lord Baltimore, using essentially the same logic, was doing the same thing in the same area.

There were, in addition, ulterior motives. The Penn family or Proprietaries as they were called, had decided they would like a "manor" for themselves in this very desirable area, as they had established in other parts of the Province. It is not really clear what the purpose of these manors were. The Penns established them all over Pennsylvania, though they neither built nor settled on any of them. It appears that the intent was to more tightly control the sale and use of land in these specific more desirable areas, thereby increasing the flow of funds into the Penn family coffers. The Manor of Maske as it was to be called, was one of these areas, and it turned into something of a "Sticky Wicket" for the Penns.

In 1741 an order was written to the Surveyor-General of Pennsylvania to wit:

These are to authorize and require thee to survey or cause to be surveyed a tract of land on the branches of Marsh Creek, on the west side of the River Susquehanna, in the County of Lancaster, containing about thirty thousand acres, for our own proper use and behoof, and the same to return under the name and style of our Manor Of Maske, in the County of Lancaster aforesaid, into our Secretary's Office, and for so doing this shall be thy sufficient warrant. Given under my hand and the seal of our Land Office at Philadelphia this 18th day of June, in the year of our Lord, 1741. Thomas Penn.

The Scotch-Irish, who two years earlier had settled on Marsh Creek at Penn's invitation, and had been led to believe they owned the land under "common terms", were more than slightly upset. This smelled very strongly of what they had left in Ulster. A Manor of Maske indeed. They saw again a manor system of Lord and tenant, with the Scotch-Irish again on the short end of the stick. The Governor had requested fighting men. That is what he got.

Things did not go well for the surveyor who was sent to lay out the "Manor". History has recorded the following correspondence in which the dispatched surveyor informed the Surveyor General of his problems. From a "History of Adams County":

I was designated about two weeks ago to have laid out the manor at Marsh Creek, but the inhabitants have got into such spirit that is as much as a man's life is worth to go among them; for they gather together in conference, and go about armed every time that I am anywhere near about. They fairly resolved to kill or cripple me, or any other persons who shall attempt to lay out a manor there. Yet if the honorable proprietary shall think it fit to order such assistance as shall withstand such unreasonable creatures, I shall be ready and willing to undertake the same with my utmost endeavors. As soon as I come back from Virginia. I am going there on urgent occasion. (Author's italics)

In 1743 the Penn brothers tried again. Also from the "History of Adams Co.": "Richard Peters visited Marsh Creek in 1743 to evict the 'squatters' and survey the Manor of Maske. On this occasion, seventy settlers broke the surveyors chain and routed the secretary, the sheriff, the Justice of the Peace, and others."

The Scotch-Irish were not about to return to living under the rule of the "Manor Born". They had wrested their land from the wilderness, been led to believe it was their own, and they would keep it as their own. The Penns stuck to their guns however, and refused to issue legal title to any of the land in the "Manor of Maske", considering the settlers there to be, if not squatters, outlaws. The matter was not fully settled until 1765 at which time the proprietaries gave up their claims on the land designated as the Manor of Maske, and John Scott and other land owners in the area were given legal title to their land. John Scott was deeded with 125 acres. The settlement indicates that he had lived on that land since May of 1740. There is good reason to doubt this, not only for John Scott but probably many others who were given title to land in the Manor of Maske in 1765. Before making that case, it is necessary to cover the history of the area from about 1740 to 1765.

The border dispute between Pennsylvania and Maryland dragged on for years, and it was not until 1760 that real effort was made to come up with an agreed upon line between the two colonies. The Penns and Lord Baltimore finally agreed that the line should be 15 miles south of the southernmost limit of the city of Philadelphia. They finally settled on a wall of a building in the southern edge of Philadelphia as the agreed limit of that city. The surveyors, beginning at that point, measured 15 statute miles south to where the latitude of the line should be, and then began to run the line West across the Susquehanna and the Allegheny Mountains for a distance of about 244 miles before the Indians decided they wanted it run no further. This line, agreed to be at 39 degrees, 43 minutes, 23.6 seconds North Latitude, was run by the surveyors Mason and Dixon and to this day bears their name. All states south of this line in 1861 would be known as Dixie, as it became the approximate dividing line between the North and South of our great Civil War. John Scott's land lay about six miles north of this famous line. The dispute over the actual line and who lay on what side of the line was still in litigation even after the Civil War.

While life on the frontier during the early period of 1740 to about 1753 was not easy, it was a period of relative peace in spite of the land disputes between the Penn and Baltimore partisans. The western half of York County was slowly being converted to civilization. The Scotch-Irish along Marsh Creek and the western half of York County became important politically. Hance Hamilton, still the leader of the Scotch-Irish in the area, was first elected High Sheriff of all of York County in 1749, though that election was a bitter contest not without some rather undemocratic chicanery on both sides.

Hance Hamilton and the people he brought with him were part of that unique race of Scotch-Irish frontiersmen. What their times were like in the colonial days of early Pennsylvania are described in the "History of York County" as follows.

It is not easy to describe in detail the home life of the early Scotch-Irish in Pennsylvania or any part of the new world. They did not leave behind them church records so exact and carefully prepared as did the Quakers or Germans, but their success and their achievements in the broad field of American enterprise and development shine brightly on the pages of American history. Their home life can be portrayed from traditions which have come down from several generations, and many of the settlers of this race were a rollicking, roistering class of people.

The settlers dressed in what was called a hunting shirt, a garment something like a frock coat, reaching half down the thighs and belted around the waist. The bosom was made large, and lapped over a foot or more, so as to be used as a sort of knapsack for carry provisions. There was a cape on the shoulders which was usually fringed. The belt carried a hatchet, scalping knife and bullet pouch. Moccasins were worn instead of shoes. Some of the men dressed their legs like the Indians and wore breach clout, which left the thighs and hips bare, and in this costume they often went to church.

Their wedding ceremonies were characteristic, and show the state of their civilization. These frolics were the delight of young and old, and were the only gatherings at which there was not labor of reaping, log-rolling, building a cabin, or planning some scout or campaign. The wedding company assembled at the house of the groom's father prepared to march, so as to reach the house of the bride by noon. They were dressed without aid of a store or tailor within many miles, and their horses were also unaided by either blacksmith or saddlers. As they marched in double file along the narrow trail they were apt to be ambuscaded by surprise parties, who sprang out and fired to alarm the horses. As the cavalcade neared the bride's house, two young men usually started on a race to bring back the whiskey bottle, which was standing ready for them. The victor seized it and returned to pass it around the company.

The wedding dinner was beef, pork, venison, and bear's meat and if table knives were scarce, the scalping knives were drawn from the belt and used. Immediately after the dinner, the dancing commenced, and was kept up till the next morning. As soon as one became tired another stepped in to take his place. Whoever stole off to get some sleep was hunted up, dragged out on the floor, and the fiddler ordered to play "Hang on Till Tomorrow Morning".

Among such people a word was quickly followed by a blow, and quarrels and fighting were frequent. But in these encounters, no weapons were used. They settled all their difficulties with their fists, a man who was clearly no match for his antagonist was allowed to employ a friend to fight for him. There was no assassination, none of that murderous shooting on sight, which became common on later frontiers.

The laws passed by the colonial Legislature, sitting in Philadelphia, of course applied to the frontier. But the distance made it difficult to administer them, and in most cases, impossible. The people became a law unto themselves, had their own customs, and administered their own punishments, which usually consisted of a flogging with a hickory stick by the person aggrieved or by the neighbors who knew of the offense.

Besides that relic of the Middle Ages, the people showed their nearness to the old civilization of Europe by their songs and tales. Lore-telling was popular, and Jack the Giant Killer and romances of knights errant were favorite stories. Their songs were ballads of Robin Hood. They enjoyed themselves through their hospitality, which was boundless, and their friendships, which were ardent. They were fond of sports, running, wrestling, and jumping, and when they had enough ammunition, they shot at mark.

After the year 1755, all these people, men, women and children, lived in a continual state of war with the Indians. There were few boys so young that they could not fire a rifle through a port hole, and few women who could not cut bullet patches and carry water. It was a wild life and a rough one, but it had its compensations. The people were hardy, vigorous, and full of strong animal enjoyment. They were masters of their own destinies. Every one was a Jack-of-all-trades, his own blacksmith, his own carpenter, his own cooper, his own gunsmith. He himself, as well as his wife, wove the linsey cloth which they wore. Nor was it altogether a monotonous life. The continual excitement of forty years of war, and the rapid development of the frontier, the growth of new settlements, the varied exertion required, left little room for sameness. Men grew old early from the privations and hardships, but they never complained that life was dull.

If the above description seems to portray the Scotch-Irish of York County as coarse and uncivilized, it must be remembered that they were Presbyterians imbued with the work ethic and determined to not just survive but to build not only farms, but churches and schools. They produced many men of distinction in this county. Three became United States Senators and three became Pennsylvania Supreme Court justices. Most of the progeny of John Scott left that county early in our family history, but men of his line also distinguished themselves. They served as officers in the Revolutionary War, the War of 1812, and the Civil War 100 years later. One became a United States Senator, one served many years in the Pennsylvania legislature, one became the Assistant Secretary of War for Transportation under Abraham Lincoln during the Civil War and later became the President of the Pennsylvania Railroad.

The above description of the Scotch-Irish no doubt applied to our David Scott and his son John of the Marsh Creek Settlement. They personally knew of and were involved in some of the events that mark our early history. The Scotch-Irish of the Marsh Creek Settlement played a major role in the French and Indian War.

In 1753 the French crossed Lake Erie and began building forts on the southern shore of that Lake and down the Allegheny River. George Washington, then age 21, was sent to warn the French to stay out of the area. His warning went unheeded, and the French proceeded down the Allegheny and built a fort at the confluence of the Allegheny and Monongahela Rivers where they joined to become the great Ohio River, the entrance to the Ohio Valley. They called it Fort Duquesne. The site later became the city of Pittsburg, the Gateway to the West. The French wanted the interior of the vast North American continent, and control of Fort Duquesne and the headwaters of the Ohio would give it to them.

Washington, rebuked by the French, returned home, raised 300 troops, and set out to take Fort Duquesne. He was soon faced with 1,600 French and Indians and he retreated to build Fort Necessity in Fayette County as a defensive site. He was defeated there and allowed to return to Virginia.

General Braddock was then dispatched from England with two regiments of British troops. He landed at Alexandria, Virginia to commence his expedition to take Fort Duquesne. Washington joined Braddock as a member of his staff. Logistics were a problem, and Benjamin Franklin helped raise 150 wagons, teams and teamsters, and 259 pack horses for the expedition. Many of them came from York County and the Marsh Creek Settlement.

One of the men from the Marsh Creek Settlement who went on the Braddock expedition as a wagon master was a man named William McCreary. He had arrived at Marsh Creek at about the same time as David and John Scott. He was the father of Sarah McCreary who became the wife of David Scott's grandson. Alexander M. Scott's memoirs state that "William McCreary was a wagonmaster in Washington's Army, and at the time of Braddock's defeat heard the high words which passed between Washington and Braddock, and afterwards drove his wagon train over Braddock's grave to conceal it from the Indians." Braddock was indeed defeated, and was so severely wounded in the later stages of the battle that he died during the retreat. It is a matter of historical record that he was buried in the road and his wagon train run over his grave so the Indians would not know where it was, and so could not scalp him or otherwise mutilate his body. It is a wonder that care was taken to prevent that, given the man and the circumstances of his death.

Braddock has been described as "desperate in his fortune, brutal in his behavior, and obstinate in his sentiments". His own secretary wrote of him before the battle; "We have a general most judiciously chosen for being disqualified for the service in which he is employed in almost every respect." Indeed he was.

Two brothers, Tom and Joseph Fausett, had enlisted in the enterprise. In the midst of the ambush that Braddock had allowed his force to stumble into, the provincial soldiers took cover and fired from behind rocks and trees much as the Indians and French were doing. Braddock raved and swore and cursed his troops as cowards and ordered them to stand out in the road and fight like English soldiers. He and his British officers struck many of the provincial soldiers down with swords trying to force them back out into the open. Braddock himself killed Joseph Fausett with a sword thrust. Tom Fausett witnessed his brother's death. In anger at the needless death and stupidity, he raised his rifle and shot Braddock through the right arm and into his chest, knocking him from his horse. Many of the other British officers met the same fate, in fact few of them survived, most killed or wounded by the provincial troops in self defense.

Braddock had tried to fight the Indians and French using European strategy and tactics, and was unwilling to accept advice and counsel from Washington and the other provincial officers under his command. The British officers and men in their bright red jackets made wonderful targets for the Indian shooting from cover while the British stood stupidly in the open trying to find something to shoot at as they fell. His army was routed and they fell back along the road they had cut. They retreated to Lancaster and finally to Philadelphia. On the return journey Braddock died of his wounds, and Washington, one of the few officers of the entire force not wounded, though astride his third horse and four bullet holes in his coat, did as Braddock requested. He buried him in the road and drove the wagons over his grave to conceal its location. Tom Fausett himself later revealed its location and the body was moved a short distance off the road. A marker of wood was carved and nailed to a tree, and this marker survived for many years. Today the site is still known, but the British government has never taken the slightest notice of the spot where lies the remains of one who gave his life for the English cause.

With Braddock's defeat the whole of the western frontier of Pennsylvania was now unprotected and the French and Indians began moving eastward, killing, burning and laying waste to every farm and settlement in their path, right up to the Susquehanna River, north of Harrisburg. York County, and the Marsh Creek Settlement around Gettysburg, were now on the edge of a very violent frontier.

Companies of militia were organized and several forts were built. Hance Hamilton, son of the original Hance Hamilton, was commissioned a Captain in the Pennsylvania Provincial Army, and he led one group. Another group was led by, remarkably, the pastor of the Presbyterian Church in Marsh Creek, the Reverend Andrew Bay, who organized and led his own company. The Second Battalion of Provincial troops as constituted in the summer of 1756 was remarkable for the names among its officers. The Battalion was led by the famous Col. John Armstrong who eventually became a General in the Revolution. His brother was Captain George Armstrong, and he led the first Company. Captain Hance Hamilton led the Second Company, and became a legend in the French and Indian War, rising to the rank of Colonel. The Third Company was led by Captain Hugh Mercer, who before the war was a physician. He would also rise to the rank of General during the Revolution, and would die at the head of his Brigade in the Revolutionary War Battle of Princeton. Serving under Mercer in 1756 as Ensign of the Third Company was John Scott.

It is not known for sure that this John Scott was the John Scott of our family line, but our John Scott certainly would have fit the mold. He was young, probably about 21 years old, but he had been born, bred, and hardened on the frontier. He was no doubt strong enough, and mature enough, to be among the leaders of a very tough company of Scotch-Irish frontiersmen. His father had been recruited to come to America as a man who could and would fight. There is little doubt his son would have also.

However, it must be noted that there was another John Scott who lived in Straban Township of York County in 1757. He died in that year leaving a wife and three minor sons. It is possible that he could also have been the John Scott who served under Mercer as Ensign of the Third Battalion. A request was made to the Pennsylvania State Archives for further information on the John Scott listed in the muster rolls and other documentation relating to the Kittanning expedition. The request was returned with the notation that no records of this individual is in the custody of that organization. The search for corroborating information will continue. For the moment, it will be

assumed that the John Scott noted in this action is the John Scott of our family line. His story and the Battle of Kittanning are an interesting part of early American history, and it is at least fifty percent certain that our ancestor John Scott was involved. The story will be told in the following chapter on John Scott. Here we will return to what we know of his father David Scott.

As stated above, it is not certain as to exactly how David Scott came to the Marsh Creek Settlement. It is certain that a David Scott was in the area in its early history, though he may not have arrived there with the families that Hance Hamilton brought with him in 1739. However, the two men did know and were associated with each other in the Marsh Creek area. In addition to the fact that the sons of Scott and Hamilton marched with each other on the Kittanning Expedition, David Scott served as witness in a land transaction in 1757 of the sale of 200 acres of land on Marsh Creek by Hance Hamilton. In 1759 David Scott again witnessed a land transaction, this time involving Hance Hamilton's son Thomas. There is, therefore, little doubt that by at least the late 1750's, and more likely 1740, both David Scott and Hance Hamilton had arrived in the Marsh Creek settlement and were contemporary members of that Scotch-Irish community.

If it is assumed that David Scott arrived with or at about the same time as Hance Hamilton in America in 1729, other assumptions can be made. He would have been a mature adult, and so was either married or of marrying age. He was therefore about 20 to 25 years old in 1730, and his birth year would have been roughly 1705. It is also entirely possible that he was an older son of another unknown Scott when he arrived, but this does not seem likely. He could have married sometime during the period when the Hance Hamilton group lived along the Susquahanna in the early 1730s. There is currently no known record of a marriage, but it would have taken place prior to his moving to western York County around 1740. A later legal document tells us that his wife's name was Martha and we know nothing more about her.

David Scott was the father of at least one son, John. There are indications that he had perhaps two more. One was named Samuel and the other Joseph. Both of these later named men and their children appear to be associated with the sons of John Scott in later records. They appear in several early York County tax records and lived in Hamilton's Bann Township which lay to west of Cumberland Township where John Scott is recorded as living. The ages of these other possible sons are not known, nor is the order of their birth.

In 1755 son John is recorded as marrying Margaret Erwin. The record is contained in the marriage records of a certain Rev. Thomas Barton of early York County history. If it is assumed that John was at least twenty when he married, then his birth would have occurred around 1735. If the three above named men were the sons of David Scott, then they all were likely born in the 1730's.

As noted above, David Scott is recorded witnessing land transactions in 1757 and 1759. There is in addition, a very interesting episode involving David Scott and the land dispute in the Manor of Maske. The following is from "The Manor of Maske: Its history and Individual Properties", by Glatfelter and Weaner of the Adams County Historical Society.

"A letter which Surveyor George Stevenson wrote on September 6, 1760 indicates clearly how the continuing standoff between the Proprietaries and the Marsh Creek Settlers could possibly have affected the status of all the Penn Manors, if not the very authority of the Proprietaries over their Province. Stevenson informed the land office that, allegedly at the urging of Joseph Callaway, a Philadelphia lawyer, legislator, and political opponent of the Penns, one David Scott had presented him with an old warrant (called and Old Right) from the days of William Penn and asked that it be used to survey a tract for him at a place within the Manor. When Stevenson refused on the grounds that he had no authority to grant such a request, Scott persuaded a young man living nearby who was learning surveying (possibly it was Archibald McClean) to do it for him. The 174 acres which were then surveyed were already occupied by James McGaughy.

Stevenson urged that the land office act promptly to award McGaughy some legal title to his property, both in fairness to him and the Proprietaries who could ultimately have lost control of the manors if persons were permitted to invade them with Old Right warrants. "If we succeed in this all Marsh Creek will be brought to bear," Stevenson wrote. On the other hand, if Mr. Gallaway succeed, (for I am satisfied Scott is but a Tool to a Door to

enter upon the Proprietaries' Manor) in this attempt, the Manor of Maske is lost." When Stevenson wrote, the dispute was already in the courts. The case of McGaughy vs. Scott was before the Court of Common Pleas of York County from January, 1760 through June, 1762 and before the Supreme Court of Pennsylvania from September, 1760 through April, 1762. In the end, Scott's survey was not accepted and returned to the land office. The integrity of Maske and the other manors was thus preserved."

Research has uncovered many of the documents that outline this case, and it is difficult to determine exactly what was happening during this episode. It was Stevenson's opinion that it was an attempt by Penn's political foes to break the hold of the Proprietaries on the land in the Manor and to establish legal title outside of the manor system. He also implies that David Scott was attempting to take property already "owned" by James McGaughy. It should also be noted that Stevenson was a Penn faction bureaucrat and his letter should be read with that in mind.

In the first opinion, that this was a scheme to open the manor, Stevenson was probably right, but lawyer Calloway and David Scott had a very good case. It was based on a 1682 grant written in England by William Penn to a man named George Palmer for 5000 acres of land to be located in the Province of Pennsylvania. The Palmer family moved to Pennsylvania and took up all but 1504 acres, these acres "yet unlocated". In 1759 David Scott bought from the heirs of George Palmer a warrant for 100 acres to be located "in any part of the Province not already surveyed or apportioned", as specified in the original grant by William Penn. David Scott, for reasons that can only be guessed at, selected 100 acres of land in the Manor of Maske, land already occupied by James McGaughy, but to which the Proprietaries had refused to grant title. It therefore met the definition of the original grant. It took the Supreme Court of Pennsylvania to settle the issue in 1762 in favor of the Proprietaries, a result probably dictated more by politics than legality. It must be remembered that in 1762, the Penns still were the governing power of the Province. That would change in 1776. However, an interesting thing happened just two months after the Supreme Court ruling. The following (abbreviated) land record was executed in York County.

23 June, 1762. Between David Scott of Cumberland Co., Yeoman, and James McGaughy of Cumberland Twp. York Co., Yeoman. John McGaughy of York Co., miller and Jane his wife by Indenture dated the 29 July 1757 for the sum of 150 pds. sold unto David Scott a certain Grist Mill, Saw Mill, and Dwelling Plantation situate on Marsh Creek in Cumberland Twp. York Co. Subject to the payment of the purchase money interest and quit rent due the Proprietaries. Now for the sum of 330 Pds. said David Scott paid by James McGaughy sold unto said James McGaughy the afore mentioned Grist Mill, Saw Mill, and Dwelling Plantation situate as above mentioned. Subject to the purchase money, interest, and quit rent due the Proprietaries.

David Scott

Witnesses: Jno. Boyd, Jac. Moore.

Received of James McGaughy 330 pds. in full the 23 June, 1762.

David Scott

Thus two months after he lost his case, David Scott sold to James McGaughy the very land in question in the lawsuit! Not only was David Scott not trying to steal the property from James McGaughy, David Scott already owned it! And James McGaughy knew he owned it, otherwise he would have never paid David Scott the 330 pounds! It therefore appears that there was a conspiracy to crack the Proprietaries' hold on the land in the Manor of Maske, and both David Scott and James McGaughy were a part of it!

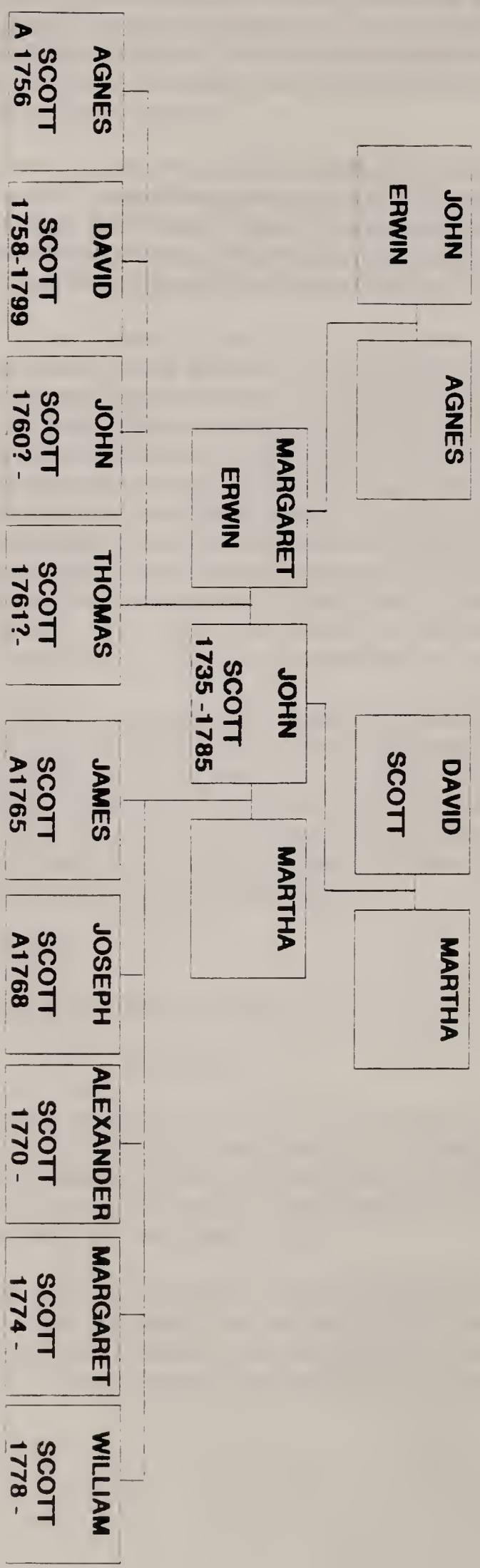
How the Philadelphia Lawyer Calloway got involved is an interesting question. Was it Calloway in the political world of Philadelphia who initiated the scheme to reduce the political power of the Penns, and found a willing accomplice in David Scott in the Manor of Maske? Or did David Scott and his neighbors in the Manor of Maske hatch the scheme to gain legal title to their properties and found a willing lawyer in Calloway? The latter seems more likely.

The various documents that made up this interesting story also locate David Scott for us. In one document he is identified as being from Cumberland County, but this is thought to be an error, because in two other documents he is identified as being of Cumberland Township, York County. He is therefore in the same Township in the years 1757-1762 as we find his son John Scott. It is also in one of these documents that David Scott's wife is identified as Martha.

Thus it is clear that a David Scott lived in the Manor of Maske in Cumberland Township of York County in the late 1750's. However, no record of him, other than the above cited land records, has been located. There are York County tax records for the year 1762 (and several later years) in which John Scott appears, but David Scott does not. It is not clear why he does not appear on the 1762 tax rolls, since he definitely was there in 1762. Nor has there so far been found any will or death or other record which might provide further knowledge of David Scott, the presumed father of John Scott.

The author is fully aware that the story of David Scott as outline above is not supported by enough evidence to justify a certain claim that he was the primogenitor of our Scott family in America. However, though we are not yet certain we have his name correct, have any documented evidence of his family, or when and where he died, we believe that a fully documented history of David Scott would fit well within the framework of the above described early Scotch-Irish history in south central Pennsylvania. If our current perceptions are not precise, they may be generally true, for it is a documented certainty that David Scott's son John Scott of our family line was a land owner and member of the Scotch-Irish community in the Manor of Maske along Marsh Creek, and it is more likely that he came to be there as outlined above than in any other scenario. John Scott's story, as told in the next chapter, is not much more detailed than that of his father David's, but it is grounded in fact.

JOHN SCOTT



JOHN SCOTT

John Scott, if the assumptions about his father David and his history is correct, was probably born some time around 1735. As noted in the previous chapter, he may have been one of perhaps three sons, all probably being born near the Susquahanna River in eastern Pennsylvania in the mid 1730's. John's father David is thought to have moved his family to the Manor of Maske in Cumberland Township, York County, Pennsylvania along Marsh Creek in about 1739.

John Scott grew to manhood on the frontier. He was no doubt typical of the sons of the frontier family, doing a man's work long before he was a man. He was a farmer, and a hunter, and no doubt wore the costume of a frontiersman of the day, breach clout, moccasins, buckskin shirt tied at the waist, with a tomahawk and scalping knife in his belt. He could do all the things needed to survive along the frontier without access to goods or services provided by others. By the mid 1750s he was of marrying age.

During the period 1755 to 1759 there was an itinerant missionary of the Church of England who performed many marriages in the York County area. His name was Rev. Thomas Barton, and he recorded the marriages he performed in a personal log that still exists. The marriages that appear on that list have been published by the Southeast Pennsylvania Genealogical Society of York, PA. A marriage of John Scott appears on that list.

Rev. Barton was an interesting character in his own right. He organized and led a company of York County men which served under General Forbes in the Fort Duquesne campaign during the French and Indian War, with Reverend Barton also serving as chaplain of the force. Reverend Barton recorded that he performed a marriage between John Scott and Margaret Erwin in 1755. Other than the location of York County and the date of 7 July, 1755, there is no other information about the marriage in his log.

One might doubt that this marriage was that of a Scotch-Irish Presbyterian like John Scott, since Rev. Barton was of the Church of England. John Scott was located in a Scotch-Irish Presbyterian stronghold, a well established church of that denomination was close to his location, and John Scott was no doubt Presbyterian. That being said, it is also clear that Reverend Barton married many people with Scotch-Irish names, among them Hamilton, Ramsey and McClean. It is also noted that most of the churches of the time were served by itinerant clergy who served several churches at the same time. It is also noted that this marriage occurred in the heat of the French and Indian War, which may have precluded the preference for marriage by a minister of one's own faith. This marriage record is accepted as that of John Scott in light of the above arguments and the fact that it fits very well with the constructed ages of John Scott and his children.

The father of Margaret Erwin was probably John Erwin. A John Erwin appears in Cumberland Township of York County in the 1762 tax lists. He does not appear in other later York County records. There were two Erwin men named in the Agnew-McPherson list of settlers in the Manor of Maske in 1765. (Agnew and McPherson were the men who finally surveyed the Manor in 1765.) They were named James and William. It is believed that these men were contemporaries of John Scott and therefore probably the sons of John Erwin and the brothers of Margaret Erwin. If the Scotch-Irish naming convention is applied to John Scott and Margaret's children, then her father would have been John Erwin, since they named their second son John, the presumed father of Margaret. By the same logic, Margaret Erwin's mother would have been named Agnes since John and Margaret's first daughter, Agnes, would be named after the wife's mother. However, the Erwin line has not been researched and there is no evidence currently in hand regarding Margaret Erwin's parents.

In the previous chapter, it was noted that a John Scott served as Ensign in the Company of Captain Hugh Mercer during the Battle of Kittanning during the French and Indian War. While it is not certain that our John Scott was the Ensign of that Company, it is worth telling the story since there is at least an even chance that he was.

The war had begun in 1753, and for most of it the English and the Pennsylvanians were on the defensive. In the fall of 1756 it was decided that a force would be sent against the French and Delaware Indians at Fort Kittanning, the headquarters of that tribe. Kittanning was on the Allegheny River north and east of Fort Duquesne, now Pittsburg. This was deep in the heart of the French and Indian territories. Colonel John Armstrong's Second Battalion of Pennsylvania Militia was assigned the task. Col. Armstrong's brother George had been killed in a

French and Indian attack on Fort Granville in the Spring of 1756, so leading the companies of his battalion, now numbering four, were Captains Hance Hamilton, Hugh Mercer, Edward Ward, and James Potter. After the action, Col. John Armstrong wrote a report to the Pennsylvania Legislature. That full report appears in the "History of Western Pennsylvania" by I. D. Rupp. It is summarized and paraphrased below:

"On 30 August, 1756, Col. Armstrong led his men out of Fort Shirley and into the wilderness. By 7 September Armstrong's force had arrived undetected in the area of Fort Kittanning. What was thought to be a small group of Indians had been detected prior to reaching the Fort, and a small detachment of twelve men under the command of Lt. Hogg were assigned to attack it the next day to preclude any alarm at the fort. As they approached the fort and town in darkness, they were about to enter a corn field, only to discover that many Indians were using it as a place to sleep that night, and had lit several fires to disperse night insects. Armstrong split his men, one group to circle around to attack the town and fort, and the other to attack the Indians in the corn field at daybreak.

At dawn the attack was begun through the corn field and into the houses surrounding the fort. The fighting was heavy in spite of the surprise. Fire coming from the houses was heavy and accurate. Armstrong had the houses set on fire, and this drove the defenders out. The French Commander, a Captain Jacobs, was driven from one of the houses by the fire, tumbling from a second story window. This man was killed and scalped. The English prisoners whom the raid rescued later testified that Jacobs had traded Lt. Armstrong's (Col. John Armstrong's brother) boots for a powder horn and bullet pouch which he then carried. Jacobs had taken the boots from Lt. Armstrong when he had killed him at Fort Granville some months earlier.

By this time, Col. Armstrong had "taken a heavy ball in the shoulder", and Capt. Mercer was shot in the arm. Mercer was taken to the crest of a hill above the town and his position was immediately attacked by a group of Indians. Mercer and his men, Ensign John Scott among them, held the high ground while the work of burning the town and stores and rescuing of prisoners taken in previous raids continued. Almost every house exploded when fire reached the stores and ammunition hidden there. Prisoners reported that there was enough ammunition to fight the English for ten years stored about the fort and town before the attack. Almost all of it went up in flames.

Armstrong soon learned from prisoners that a force of French soldiers and Indians had arrived the day before, their purpose being to begin a march the next day to take Fort Shirley, the beginning point of his own campaign against Kittanning. The small force sighted the night before was the advanced party of that force, there being close to 30 men assigned to it. Since Armstrong's own provisions and baggage was near where the enemy advance party had been spotted, and Lt. Hogg and his party assigned to attack it were now known to be less than half the number of Indians, Armstrong decided to withdraw without full destruction of the corn field and other supplies.

As they retreated, they took some ineffective fire from the woods on occasion. "Captain Mercer being wounded was induced, as we have reason to believe, by some of his men, to leave the main body with his Ensign, John Scott, and ten or twelve men, they being heard tell him that we were in great danger, and they could take him into the road a high way. They are probably lost, there being yet no account of him, and most of the men have come in. A detachment was sent to bring him in, but could not find him; on return of the detachment, it was generally reported he was seen with the above number of men, take a different road."

Lt. Hogg had attacked the "small" party of Indians in the enemy advance party, and had lost his life along with most of his men. Armstrong's force had indeed lost a considerable number of horses and provisions and supplies to the advance party of French and Indians. Armstrong reported that he had by modest computation killed at least 30 to 40 of the enemy, though the number was likely much higher since there had been no time to press the attack or take scalps from all the dead. They had freed eleven English prisoners, four of them now missing with Captain Mercer.

Armstrong then conveyed the intelligence he had gained from the prisoners regarding the French intentions, disposition, and size of their force. The casualty report was then appended. The report noted that Captain Mercer, Ensign Scott, and others were missing. There were a total of 17 killed, 13 wounded, and 19 missing. The rescued prisoners now missing with Mercer and Scott were a woman and a boy and two little girls."

While Col. Armstrong was not aware of the safe return of Mercer and Scott at the time of his report, it appears from records in the Pennsylvania Archives, that they successfully avoided being captured and did return safely to English controlled territory. However, those records are in conflict. In a "List of the Officers in the Province Pay with the dates of Their Commissions", Ensign John Scott is noted as having received his commission in July of 1756, and was wounded at Kittanning. The other entry in the Archives is apparently taken directly from Col. Armstrong's casualty report wherein John Scott is listed as missing. It is clear that Captain Mercer survived the return out of the wilderness, since he resumed command of his company and fought with it throughout the remainder of the war, and also later during the Revolution. Companies led by Captains Mercer and Hamilton also continued service with Col. Armstrong through the end of the war, and were present at the taking of Fort Duquesne in the winter of 1758. However, John Scott does not appear in any military records after 1756. He may have been wounded as one of the records cited above states and because of it, no longer participated in the war.

One can only imagine the story of how Ensign John Scott, with his wounded Captain, ten other men, a woman, and three small children made their way through wilderness across the Allegheny Mountains and half the state of Pennsylvania, all the while avoiding hostile Indians. They had no horses or provisions, though the men were well armed. The land was wilderness with no roads, which would have had to be avoided in any case. It must have taken all their skill as woodsmen and hunters to return to live and fight again. It is a story our generation will never know, but one which must have been repeated more often than most in that Scotch-Irish community along Marsh Creek.

As far as history is concerned, the battle at Kittanning was of much greater significance than the taking of Fort Duquesne. Kittanning was the decisive military victory of the French and Indian War, and it was fought exclusively by Provincial troops. It not only set the stage for the winning of war, it convinced the Americans that they understood and conducted warfare in the new world better than the Regulars sent by the British Crown. A significant consequence of the Kittanning victory was that it made it clear to the Provincials that they did not need the protection of the Crown. Indeed the power of the Crown, as represented by such men as Braddock and Forbes and their European style of warfare, was now suspect. Resistance to the Crown's oppressive taxes and colonial policy was now a reasonable alternative. It was to become the alternative of choice twenty years later in 1776.

John Scott had nine children as revealed by the documents relating to settlement of his estate. The sons were named David, John, Thomas, James, Joseph, Alexander, and William. The daughters were named Agnes and Margaret. Agnes was married at the time of her father's death to a man named Thomas Wilson and Alexander, William and Margaret were minors. However, John Scott's estate settlement papers name his wife as Martha, not Margaret. John Scott therefore had two wives during his life. The ages of John Scott's children, who their mothers were, and their birth years is reconstructed from the following evidence.

John Scott's children are named in what appears to be the order of birth and by sex in the legal documents relating to John's estate. This order is: David, who is named as oldest son, John, Thomas, James, Joseph, Alexander, William, Agnes, and Margaret. It is also stated that Agnes is married to a Thomas Wilson and that Alexander, William, and Margaret are minors. In another document, Margaret is noted as being a minor of twelve years and William is age eight, while Alexander is not named. Therefore William is the youngest son and Margaret is the youngest daughter, and Alexander is the second youngest son. It is not possible to place Agnes, except that she would be older than Alexander. The order above is reflected in two major documents relating to John Scott's estate.

There are several tax lists of inhabitants of Cumberland Township in early York County. The first such known list is for the year 1762. In that list appears John Scott, as well as a man named Robert Scott whose relationship to John, if any, is unknown. There is no amplifying information in this list.

Another list exists for the year 1767. This list is very confusing, no less than four John Scott's appear in Cumberland Township. Two of the entries appear to be computations for the other two, though that is an assumption. Robert Scott also appears in this list, as does a William Scott.

In the year 1771, only one John Scott appears in the list for Cumberland Township. Again Robert Scott and William Scott are listed.

The next list is for the year 1779. In Cumberland Twsp. there is now in addition to John Scott and Robert Scott, a David Scott. John is noted as having 180 acres of land, Robert has 180 acres, but David owns none. The implication is that David has at some time between 1771 and 1779 reached the age of 21 and is therefore subject to a head tax, but he is living with his father John on his land. David Scott was therefore born between the year 1756, this being the year after his father's marriage to Margaret Erwin, and 1758, this being the last year he could have been born to be 21 years of age by 1779. William Scott no longer appears in the list.

In the 1780 tax list, the same three Scott names appear with different land, cattle, and horse totals, except that David is still without land or livestock.

In the 1781 tax list, the three previous men, John, David and Robert Scott, all appear. But another John Scott has been added. This would be John Scott, the second son of John Scott, and brother of David. He has now reached his maturity, and has, as the second son, struck out on his own. Indeed, he is credited with owning 250 acres of land. This John Scott had now become taxable at age 21, so his birth year would have been about 1760.

In the 1782 tax record, a third John Scott is added to the list, as well as a Thomas Scott. The probable relationships are that the third John Scott is the son of Robert Scott. Thomas Scott is the son of John Scott and brother to David and John. This later conjecture is supported by the fact that the 250 acres attributed to the second John Scott in 1781 has now been divided in half, and John and Thomas each own 125 acres. If Thomas Scott reached his maturity in 1782, his birth year would have been 1761.

The situation clarifies itself in 1783. In this tax list, the number of inhabitants residing with the taxed individuals is noted. The third John Scott no longer appears, nor does David. There are listed John Scott, with nine inhabitants, John Scott with two inhabitants, and Thomas Scott with one. These numbers are precise when related to our John Scott family. All of his children would have been born by 1783, and if he and Martha were living with his nine children, his family would have consisted of eleven. However, if two sons, John and Thomas have their own taxable lands, the number is reduced to nine, that being the number recorded for John Scott. David is living as the eldest son in his father's household, which has always been the case. Son John has obviously married, hence two inhabitants, while his son Thomas is not married, hence only one.

On the death of John Scott in 1785, his son James and wife Martha are made administrators of his estate. For James to serve in this capacity he would have had to be 21 years of age in 1785, therefore being born no later than 1764. The question must also be asked, why was James appointed administrator of his father's estate, rather than David, who was the oldest son? The assumption is that James was the oldest son of John Scott's second wife, Martha. It therefore appears that John Scott's first wife Margaret had died sometime after Thomas's birth in 1761 and John Scott had remarried prior to James's birth in 1764.

The births of the three youngest, Alexander, Margaret and William are derived from the orphans court documents. The ages of Margaret and William are 12 and 8 when their mother requested that guardians be appointed for them in March of 1786. Margaret was therefore born in 1774 and William in 1778. In the fall of 1786, Alexander is noted as being a minor in one document, even though his mother did not request a guardian be appointed for him. It is presumed that he was near the age when he could make his own choice in the matter, about 16, which would place his birth year in about 1770. There is no evidence to support a birth year for Joseph, but it would have been between James in 1764 and Alexander in 1770, so 1768 would be a reasonable guess.

There are three possibilities in placing the birth year of Agnes. If David, John, and Thomas were born in 1758, 1760, and 1761 respectively, then Agnes could have been the first born of John Scott's first marriage, being born in the year 1756. It is also possible of course, that she could have been born after Thomas in 1761, being the last born of John Scott's first marriage in about 1763. Finally, she could have been born after James in about 1764. The first choice, her birth year being in 1756, is probably the correct one. This assumption is based on the fact that she and Thomas Wilson appear later in the life of David Scott in Huntingdon County and is therefore more likely to be a sister of David than a half sister.

To summarize, John Scott married Margaret Erwin in 1755, Agnes was born about 1756, David in 1758, John in 1760, and Thomas in 1761, after which time Margaret died. John Scott then married Martha in about 1763, James was born about 1764, Joseph in about 1766-1768, Alexander in 1770, Margaret in 1774, and William in 1778.

It is not possible to determine when John Scott took possession of his farm in the Manor of Maske. In their book "The Manor of Maske, its History and Individual Properties", Glatfelter and Weaner provide evidence that the land was originally owned by a James Carr. They state that "The name James Carr appears for this location on the draft of a survey for Willoughby Winchester 22 December, 1749". The presumption is that Carr was selling the land to Winchester at that time. The land known to have been occupied by John Scott lies mostly between Marsh Creek and one of its major tributaries, Willoughby's Run, the name of the latter stream probably being derived from the name Willoughby Winchester. It therefore appears that John Scott, and David Scott also, may not have lived there prior to 1750. However, it must be recalled that the land dispute in the Manor of Maske makes it impossible to tell the difference between who claimed what land and who actually lived on it. Without further evidence, it is just as likely that David Scott lived on the land from about 1739 as it is that Willoughby Winchester occupied it in 1749. It is also noted that the name Winchester does not appear either in the Agnew-McPherson List, or on any of the early tax rolls of York County. We will make the obviously unwarranted assumption, that David Scott originally settled the farm in about 1739 and that John Scott as his oldest son and heir took possession of it, at least by 1762 as recorded in the tax records.

The land dispute within the Manor of Maske was finally settled in 1765. Recall the history of the Manor of Maske and the nature of the people who settled it. At the invitation of the Penns, the Scotch-Irish arrived in the area in 1739 and 1740 and took possession. Later designs of the Penns on the land led to a conflict of legal ownership, they would not issue title to these "squatters" in their Manor of Maske. It mattered little to those living there. There was no civil or military power capable of forcing the issue. In fact civil authority for a time lay in the hands of Hance Hamilton, the man who led the Scotch-Irish there in the first place. As for military power, the Scotch-Irish of York County at that time constituted the heart of the military power of the Province of Pennsylvania. They proved that during the French and Indian War. The Scotch-Irish community in western York County knew very well who owned what land, and if it was sold or otherwise changed hands, those changes occurred with full knowledge and approval of the people of the community, Philadelphia lawyers be damned.

When the Proprietaries finally saw that settlement of the legal title issue was necessary and they must give up their claims, they agreed to give title to those who had "improved" the land prior to 1741. The people of the community knew very well who those were. But did that mean that if one of their neighbors had bought or inherited some of the disputed land in the 25 year period between 1740 and 1765, that that land was now the property of the Penns? It is quite clear that the Scotch-Irish would not allow the land rightfully acquired by any of their neighbors to be forfeit to settle this issue with an impotent central authority. The settlement was made not with those who had settled the land in 1739 and 1740, but with those that the Scotch-Irish community said had settled the land in 1739 and 1740. Those were actually those who held the land in the Spring of 1765. It was politically expedient for the Penns to accept this reality, and John Scott was given title to 125 acres of land as if he had settled it in 1740. There is no record as to how he actually acquired it, whether he bought it outright from someone or inherited it from his father; no paper trail of transfer of ownership exists. It is likely, however, that the land was originally settled by David Scott, John's father, when Hance Hamilton led his company of Scotch-Irish into the area.

The Manor of Maske was finally surveyed in 1765 and 1766 by two surveyors named James Agnew and Robert McPherson. There appears in several references a list of the "first settlers" in the Manor of Maske as compiled by these two men. This "Agnew-McPherson" list includes John Scott. There also exists copies of these 1765 surveys giving the precise location of the 260 tracts of land contained within the 6 by 12 mile Manor of Maske. John Scott's 125 acres is described as follows.

The 125 acre tract is a very oddly shaped parcel. The original survey required some 16 survey points to lay it out. The general shape was similar to that of a meat cleaver with a very fat irregular handle. The cutting edge of the cleaver is the eastern boundary and is formed by Willoughby's Run. The confluence of Willoughby's Run and Marsh Creek is at the point where the blade and handle of the cleaver would join. The handle lies

northeast/southwest and crosses Marsh Creek which forms the boundary between Cumberland and Hamilton's Bann Townships, so the parcel was in both Townships. The irregularity of the handle is such that one line of the parcel actually lies in the center of the channel of Marsh Creek itself. John Scott's dwelling is marked as being nearly in the center of the cleaver blade.

It was apparently the custom of the surveyors Agnew and McPherson to give a name to each parcel they surveyed. Why they did so is not known, nor is the reason for the names they chose to identify each parcel. On the original survey they call John Scott's farm "Rosnekill". This name is very clearly written, so the name was obviously intended, though what it could mean or refer to is at best obscure. In later legal documents and deeds, the farm is called the "Rosenhill Plantation", an obvious corruption of the original name, and to present day researchers, just as obscure as the original.

In 1767 John Scott added an additional 75 acres which he purchased from a man named James Walker for the sum of 125 Pounds Pennsylvania currency. The seventy five acres was a long and narrow parcel which was adjacent to the original land on the northwest side. Its inclusion gave the overall property a more reasonable geometry, but still required some 14 survey points to define its outline. The eastern edge of the property was nearly in the center of the Manor of Maske, and lay about two and one half miles southeast of the town of Gettysburg.

One of the reasons for there being so much compiled historical data on the Manor of Maske was that nearly one hundred years after the land dispute was settled, an event of major significance in American History occurred there. The Battle of Gettysburg in July of 1863 was fought entirely within the borders of the Manor of Maske. In Alexander M. Scott's Memoirs, Alexander states that the land once owned by John Scott was part of the Battlefield. That is not quite the case, Willoughby's Run was actually the western edge of that Battlefield, and lies outside but adjacent to the present boundaries of the Gettysburg National Military Park.

That our ancestors once farmed the land next to the land on which the pivotal battle of our Civil War was fought, ties our Scott family history to a place of real historical significance. It was here that General Robert E. Lee crossed the Mason Dixon Line and invaded the North, intent on a strategy which would destroy the offensive capability of the North and end the war in favor of the Southern cause. It was here that he was confronted by an almost equal force of Union troops. It was here that for two and half days the two Armies savaged one another until the afternoon of the third day. It was here, on the afternoon of the 4th of July, 1863, that General Pickett charged across the open field...and lost the cream of the Confederate Army. When his battle flag returned to his lines, tattered and shredded, the Army of Virginia lay dead and dying in the field behind him, and with it, the hopes of the Confederacy, now doomed to the inevitable defeat at Appomattox two years later. It was here that President Abraham Lincoln said some of the most famous words of American history; "Four score and seven years ago, our fathers brought forth on this continent, a new nation.....". It was here that our Scott forefathers played a role in that birth.

John Scott was probably over 40 when the Revolution began. There is no currently known record that suggests that he was involved in any Revolutionary War battles, but service in the Militia was mandatory for all men under the age of 50. He had helped to set the stage for the Revolution twenty years earlier at Kittanning, and no doubt John Scott was still adept at frontier warfare, but war is a young man's game. He was therefore part of the reserve, the state militia, a "Minuteman", until he reached the age of 50 in about 1785, the year of his death. Most of his sons were quite young in 1776, indeed not all were yet born. However, his older sons did serve in the York County Militia as related in a later chapter. It is also possible that Thomas served in the Continental Army. None of John Scott's sons are known to have been casualties, nor does it appear that any of them participated in any Revolutionary War battles.

In late 1785 or very early 1786, John Scott died. If his birth year of 1735 is approximately correct, then he had reached the age of about 50 years. It is not known where he was buried. In later years it seemed to be the custom for families on the frontier to bury their dead on their own property. If John was buried on his own land, then likely there was no record nor lasting marker, and his burial place will likely never be known. However, there was a well established Presbyterian church, the Lower Marsh Creek Presbyterian Church, about two miles northeast of his

farm. There are two cemeteries associated with this church according to maps, and John could have been buried in either, but the name John Scott does not appear in any York, now Adams County, cemetery census records. That is not surprising in that very few stones or markers from this period of our history survive.

John died intestate, that is, without a will. Still, since some of his children were minors at the time of his death, and it was necessary for legal title of land and other property to pass to someone else, there are court records regarding disposition of his estate. Unfortunately, none of these documents record the date of his death. The first document to appear in court records is dated 22 March, 1786. It reads as follows.

"Came into Court Martha Scott, widow and Relict of John Scott, late of Cumberland Township deceased, and prayed that a Guardian may be appointed to take care of the persons and estates of Margaret Scott, aged twelve years and upwards and William Scott, aged 8 years and upwards. The two minor orphan children of the said deceased. Whereupon the court do appoint David Moore of Cumberland Township aforesaid to be the Guardian of the persons and estates of them the said Margaret Scott and William Scott, the minor orphan children aforesaid."

This document proves that John Scott's death had occurred some time before 22 March, 1786, but how long before can only be guessed. Lacking other evidence, and assuming that naming of a guardian was not a pressing issue immediately thereafter, it is assumed that John died sometime in the year 1785.

It is not known if appointing a relative guardian of a minor was legal, and it appears that it may not have been, since there were several older brothers, all adults, who could have served in that capacity were it legal to do so. The name of the man who was appointed is also interesting. David Moore was apparently a long time associate of the Scott family, his name also appearing in the Agnew-McPerson list as a resident of the Manor of Maske in 1765. This association may have lasted through several generations and moves of the families to other parts of the county. It is noted that David R. Scott, grandson of John Scott, married Anna Moore in Kentucky about 50 years later.

The next document to appear is dated 27 November, 1786, wherein Martha and James Scott made an account of their Administration of the estate of John Scott as follows:

"Came into Court, Martha Scott and James Scott, Administrators of all and singular the goods and chattel rights and credits which were of John Scott, late of York County deceased. And produced an account of their Administration as settled with the Registrar of the County whereby there appears a balance in their hands amounting to the sum of three hundred, twenty one pounds, eleven shillings and two pence, which being examined and approved by the Court. It is therefore ordered that the same be and is hereby confirmed."

It is somewhat surprising that the Administrators of the estate would be Martha and James, rather than Martha and David. This circumstance is attributed to the supposition that James was the first born son of Martha, and Martha, as the widow, had selected her own son rather than a step son to see after the affairs that affected her and her children. It is also possible that Martha and David, her step son, did not agree on the disposition of the estate or other family matters, since David later appears in court with a petition regarding disposition of the "Rosenhill Plantation". The petition was entered into the court records on the same day as the previous document, 27 November, 1786, and it reads as follows:

"The Petition of David Scott, Eldest son and heir at law of John Scott, late of York County, Yeoman, deceased, was read to the court. Setting forth that the said John Scott lately died intestate, owner and seized of a certain Plantation and tract of land situate in Cumberland Township, York County containing about one hundred and ninety acres more or less, adjoining lands of Thomas Douglas, Quintain Armstrong, John Murphy, Robert Fletcher deceased, Abraham Usher, David McClellan, and Abraham Scott, leaving a widow named Martha and lawful issue to succeed him, to wit: David Scott the Petitioner, his eldest son and heir at law, John Scott, Thomas Scott, James Scott, Joseph Scott, Alexander Scott, William Scott, Agnes intermarried with Thomas Wilson, and Margaret Scott (the said Alexander, William and Margaret being minors). That the widow and children of the said Intestate hold the said described tract of land and premises together and undivided and praying the court to award an inquest to make partition thereof to and among the widow and children of the said Intestate of the same (and) will admit of such

Partition without prejudice to or fouling of the whole. Otherwise to value the whole undivided according to the directions of the Acts of General Assembly of the State in such case made and provided. Whereupon it is considered by the court and ordered."

Though no order has been found in the records, about six months later the court ordered the High Sheriff to make a partition of the property. It was nearly two years before the Sheriff brought the matter back to the court. The following entry was made on 4 February, 1789.

"John Edie Esquire, High Sheriff of the County of York, came into court and made return of an Order of Orphans Court bearing the date 27 March, 1887, whereby he was commanded to make Partition of a certain Plantation and Tract of Land situate in Cumberland and HamiltonsBann Townships, York County adjoining the lands of Thomas Douglas, Quintain Armstrong, John Murphy, Robert Fletcher deceased, Abraham Usher, David McClellan, and Abraham Scott, containing about one hundred and ninety acres more or less, late the estate of John Scott late of York County, Yeoman deceased. To and amongst the widow and children of the said intestate of the same would admit of such partition without prejudice to or spoiling of the whole. Otherwise to value the whole undivided, according to the Acts of the General Assembly of this Commonwealth in such case made and provided. And by the Sheriff's return of the said order and the inquisition thereunto annexed, it appears that the same would not admit of such partition without prejudice to or spoiling of the whole, and that the same was of the value of 625 pounds lawful money of Pennsylvania in gold or silver. Which valuation the court do hereby confirm.

And now came into court David Scott, Eldest son and Heir at Law of the said intestate and prayed to be permitted to take the said Plantation and Tract of Land and premises with the appurtenances at the valuation, he paying the widow and children of the said deceased their respective shares thereof.

Whereupon it is ordered and decreed by the court that the said David Scott be allowed the sum of 7 pounds and 12 shillings the expense of the cost of the proceedings. That he pay unto Martha Scott, the widow of the said intestate yearly and every year during the term of her natural life the sum of 12 pounds, 6 shillings and 11 pence, 1/2 penny lawful money of Pennsylvania in gold or silver, the first payment whereof to be made in one year from this day, which is be to in full for her right or claim of dower out of the said plantation and tract of land and premises with the appurtenances. That he retain in his hands the sum of 82 pounds, 6 shillings and 5 pence, and after the death of the said widow the further sum of 41 pounds 3 shillings and 2 pence lawful money aforesaid in full for his two shares of the said valuation as Eldest Son and Heir at Law of the said intestate. That he pay unto John Scott, Thomas Scott, James Scott, Joseph Scott, Alexander Scott, William Scott and Margaret Scott or to the Guardian of such of them that are minors, each the sum of 41 pounds, 3 shillings and 2 pence 1/2 penny in one year from this day and after the death of the said widow the further sum of 20 pounds, 11 shillings and 7 pence each lawful money aforesaid in full for their respective shares of the said valuation as seven of the children of the Intestate. That he pay unto Thomas Wilson and Agnes his wife in right of the said Agnes, the sum of 41 pounds, 3 shillings and 2 pence 1/2 penny in one year from this day and after the death of the said widow the further sum of 20 pounds, 11 shillings, and 7 pence lawful money aforesaid in full for the share of the said Thomas Wilson and Agnes his wife in right of the said Agnes of the said evaluation as one of the daughters of the said intestate. Which said several sums of money are the full amount of the said Valuation. The said widow and children of the said intestate having received their respective shares of the rent of the said Plantation from the time of the appraisment until this day.

And it is further ordered and decreed by the court that upon the said David Scott his making these several payments aforesaid or giving good security for the same, that thereupon the said David Scott, his Heirs and Assigns do hold the said Plantation and tract of land and premises with appurtenances for the same Estate in as full and implied manner as the said John Scott his father in his lifetime held and enjoyed, the same exonerated and discharged from the further claims of the said widow and children of the Intestate, and all persons claiming or to claim the same or any part thereof by them or any or either of them."

Just five days later on 9 February, 1789, David Scott sold John Scott's land to a man named Thomas Law. He received only 604 Pounds, 10 Shillings in the land transaction, though he may have sold livestock and other assets before the land was sold and thereby came out at about 625 pounds, what the court had determined the value to be. David presumably made the initial disbursements of the monies in accordance with the direction of the court, though there is no record of the disbursements.

These documents, taken together, seem to imply that the settlement of John Scott's estate was not a friendly family affair. That David was the oldest son and not appointed Administrator of the estate, that David made petition for partition of the property with a view of not splitting it up instead of the Administrators making the petition, and that David handled the sale of the property and was charged with disposition of the proceeds as Eldest Son and not the Administrators, all seem to add up to a less than amicable process. While this apparent family fracturing is purely conjecture, it is clear that after the sale of the "Rosenhill Plantation", the family members pretty much went their separate ways.

David Scott, almost immediately after the sale of the home farm, left York County and went to Huntingdon County, which lies to the north and slightly west of Adams and York County. It appears from later evidence that his sister Agnes and perhaps brother Joseph went with him, or perhaps joined him there later. Agnes' husband Thomas Wilson is later found to be administrator of David Scott's estate when he died in Huntingdon County, and a Joseph Scott, who may have been David's half brother, was married there in 1806. There is no evidence that Martha, David's stepmother, went with David to Huntingdon County.

The second son, John Scott, appears to have stayed in Cumberland Township, York County after his father's death. A John Scott appears there in the 1790 and 1800 Federal Census and this is thought to be the same John Scott. He also appears in the 1799 list of taxpayers in that township. In this record he is noted as having a hotel valued at \$554.00. The location of the hotel is not given but could have been in Gettysburg. There is living in his household a woman, not his wife, who is of the age that she could be Martha Scott, so this could be his step mother.

The third son, Thomas Scott, born in about 1761, appears to have stayed in York County for a time. He appears there in the 1790 Federal Census, but that is the last record of him in this county. Correspondence with other genealogy researchers seem to show that Thomas left York County some time in the 1790's and moved to Mercer County, Kentucky where he married a Sarah Hamilton who may have been the niece of Hance Hamilton. Further correspondence with this branch of the family may verify that this is indeed the family history of Thomas Scott.

The fourth son, James Scott appears to have stayed in York County for quite some time. He appears in the Federal Census for 1790 and 1800, and also in the 1799 tax roles. In this latter record he also owns a hotel valued at \$1,128.00. It is also recorded that he was the owner of a single female slave. Again there is an older woman living in the James Scott household which could have been his mother Martha. The hotel was no doubt in the town of Gettysburg and it is assumed that it was a prominent one since it is recorded in the History of Adams County that on 1 July, 1798, James Scott was appointed the first Post Master of the town of Gettysburg. The Post Office was probably located in James Scott's hotel. His salary as Post Master was \$34.38 per year.

James Scott was no doubt a prominent and influential man in Gettysburg during this period. In 1799, Gettystown, later named Gettysburg, was selected as the seat of the new county of Adams to be split off from York County in 1800. A bond of \$7,000.00 was required to finance the building of the county court house and other county government facilities. Eight men guaranteed the required bond, and one of them was James Scott.

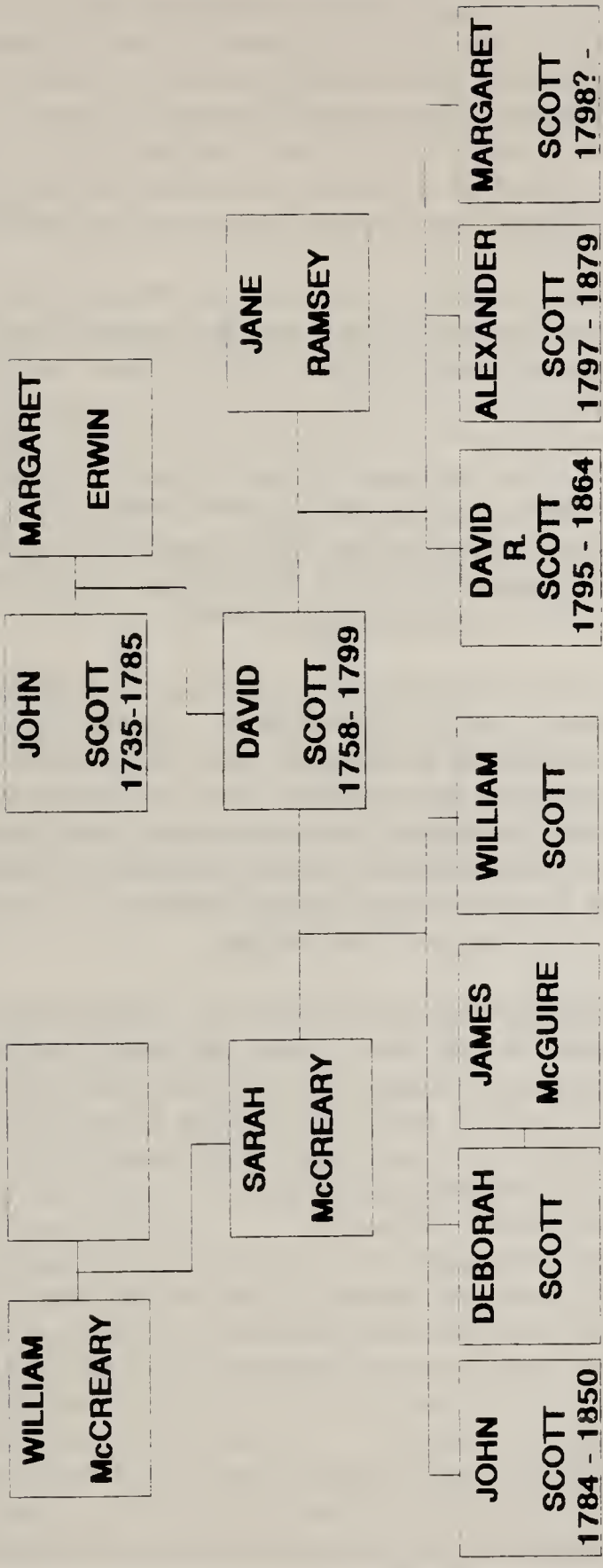
In the Memoirs of Alexander M. Scott cited above, it is noted that James Scott was the grandfather of Col. Thomas Alexander Scott, a man who reached considerable prominence during his lifetime. He was born in Franklin County, Pennsylvania in 1814. This county lies on the western border of Adams county. It is thought that this man's father was also named James Scott, and he had migrated to this area some time earlier. When Thomas was quite young he went to work for the Pennsylvania Railroad Company and by the year 1859 had become a Vice President of that railroad. During the Civil War he became very involved with the movement of men and war material for the Union Forces in Pennsylvania and did so well at it that he was requested to assume the duties of Assistant Secretary of

War in charge of Military Transportation. His leadership in that role was the subject of a commendation letter signed by the Secretary of War, Edwin M. Stanton. One of his feats was to move 20,000 Union troops from the Atlantic Seaboard to Tennessee with all their equipment and supplies, a distance of over 1000 miles, in less than 10 days. After the war he returned to the Pennsylvania Railroad Company, becoming its President in 1874. He also became involved in the expansion of railroads throughout the country. At one time he was head of the Union Pacific Railroad while also functioning as head of the Pennsylvania Railroad Company. His biography ends with the following sentences. "He is emphatically a self made man. His energy, foresight, thoroughness of action and ability to overcome all obstacles is proverbial. Nothing that he undertakes is a failure; from the very moment that he grasps an enterprise, be it regarded by the world a chimera, or, at best, but of doubtful expediency, from that moment it acquires a life, a character and a success." Quite an epitaph for a fourth generation Scotch-Irishman whose great grandfather wore buckskin shirts, breach clouts, and carried a tomahawk and scalping knife in his belt.

We currently have no information on what happened to John Scott's other children. At his death, Alexander, Margaret and William were minors and the latter two became the wards of David Moore. Whether or not they actually went to live with the Moore family or stayed with their mother Martha and perhaps James or John is currently not known. The census records seem to indicate that they did, but that analysis is inconclusive.

Nor is it currently clear as to where Martha went after John's death. It is likely that she also ended up living with one of the children, James being the most likely candidate. It is not known where or when she died and was buried. John's son David of our family line had moved on to Huntingdon County, Pennsylvania. His story is told in the following chapter.

DAVID SCOTT



DAVID SCOTT

David Scott was the first born son of John Scott. While this relationship is clearly established in the legal documents relating to John Scott's estate, David's birth year is not well established. There are three conflicting dates. David is noted as being born in 1740 in Alexander M. Scott's Memoirs, he is thought to have been born around 1760 according to other records of the Daughters of the American Revolution, and his birth year as constructed from tax and other records is thought to be about 1758.

The uncertainty of David's birth year is a significant confusion in the construction of the Scott family genealogy during this period. The following analysis hopefully resolves the conflicts.

The only source of the 1740 birth year is Alexander M. Scott's Memoirs, wherein it is stated: "From my father's bible record. My grandfather, David Scott, born in Pennsylvania, 1740; died in Pennsylvania, 1800." It is believed that the 1740 date is in error for the following reasons. (The 1800 death year will also be proven incorrect later in this chapter.)

First, it is probably not true that the above statement appeared in Alexander Scott's bible. In another part of the Memoirs, Alexander M. records correspondence in which he states to his cousin Capt. John Scott, Jr.: "I had the impression that my grandfather's name was John, but I guess that was my father's grandfather." Had David Scott's birth year been recorded in Alexander's bible as described in the previous paragraph, then Alexander M. would have known that his grandfather's name was David and not John.

The impression that Alexander M.'s grandfather's name was John was shared by Alexander M.'s older brother, David Hamilton Scott. It is stated in his biography that: "...the paternal grandfather, John Scott, was born in Scotland...." It is clear then, that the Alexander Scott branch of the family had similar impressions about who the grandfather was, and these impressions differed from those of the branch of the family represented by Capt. John Scott, Jr., who related convincing evidence to Alexander M. Scott that the grandfather's name was in fact David. Since Alexander Scott was only about 2 years old when David died, and he was raised to manhood by his mother's family quite apart from other members of the Scott family, it is not at all surprising that his sons lost contact with Scott family traditions and relationships.

Therefore, the fact that David was the grandfather and his birth year was 1740 came from the Capt. John Scott Jr. correspondence. The following is also noted in Capt. John Scott's correspondence. "Father's handwriting was rather difficult, and my typewriter in making this copy has made a number of mistakes, many of which I have corrected in pencil." Thus the birth year was transcribed at least twice, with difficult handwriting and semi-skilled typing being factors. It is not hard to believe that 1760 was either misread, miss-typed, or misinterpreted as 1740 in one of these transcriptions.

Second, the 1740 birth year is doubted for the following reason. There are dates relating to David Scott's life which appear in the Alexander M. Scott Memoirs and have been validated by other records. They are the birth of David's first child in 1784, the births of his last three children, and David's death which occurred in late 1799. Had David been born in 1740, he would have fathered his first child at the age of 44, and his last at the age of 58, just prior to his death. It is possible that these ages are correct, but it is far more likely that these events would occur much earlier in his life. It is more likely that his first child was born when he was about 24 and his last when he was about 38, and that he died as a relatively young man with a relatively young wife.

Lastly, in 1924, one of Alexander M. Scott's grand daughters, Matilda (Daugherty) Linn, of Indianapolis, Indiana applied to the DAR for admission based on the Revolutionary War service of David Scott. Her application was approved and returned with corrections which place David Scott's birth year as "about 1760". These corrections are based on a previous (1922) application for DAR membership by a descendent of Alexander M. Scott's sister, Maude Hamilton (Scott) (Mendenhall) Titus, which includes the birth year of David Scott as being in about 1760. This earlier application was made before the publishing of Alexander M. Scott's Memoirs and the 1760 date was therefore derived from some other source.

For these reasons, and the fact that David Scott first appears in the tax records of Cumberland Township in 1779 as a taxable adult of the age of at least 21, it is believed that David Scott's birth year was about one year after his parents marriage in July of 1755 or, if his sister Agnes was the oldest child, then in the year of 1758. The later date is selected since it more closely agrees with the DAR assertion.

There is little doubt that David was born on the "Rosenhill Plantation" near Gettysburg, since this is the only known place his father John Scott had lived prior to his birth. His mother was named Margaret Erwin who was the daughter John Erwin as discussed in the previous chapter. John Scott and Margaret Erwin therefore were both American born, and as previously noted, were married on July 7, 1755, by the Reverend Thomas Barton. John Scott's marriage and David's birth took place during the very difficult times of the French and Indian War on the Frontier.

There are no records which shed any light on David's youth growing up on his fathers "Plantation". However, the Revolutionary War started in 1776 when David was nearly of prime age for military service. Indeed, Alexander M. Scott's Memoirs state that David Scott, John Scott's oldest son, "rose from Private to the rank of Captain" and "fought under George Washington for seven years" during the Revolution. This seems to be an exuberant embellishment on David Scott's actual service. The currently available records indicate that David Scott was a commissioned officer in the York County Militia for a period of seven years during and after the Revolution. According to the Pennsylvania Archives, in 1779 David Scott was commissioned an Ensign in the 2nd Company of the 4th Battalion, York County Militia. There is no record that he ever served as an enlisted man. In 1783 he was a Lieutenant in the 7th Company of the 4th Battalion of the York County Militia, and in 1786 he is Captain of the same company. These records indicate a service of seven years as stated in the Memoirs.

In the "History of York County" the service of each company organized as units sent for service under Washington in the Continental Army and those organized for local defense against the Indians or any other purpose is detailed. The 4th Battalion does not appear ever to have been called for service under Washington, and the National Archives records confirm this. David Scott was therefore an officer in a company of "Minutemen", serving in a local defense role, standing ready to serve if and when called to duty with the active army, as many companies organized in this area were. The records show that from the very beginning, York County men, almost all Scotch-Irish, were involved in significant numbers in every major action of the Revolutionary War. It does not however, appear that David Scott performed any active duty service.

David Scott first appears in the tax records in 1779, and appears to be living with his father on his father's farm. He also appears in the tax records for 1780, 1781, and 1782. There is no evidence that he is married or has land of his own in any of these records.

It is likely that David married in late 1783 or early 1784. The Alexander M. Scott Memoirs state that David Scott had three children by his first wife, Sarah McCreary. They were John Scott, Deborah Scott, and William Scott. Only the birth year of John is given, December 25, 1784. It is therefore assumed that David and Sarah's marriage was about one year prior to that, or in late 1783 or early 1784. So far no corroborating records of David's marriage has been found. Recall also from Alexander M. Scott's Memoirs that Sarah McCreary was the daughter of William McCreary who served with Washington during Braddock's defeat during the French and Indian War. The Scotch-Irish child naming convention confirms this, the second of David and Sarah's sons, being named after the maternal grandfather, was named William.

It is clear that David and his family lived on the family "Plantation" until after his father had died and the farm had been sold as a result of the settlement of the estate as described in the previous chapter. Shortly after that, though it is not clear exactly when, David and his family moved to Huntingdon County, Pennsylvania. This county lies to the northwest of York County. The distance between Gettysburg and the area of Huntingdon County in which David settled was about 100 miles.

In Alexander M. Scott's Memoirs, Capt. John Scott Jr. relates that his grandfather John Scott went to Huntingdon County with his father (David) in about 1790 after the Rosenhill Plantation had been sold. As noted in the previous chapter, the sale had taken place in February of 1789, so that was the most likely year of David's move to

Huntingdon County. This county had been formed in 1787 and so was not on the edge of the frontier which seemed to attract many Scotch-Irish. It is not known what led David Scott to Huntingdon County, but it is clear that he was there by 1790 since he and his family appear there in the First Federal Census taken in that year.

It is not known how many of David Scott's siblings went to Huntingdon County with him. His sister Agnes and her husband Thomas Wilson appear there in the 1790 Federal Census and in later records, so they probably went to Huntingdon County about the same time that David did. It does not appear that any of his other siblings, or half siblings, followed David there, at least none appear in any records of the area so far examined.

David Scott appears in the First Census of the United States in the year 1790 in Barree Township of Huntingdon County. He is recorded as having two young sons and two females living in his household, these no doubt being his three above mentioned children and his wife Sarah.

Alexander M. Scott's Memoirs state that: "He (David) lived in Barree Township, Huntingdon County, and laid out there a town called Bellisle, a plan of which is recorded in 1791 in Huntingdon County and also certain conveyances of lots in the town. This scheme was evidently not successful, and according to our information he removed from Huntingdon County to Butler County, PA. about 1800.....Our information is that David died in Butler County about 1800."

The land records of Huntingdon County clearly show that David Scott did buy land, subdivide it, and sell lots in a town he platted and named Bellisle. It is not clear when he bought the land, the land records seem to become definitive only after about 1794. By that time it appears that David owned a considerable amount. How did he come by it?

It is clear from the records relating to the estate of his father, that David Scott left York County with substantial cash. In addition to that, he was obligated to make yearly payments to his stepmother Martha as long as she lived, and in addition, at the time of her death, payments of some 41 pounds to each of his siblings, or about 320 pounds. He apparently decided to invest the money in land, and from the records, was doing quite well in the buying and selling of it. The only land purchases David made which we can locate was in 1794, when he bought 200 acres of land for 290 pounds. It is clear from the fact that he platted the town of Bellisle in 1791 and from his record of sales that he had considerably more than that prior to 1794.

In 1794 David sold 317 acres for over 792 pounds. In 1795 he sold another 152 acres for 114 pounds. In 1797 and 1798 he sold six lots in the town of Bellisle for 36 pounds and in 1798 he sold 66 more acres for 365 pounds. These numbers add to well over 500 acres sold before he died in 1799. Incidentally, his wife Jane is mentioned in almost all of these land transactions. It turns out that David owned still more land as we shall see later.

Alexander M. Scott records in his Memoirs that David Scott married for a second time in 1793 to a Jane Ramsey. Sarah McCreary had therefore died some time after the 1790 Census. It is not known exactly when she died or of what cause.

David Scott and his second wife Jane Ramsey became the parents of their first son, David R. Scott, on 20 December, 1795. This birth date is well documented in multiple sources, as is the birth date of his brother, Alexander Scott, who was born 5 February, 1797. A third child, a daughter they named Margaret, was born within a year or two of that, though no specific date is known. All of these children were born in Huntingdon County.

There are conflicting theories as to who Jane Ramsey's parents were. It would appear that Alexander Ramsey would be the name of Jane's father, since the Scotch-Irish naming conventions, when applied to David Scott's first and second marriages and families, would result in naming of David Scott's fourth son after Jane's father. Unfortunately there appears in Huntingdon County records of this time at least four Alexander Ramseys. Two of these seem to have migrated to the area in Kentucky where we later find the Scott family, but there is no creditable evidence that Jane is associated with either of these Alexander Ramsey families in Kentucky.

The other theory is based on the biography of a man named S. R. Hamilton who was a neighbor and also a cousin of David R. Scott in Indiana after about 1835. The biography states that S. R. Hamilton's mother was named Hannah Ramsey, daughter of James Ramsey and Mary Cochran. Hannah Ramsey and James Hamilton were married in Huntingdon Co. Pennsylvania in 1793 and then moved to Kentucky. Jane Ramsey could have been Hannah Ramsey's sister and could have migrated to Kentucky with James and Hannah (Ramsey) Hamilton where their offspring are known to have attended the same church, and who later migrated to Indiana together in 1826. No proof of either theory has yet come to hand, and Jane Ramsey's parents are therefore currently unknown.

Alexander M. Scott's Memoirs say that it was thought that David left Huntingdon County around 1800 and went to Butler County where he died. He further states that a search had been made in Butler County for evidence of David's death but no evidence could be found. It is clear from the evidence that Alexander M. Scott and his cousin Capt. John Scott Jr. had not examined the Orphans Court records of Huntingdon County, and missed the fact that David had died there. They may have been confused by the records of another David Scott who also lived in that county. David Scott actually died in the fall of 1799. We find first the following record in Will Book #1 of Huntingdon County.

"Renunciation. Jane Scott, widow of David Scott. To all people to whom these presents shall come, I Jane Scott, widow and relict of David Scott, late of Barree Township in the County of Huntingdon deceased, I send greetings. Know ye that for divers good reasons I have renounced and by these presents I do renounce my right of the Administration of the estate of the said David Scott deceased and desire that Letters of Administration of the said estate be given to my trusty friends Alexander Ramsey and Thomas Wilson. Witness my hand and seal now 7 Oct, 1799."

Jane Scott (Seal)

There then followed the following entry on the same page.

"Memorandum. Letters of Administration on and in common form were granted to Alexander Ramsey and Thomas Wilson of the estate of David Scott. Inventory to be exhibited on the 18 December next and their administration on 18 November, 1800 or when legally required. Given under the seal of the court this 18 November, 1799."

It is clear from these records that David Scott died in late summer or early fall of 1799, and his death came at an early point in his second marriage. It is not known exactly when his last daughter Margaret was born, but his last son Alexander was born in February of 1797, so Margaret could not have been born before early 1798 and therefore was not older than one at the time of her father's death. David R. had not reached his fourth birthday and Alexander was not yet three. In addition there were half brothers John and William and half sister Deborah in the household, none yet more than fourteen years of age.

The Administrators of David's estate, Alexander Ramsey and Thomas Wilson, were more than "Trusty Friends". Thomas Wilson was David Scott's brother-in-law, the husband of his sister Agnes. It is almost certain that Alexander Ramsey was one of Jane (Ramsey) Scott's blood relatives, but it is not clear how Jane and this Alexander were related. He could have been either her father, brother, or cousin, the best guess being that he was her brother.

The May, 1800 term of the Court of Common Pleas contains the following record:

"The Petition of Alexander Ramsey is read as follows. To the Judge of the Court of Common Pleas at an Orphans Court held for the County of Huntingdon on the 18th of May, 1800. The Petition of Alexander Ramsey, one of the Administrators of the estate of David Scott, late of the county aforesaid, Yeoman deceased respectfully herewith. That the said deceased died some time since leaving several children among whom is William, son of the said intestate, now about twelve years of age who is entitled to a share of the estate of the said David Scott and is without any person legally authorized to take charge of his education, person, and property. Your Petitioner therefore prays that the court will be pleased to appoint a guardian or guardians to take charge of same."

Whereupon it is considered by the court and ordered that the said Alexander Ramsey be and he is hereby appointed guardian of the said minor."

It is unfortunate that no relationships were noted in this document. During the same session of the court, the following plea was entered.

"The Petition of John Scott was read to wit:

To the honorable Judges of the Orphans Court in and for the County of Huntingdon. The Petition of John Scott, the oldest son of David Scott, late of Huntingdon County now deceased humbly herewith, that your Petitioner's father, the said David Scott died intestate without making any provisions for the guardianship of his infant children. That your Petitioner is above the age of fourteen years, to wit, between the years of fifteen and sixteen, and by the laws and customs of the Commonwealth is entitled to choose a guardian over his person and property. Your Petitioner therefore prays your honorable court to allow him to make choice of a guardian as aforesaid.

Whereupon ordered that he be admitted to appoint and choose a guardian and the said John Scott appearing and makes choice of Michael Murray, it is ordered that the said Michael Murray be appointed guardian."

The choice of guardian by the young John Scott is interesting. Why did he not select Alexander Ramsey, guardian of his younger full brother? It also implies that not all of the six children of David Scott are living in the same household with Jane. Indeed, the 1800 census reveals that they are not.

In the 1800 Federal Census for Huntingdon County, Jane Scott is found in the town of Tyrone, a small community now a part of Blair County, which was situated a short distance from Barree Township, Huntingdon County. In her household are two male children under the age of ten, probably David R. and Alexander, no adult males, one female child under the age of ten, probably Margaret, a female between the age of 26 and 45, no doubt Jane, and an older woman over the age of 45. Thus none of Jane's step children are living with her. It is presumed, though by no means certain, that the older woman was Jane's mother, but she could have been some sort of domestic help. Jane's step sons William and John are probably living with their guardians. It is not known where Deborah, her step daughter, is living at this time. She is probably between the ages of 13 and 15 in 1800.

It is not known if David left a significant estate, but he probably did. It also appears that settlement of his affairs was somewhat complicated. The following petition appears in the Orphans Court records of the May term of 1802.

"The Petition of Alexander Ramsey and Thomas Wilson, Administrators of all and singular the goods and chattel rights and credits which were of David Scott late of the County aforesaid, Yeoman deceased.

Respectfully herewith, that the said David Scott lately died intestate leaving a widow and five small children and seized of 25 acres of land more or less situate in Warrior Mark Township adjoining the Bald Eagle Ridge and lands now in possession of Benjamin Loughlear (sp?) and others, being a part of a larger tract of land sold by Richard Neave and Son to the said David Scott. That the personal estate of the said deceased is not sufficient to pay and discharge the just debts of the deceased which have come to the knowledge of your Petitioners. That your Petitioners for want of assets to discharge the demands of the creditors against the estate of the said deceased are not as yet able to make up an account of their administration of the said estate, so far as they have administered the same. They therefore pray the court to make an order directing and empowering them to sell and dispose of the aforesaid tract of land.

Whereupon it is considered by the court and ordered to sell on the premises on the third Tuesday in June, three weeks notice in the Huntingdon paper and four advertisements in the neighborhood three weeks before the sale. Purchase money payable in six months."

It is clear from the above that David's estate was still under the control of the Administrators in 1802, and in fact this administration lasted until at least 1816 when court records show that Thomas Wilson was still selling David Scott's lots in Bellisle with the permission of the court. It is likely that the reason the estate could not be liquidated was the obligations that David had incurred in the settlement of his father's estate in 1789 wherein he was obligated to a considerable degree in making yearly payments to his mother-in-law Martha, and a large payoff

to his siblings after her death. These obligations could have been very difficult to deal with if Martha was still alive when David died. It was likely for this reason that Thomas Wilson was given Administrator status of the estate to relieve Jane of those obligations.

The above record says that David left five minor children. There were of course, six at his death. Oldest son John was now 18 and no longer a minor which accounts for this discrepancy.

David's son John apparently went his own way after his father's death, and probably went to live with his guardian, Michael Murray. Alexander M. Scott's Memoirs tell us that John stayed in the Huntingdon area until he died on 22 September, 1850. While his family history has not been researched in detail, it is noted that there is a John Scott Esq. marrying a Nancy Irvine in the same records of Reverend John Johnston who also presided at the marriage of his sister Deborah. John's marriage took place in the town of Huntingdon on 30 October, 1821. Alexander M. Scott's Memoirs also state that John Scott became a member of the Pennsylvania legislature, serving during the period 1828-1830.

David's son John also had a son whom he named John, who reached even greater prominence than his father. This grandson was born in Huntingdon County in 1824 and apparently was given an excellent education. He became a lawyer, Deputy Attorney General of Huntingdon County and also was on the Board of Revenue Commissioners. He became involved in politics as the Civil War approached and shifted from the Democratic side to support of Lincoln on the Republican side. In 1861 he became a member of the Pennsylvania State Legislature and served on the Judiciary Committee in that body. In 1869 he was elected to the United States Senate and served a six year term. According to his son, Capt. John Scott Jr., in a letter quoted in Alexander M. Scott's Memoirs, Senator John Scott later became the General Solicitor for the Pennsylvania Railroad, working closely with Thomas A. Scott, the President of that Company. He remarks that his father and Thomas A. Scott, though close professional collaborators, never knew that they were second cousins. Senator John Scott died in 1896.

Alexander M. Scott added Senator John Scott's wife's obituary to his Memoirs. He failed to note where it was printed or the date, but it was after 1896 and probably in Philadelphia.

"FUNERAL OF MRS. JOHN SCOTT,-- SERVICES FOR THE WIDOW OF FORMER SENATOR WERE HELD THIS AFTERNOON.

The funeral services of Mrs. John Scott, widow of former United States Senator John Scott, were held at her residence, 240 S. 39th St. at 3 o'clock this afternoon. The services were conducted by Rev. J. A. MacCallum. Mrs. Scott, who was a daughter of George Eyster, was born in Chambersburg, PA. in 1827. After her marriage in 1849 she lived in Huntingdon, Pennsylvania and had been a resident of Philadelphia since 1878. Her husband, John Scott, was United States Senator from Pennsylvania from 1869 to 1875, and was later general solicitor and general counsel for the Pennsylvania Railroad. Mrs. Scott was the mother of ten children, of whom the following survive her: George E. Scott, John Scott Jr., J. I. Scott....."

Alexander M. Scott's Memoirs state that Deborah Scott, David Scott and Sarah McCreary's daughter, married a man named James McGuire. A record of that marriage exists as part of the records of Reverend John Johnston of the Presbyterian Church in the town of Huntingdon. It is recorded therein, that Deborah Scott married James McGuire on 11 August, 1808. Therefore, though no record of Deborah appears in the 1800 census, she was living in the area at the time and continued to do so until she married. No further record of this family has come to our attention.

David Scott and Sarah McCreary's other son William is said in Alexander M. Scott's Memoirs to have died by accident. It is not known when this accident might have occurred, but he was apparently still alive when he was mentioned indirectly in the above quoted 1802 Orphans Court record.

It appears that Jane (Ramsey) Scott migrated to Kentucky in about 1805, though the date is not precise. It is believed that she and her children migrated there in association with other members of her family, but as noted above, the family of which she was a part has not been positively determined. It is also possible that she went there as the wife of a second unknown husband whom she married in Huntingdon County, Pennsylvania, though we have no record that she married a second time.

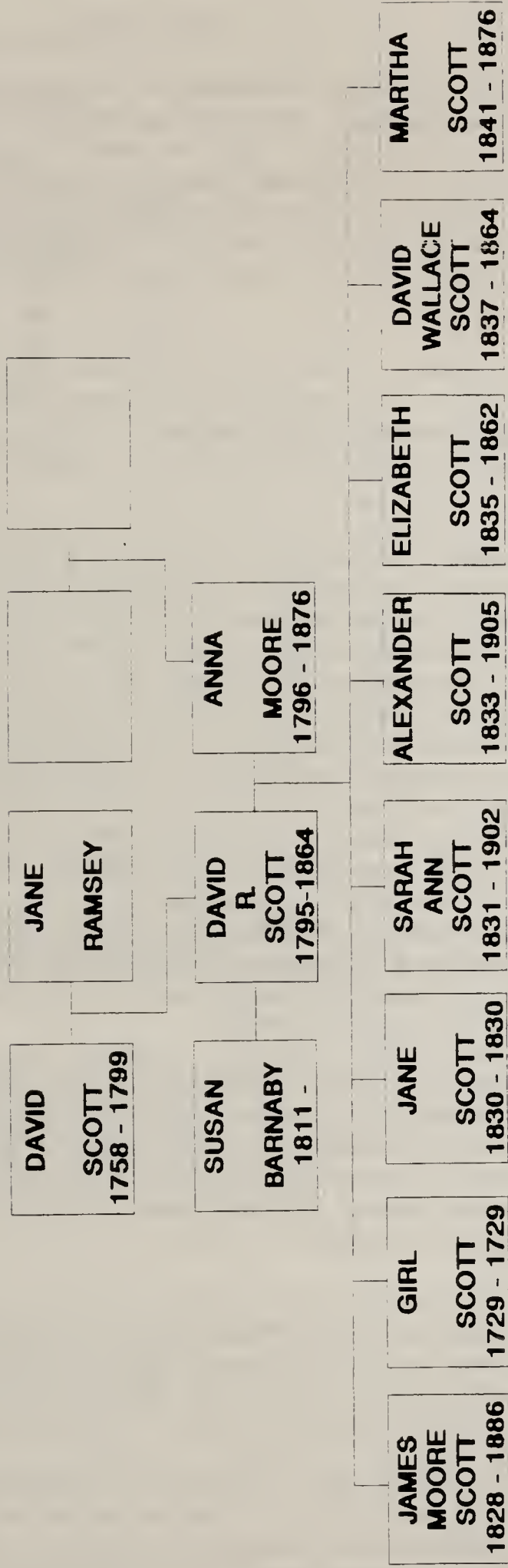
No record for Jane Scott can be located in Huntingdon County, Pennsylvania in the year 1810, nor can she and her three children be found in any Kentucky 1810 Census. The earliest positive evidence regarding Jane and her family in Kentucky appears in an 1818 court record which identifies David Scott and Alexander Scott together in Fleming County, Kentucky in the same document. This document is quoted in the next chapter of this book.

Until further proof is at hand, it will be assumed that Jane Scott and her three children by David Scott went to Kentucky in about 1805 as part of her extended family. David R. and Alexander Scott grew to manhood there, and began their own life story as told in the following chapter.

It is believed that Jane Scott appears in the 1820 Federal Census in the Alexander Scott household in Fleming County, Kentucky, so she lived until at least that time. She does not appear in the records of the New Hope Presbyterian Church in Fleming County which begin in 1824, though Alexander Scott and his wife Martha do. Jane may therefore have died between 1820 and 1824. No other record has been located which might indicate when Jane (Ramsey) Scott died.

Alexander M. Scott states in his Memoirs that one of his grandmothers is buried "..in the old graveyard on the hills a mile north of Portland Mills (Parke Co., Indiana), where the old Ceceder Presbyterian Church stood for many years." It is not yet known if this grandmother is Jane (Ramsey) Scott or his maternal grandmother, the mother of Martha (Wills) Scott, but she is probably the latter.

DAVID R. SCOTT



DAVID R. SCOTT

David R. Scott was born in Barree Township of Huntingdon County, Pennsylvania on 20 December, 1795. His father was David Scott and his mother was Jane Ramsey, they having been married in 1793. He was the third son of David Scott and therefore named after the father, David. There is no record of what the middle initial "R" stood for, though David R. used it all through his life. His middle name was very probably Ramsey, his mother's maiden name, a common practice in the Scotch-Irish naming convention. There were two half brothers, John and William, and a half sister, Deborah living at the time of David R.'s birth. Two additional children were born to David and Jane. Alexander was born on 25 February, 1797, and Margaret, whose birth date is not precisely known, but was very probably in 1798.

Thanks to Alexander M. Scott's memoirs, a great deal is known about David R. Scott's brother, Alexander and his descendants. Their story will be told in the later half of this chapter. Little is currently known of David R.'s sister, Margaret Scott. In Alexander M. Scott's memoirs it is stated that she married a man named Campbell, but no information about when or where she was married was given. It is added however, that Mr. Campbell had a brother named David.

As told in the previous chapter, David R. Scott's father David Scott died in 1799 leaving his wife Jane with three children and three step children. In the 1800 census of Huntingdon County, we find Jane Scott listed in the town of Tyrone with her three children and an older woman who could have been her mother. We have not been able to locate her in the 1810 census for that county, so some time after 1800 and before 1810, Jane (Ramsey) Scott left Huntingdon County with her three children (but apparently not with any of her step-children) and migrated to Fleming County, Kentucky. She no doubt made that move in the company of some member of her Ramsey family, or as the wife of a second husband. However, there is no hint that she remarried, nor is there any evidence as to who in the Ramsey family she might have gone to Kentucky with. To the present time, no record of Jane Scott and her children can be found which places them positively after the 1800 census in Huntingdon County, Pennsylvania and before 1818 in Fleming County, Kentucky. In Fleming County we find in the April 1818 Probate Records the first known recorded reference to David R. and Alexander Scott after 1800. It reads as follows.

"On motion of David Jamison, the court orders that Alexander Scott, David Scott, Alexander Ramsey, and Charlie McCracken or any three of them being first sworn, view and mark out the nearest and best way to town the road leading from Charlie Neelis to the mouth of Fox near the said David Jamison Plantation. Report the conveniences and inconveniences attending the same to the court."

That an Alexander Ramsey lived a very short distance from the Scott family at this time would seem to indicate that this is the same Alexander Ramsey who had been the administrator of David Scott's estate in Huntingdon County, Pennsylvania and was possibly the brother of Jane, guardian of her step son William, and logically the Ramsey family member with whom Jane would have come to Kentucky with. We have not been able to prove that, indeed most indications we have are that he was not. Continued research may eventually lead us to Jane Ramsey family and the circumstances of her migration to Kentucky.

The mental picture drawn from the above entry regarding building of a road is one of a relatively remote and undeveloped area of northeastern Kentucky beginning to take shape, with the local county government attempting to improve the road system by directing citizens to participate in its planning and development. Presumably, since the road would benefit the Scott, Ramsey, and McCracken families, and perhaps pass over portions of their land, they should recommend how and where it should be built. There are also recorded tax records relating to that land.

The land on which the Scott family is living is listed in the Fleming County Property Tax Records beginning in the year 1819. The entry for 1819 levies the tax for the previous year, so the Scott family had to have been living on this land in the year 1818, and since the Probate Record noted above is dated in April of 1818, they could have arrived the year before. The tax records are at best confusing, they are not completely legible, they are hard to interpret, and their accuracy is certainly open to question as to the identity of the land in question. The tax records are summarized in the table below.

FORMAT = ACREAGE, WATER COURSE, SURVEY, WHITES OVER 21.

YEAR	ALEXANDER SCOTT	DAVID R. SCOTT
1819	98.5 A, FOX, CRAIG, 2	NOT LISTED
1820	NOT LISTED	98.5 A, LOCUST, PERKINS, 2
1821	NONE , , , 1	98.5 A, FOX, PERKINS, 1
1822	RECORD MISSING	RECORD MISSING
1823	NONE , , , ?	98.5 A, FOX, PERKINS, ?
1824	NONE , , , 2	98.5 A, FOX, CRAIG , 1
1825	NONE , , , 1	98.5 A, FOX, CRAIG , 1
1826	NONE , , , 1	NOT LISTED

There appear to be two or three parcels of land in the record. They would all be 98.5 acres in size, two of them on Fox water course, one on Locust water course, with the two on Fox water course being one on the Craig Survey and the other on Perkins. This interpretation is very much doubted. The parcel size is unusual, 98.5 acres, and is common for all entries. The Fox and Locust water courses are next to each other, both emptying into the Licking River. The Survey could also be confused. In addition, the accuracy of the property description was probably not of vital concern to the tax collector, since these entries did not constitute a part of a deed or other title to the land. It is therefore surmised that there was only one piece of land, and that land was 98.5 acres on Fox Water Course in the Craig Survey. Indeed, on 5 March, 1822 David R. Scott bought from John Craig and gained title to land so described for the sum of \$74.00. This was likely the final payment, and not the full price paid for the land. Title transfer probably did not take place until the land was fully paid for, and the land was occupied by the Scotts at least four years before the purchase was recorded. At the recorded \$74.00 price, the land would have sold for about \$.75 per acre. The tax records indicate the land was valued at \$5.00 per acre or nearly \$500.00.

The tax record does show clearly that both David R. and Alexander were being taxed separately, at least after 1820. This would be logical if David R. was the landowner and Alexander was engaged in a business other than farming on that land. Indeed he is noted as being a wheelwright in the David H. Scott biographies and could well have been making part of his living with that trade along with farming the land with his brother. Another fact supports this contention, Alexander married Martha Wills in 1821, thereby establishing his own household, and hence liable for tax.

There is another interesting entry on these tax records. Beginning in 1820 a column appears with the heading "Company in Which Registered" followed by another column with the heading "Regiment". The Company entry for the Scott brothers is "Neelis" and the Regiment is "58". The above referenced court order on the road development refers to a Charlie Neelis, and this same man purchased David R.'s land when he left Kentucky in 1825. Charlie Neelis was probably a neighbor who was assigned as a Company Commander in the 58th Regiment of some form of Kentucky militia. In 1821 a man named Atchinson headed this Company and in 1822 it changed again to a man whose name is unreadable in the entry. The 1823 record is missing but in 1824 and 1825, the Company Commander is named Hiten. The 1826 entry is unreadable.

It is not known when or why this military structure was formed, perhaps in response to the Indian Wars or the War of 1812. However, the War of 1812 had ended in January of 1815 and America was entering a long period of international peace. There were still problems relating to the Indians, but the Battle of Tippecanoe solved most of that problem in this area during the War of 1812. Further research may answer these questions and also whether or not the Scott brothers served in the War of 1812. It is entirely possible that they did, David R. would have been 19 and Alexander 17 at the end of that conflict and war has always been a young man's game.

The 1820 Federal Census is not definitive in listing the members of Jane Scott's family. There is a single entry for "Alex" Scott in Fleming County. In the household are three males, one under the age of 10, and two between the ages of 16 and 26. There are three females, one under the age of 10, one between the ages of 16 and 26 and one over 45 years of age. It is not clear who all of these individuals are. The two young children cannot be the offspring of either David R. or Alexander since neither are yet married. If it is presumed they are the children

of the young woman in the household, then who is she and who is the father? Another interesting question is why the household should be listed under Alexander, when David R. is the oldest son, and therefore presumably, head of the household.

For the time being the following assumption will be made. It is noted that Jane Scott and her children had previously been living with her extended family for several years until her own sons came of age. Because of this, these families are very close and it can safely be assumed that there are two or more households in which there can be a mix of these two families, the Scotts and the extended family of Jane. If this assumption is correct, then it is reasonable to assume that Alexander Scott is listed in the 1820 census with his mother Jane, that David R. is at the time of the census, living or working in another household, and the other young man and woman with a son and a daughter can be either Jane's daughter Margaret and her husband named Campbell and their children, or this family is another young couple of the other unknown extended family. It is noted that in the above discussed tax records, David R. is not taxed in 1820, so he was likely not living in the same household with Alexander at that time. The question is not critical however, it is clear from all the other evidence that Alexander and David R. Scott are in Fleming Co. at this time and the 1820 census, regardless of its precise interpretation, supports that fact.

In this census there are listed in adjacent pages to the one containing the Alex Scott entry, entries for a Barnaby family and several Wills families, these being the maiden names of David R. and Alexander's future wives. Alexander married Martha Wills in 1821 and their story forms the later part of this chapter.

David R. married Susan Barnaby on 3 October, 1825. A Barnaby family lived close by, and the 1820 census had a family headed by a George Barnaby with three females of the proper age for one of them to have been Susan. George Barnaby was therefore likely to have been Susan's father. At the time of the marriage she was about 25 years old, since her birth-date is recorded in family records as being in 1800. David was 30. It is possible that this marriage was not David's first, though there is no evidence that it was not. David's marriage to Susan is recorded in the LDS IGI as having taken place in Bath County which borders Fleming County on the southwest. While this marriage record has not yet been obtained, the information may be correct. The exact location of the Scott property has not yet been determined, but if was on Foxes Creek near where it joins the Licking River, then it would have been near the southwest border of Fleming County with Bath County being the neighboring county. Why the marriage of David R. and Susan should be recorded in Bath County when they both lived in Fleming County cannot be explained. In any case, less than three weeks after they were married, they jointly sold the land David R. had purchased in 1822. The sale took place on 20 October, 1825. David's wife is listed on the sale recording as Susannah. The sale price was \$300.00 and the purchaser was Charles Neelis.

It is interesting to note the land description used in Kentucky at that time. The following is from the deed. "....parcel of land situated in the County of Fleming on the waters of Foxes Creek, part of John Craig's Patent on his third survey of 6,666 2/3 acres upon his entry of 20,000 acres and bounded as follows. Beginning at three white oaks the southeast corner to Lewis Craig's 5,140 acres, thence with Mosby's Line south one degree east 186 poles to a red oak, white oak and a dogwood, thence north 88 degrees 49 seconds west 96 poles to an ash, red oak and white oak, thence north 81 poles to four white oaks...." The system of Ranges, Townships, Sections etc. in general use in later times was apparently not in use in Kentucky in the 1820's. This sort of thing must have caused considerable difficulty in keeping track of who owned what, and perhaps still does today. Indeed, it is impossible to locate the property described in this record on a current Fleming County map.

After the sale of their Kentucky property, David R. Scott and his new wife Susan migrated to Indiana. The Indiana Territory, created in 1800 by Congress and containing the land now comprising the states of Indiana, Illinois and Wisconsin plus parts of Michigan and Minnesota, was not at that time safe for settlement because of hostile Indians. William Henry Harrison, later President of the United States, defeated the Indians led by the famous Indian Chief Tecumseh at the Battle of Tippecanoe in 1811. Further victories over the Indians and British in Canada to the north during the War of 1812 opened up the eastern portion of the Territory for settlement. Indiana became the 19th state of the Union on December 11, 1816 with a total population of about 64,000. The west central part of the present state of Indiana was added by the U. S. Government purchase of the land from the Indians. It was then deeded to the state of Indiana in 1818. It was in this new area, specifically Putnam County, that David R. Scott settled. Putnam County lies about half way between present day Terra Haute and Indianapolis.

On 5 April, 1826, David R. Scott purchased from the United States government 80 acres of land in Putnam County, Indiana. This land is identified as the West Half of the Northwest Quarter of Section 35 of Township 16, Range 5 West. On this same date, a man named John Guilliams purchased the East Half of that same quarter section. These land purchases were from the U. S. Government and were called Patents. Patents are recorded in the Bureau of Land Management records in Silver Springs, Maryland. The above data is derived from an index of these Patents found in the Putnam County Courthouse. David R. Scott's original Patent has been checked with the U. S. Government agency to verify the record, and a copy of it has been obtained. The document states that David R. Scott was of Putnam County when he purchased the land. It is therefore assumed that he and Susan went to Indiana in the fall or winter of 1825 to seek out the land he wanted and which he subsequently purchased in the Spring of 1826. The original Patent delivered by the Government to David R. Scott is in the possession of George Robert Scott family of Casper, Wyoming. It is mounted and framed for safe keeping.

The next documented record of David R. Scott is back in Kentucky where on 5 September, 1827, David R. is recorded as having married Anna Moore. It would appear that his first wife Susan died, probably in Indiana, probably in the year 1826. There could have been many causes, the most likely being childbirth. If that was the case, then her death would have been during the summer or fall of 1826, about nine months to a year after her marriage. David R. would have found himself living alone on the frontier where there was little prospect of finding a new wife. He probably returned to Kentucky with the intent of correcting that situation. He found a new bride in Anna Moore in the fall of 1827 and they returned to Indiana to live and raise their family, their first son, James Moore Scott being born a little more than nine months later. They no doubt began their life together in a frontier cabin in the forested wilderness of western Indiana.

The place of marriage of David R. Scott and Anna Moore, Mason County, Kentucky, is thought to be accurate. The marriage record, a copy of which we have, is for David Scott and Ann Moore. Since there is no middle initial for David Scott, it may not be David R. David R. Scott's wife is usually recorded as Anna, though in some cases Ann is used. However, the first born son of David R. and Anna is named James Moore Scott, and a grandson, George Findley, contends that his grandmother's maiden name was Moore. There was a Moore family living in close proximity to David R. Scott's Kentucky home, in fact a place name of Moore's Crossing lies on the Bath County side of the Licking River near the mouth of Fox Creek, and Anna may have come from the family that gave its name to that site. Finally, all land transaction records after this date identify David R. Scott's wife as Anna. It is very likely then, that this is the correct marriage record for David R. and Anna.

On 20 January, 1829, David R. Scott purchased from John Guilliams an additional 20 acres of the land that adjoined David R. Scott's. This twenty acres was the western quarter of John Guilliams original purchase and the price paid was \$25.00.

This transaction took place shortly after the birth of the oldest of David R. and Anna's known children, James Moore Scott. James was born on 22 June, 1828, this date being taken from various records including his gravestone in the Oakview Cemetery in Albia, Iowa. It is also recorded in census records that he was born in Putnam County and his birth no doubt occurred on this property. David R. and Anna lived on this land for several years and expanded their family there.

According to family bible records, there was child born on 11 April, 1830. The name appears to be spelled "Jane". This spelling is probably in error, it was probably "Jane". However, Jane would not be the correct name for the first born daughter, she should have been named after the maternal grandmother, not the paternal grandmother according to the Scotch-Irish naming convention. Jane was therefore the second daughter. Could there have been another girl born between James Moore and Jane? There were about 22 months between these births, sufficient time for another birth to have occurred. It is concluded therefore, that there were two girls born to David R. and Anna in 1829 and 1830. Since there is no other record, neither of these two girls appear to have survived infancy.

David R. and Anna's next child, Sara Ann, was born in 1831, her middle name being that of the mother as is called for in the Scotch-Irish naming convention. Alexander followed in 1833, and as second son, would be named after the maternal grandfather, Alexander Moore, though we are not yet sure that was his name.

On 9 February, 1836 David R. and Anna sold their 100 acre parcel of land in Putnam County to a man named Edgecomb Guilliams, and at about that time, they moved a short distance to Parke County, Indiana.

On 7 December of the previous year, 1835, David R. and Anna had purchased 80 acres of land from a John Strahan in Parke County, Indiana. Parke County adjoins Putnam County on the west. They paid \$450.00 for this property. This land is identified as the West Half of the Northwest Quarter of Section 24 in Township 16. Daughter Elizabeth, son David Wallace and daughter Martha were probably born on this land in 1836, 1839 and 1841 respectively. There is perhaps some doubt about where these last three births occurred since all the census records in later years identify their births as being in Putnam County. The sequence of land purchases and sales would seem to indicate otherwise, and such a point would seem minor in responding to a census taker in Iowa in later years. This land in Parke County apparently was home to David R. and his family for some 16 years. No other land transactions are recorded until 15 September, 1851 at which time David R. and Anna sold this property and moved to Monroe County, Iowa. The land had increased in value during the years in which they had held it. His original \$450.00 parcel was sold for \$982.00 to a Mr. Thomas Burnside.

Prior to 1850, the Federal Census recorded only the name of the Head of the Household. All other members of the household were merely counted by sex and age category. Starting in 1850, all members of the household and their relationship to the Head of the Household are identified by name. It is therefore not possible to use census data taken before 1850 to directly identify father, mother and offspring. The 1850 Indiana census records David R. and his above enumerated children in Parke County. In the 1840 census, David R. Scott is found in Parke County, and while the names are not given, the number and category of other family members match perfectly with the 1850 census. For some reason, David R. and his family are not recorded in the 1830 census. It is clear that he lived in Putnam County at that time, but there is no census record that can reasonably be interpreted as identifying him there. It is likely that the David R. Scott family was missed in the 1830 census.

It was with the above named six children that David and Anna left Indiana in 1851 and migrated west, his destination being Monroe County in southeastern Iowa. His nephew, David H. Scott, had migrated to this area the year before in 1850. It is not known why David R. left Indiana, but the period of 1820 to 1850 in Indiana history was not a prosperous one since the only market for agricultural products was to the east and transportation of goods to the east was risky and expensive. Conditions improved when railroads and Midwest cities began to grow, but David and Anna, true to their Scotch-Irish heritage, had sensed a better opportunity for themselves and their children and left Indiana for new land in Iowa.

It should be noted that David R. and Anna made this decision and move at the age of 56 years. Even today, a career change at that age is considered risky. Perhaps in 1851 David and Anna needed no other compelling motive than the blood in their veins. They were Scotch-Irish. That group of immigrants and their offspring are historically noted as being in the first wave of movement to the frontiers all across the country. David and his progeny certainly fit the mold. Out of Pennsylvania to Kentucky, into Indiana shortly after it was opened up, and then on to Iowa, also as it was opening up. His son Alexander moved several times, ending up in western Iowa, his grandsons moving on to Minnesota, Wyoming, Colorado, and North Dakota, and their offspring to everywhere that America is. This movement was not wanderlust, but was prompted primarily by economics and the quest for a better life when it was offered.

The reason David R. and Anna migrated was almost certainly in response to economic conditions. The decade of 1840 was almost all a time of depression with the exception of the period of the Mexican War of 1846-1848. And along with that, there was the promise of new and cheap land in the West. It was a better opportunity for himself and his children, and he took it. It is also noted that some of his children were no longer children. James was 22 and Martha, the youngest, was already 11. None were married.

David R. Scott, or perhaps one of his sons, may have made a trip to Iowa to locate a place to live before he moved his family. However, this may have not been the case since his nephew David H. Scott had come to this area the year before. The sequence of land transactions is a little unusual however, David R. purchased 40 acres of land from the U. S. government in Iowa on 5 June, 1851. He did not sell his land in Indiana until three months later,

15 September, 1851. In addition, he bought another 160 acres in Monroe County adjoining the original 40 acres on 6 October, 1851. How these land transactions could have taken place at the times they did in two states quite some distance apart, at least for 1850, is not readily apparent. In any case, by October of 1851 David R. owned 200 acres of land in Bluff Creek Township of Monroe County, Iowa. The parcels are identified as being the Southeast Quarter of the Southeast Quarter of Section 28, the 40 acre parcel, and the South Half of the Northeast Quarter and the North Half of the Southeast Quarter of the same Section, the 160 acre parcel.

David R. and his family may have lived on the above described land for about five years, though it is not clear that he actually did so. It is recorded that he sold all of the above described land to a George Rouse on 28 May, 1855. However, it was not until 7 October, 1855 that David R. purchased from the estate of James R. Boggs, three separate 40 acre parcels of land in three different sections in Troy Township. These parcels were all about 4 miles south of the land he had bought in 1851 and much closer to the town of Albia. Two of these parcels in Section 10 and Section 15 adjoined one another creating one 80 acre parcel. The other 40 acre parcel lay about 3/4 of a mile NE of the 80 acres. The time discrepancy between the time he sold the Bluff Creek Township land and when he bought the Troy Township property may be accounted for by the fact that the new land purchases were from the estate of James R. Boggs who had died in 1848, even before David had arrived in Iowa. David may have settled on the 80 acres he had purchased from the James R. Boggs estate when he first arrived, this transaction not being consummated until the estate was settled in 1855. It is possible that David R. never lived on the 200 acres in Bluff Creek Township. Since virgin Iowa land was heavily forested, it had to be cleared before crops could be planted. The Boggs land had probably been mostly cleared by the time David R. arrived in 1851 and would have been much more desirable as a home site as it was much closer to the town of Albia.

In any case, the 80 acre parcel in Troy Township became the home farm for David R. and Anna and their children, if not in 1851, then at least by 1855. The earlier date is considered to be more likely. This conjecture is supported by the fact that the 80 acre parcel was adjacent to the Michael Lower farm and Michael Lower, himself a widower, had married Jerusha (Lemaster) Boggs, the widow of James R. Boggs. In the Lower household then, were several children of James R. Boggs and Jerusha, three of which subsequently married three of David R. Scott's children. The first of these marriages occurred in March of 1853, when James M. Scott married Catherine Boggs.

One of the interesting facts about David R.'s land transactions is that he almost always bought before he sold, and that most of the transactions were on a cash basis. There is no evidence, other than his initial purchase in Kentucky, that a mortgage was ever involved. The implication is that he was both successful and frugal. In the Albia Museum there is a bank ledger from a bank that operated in Albia during the years that David R. lived in Iowa. While there are entries for loans and other transactions for members of the Boggs and Lower families, no entries are found for David R. or his family. There is also a grocers record in the museum from the same period. Again, David R. is not there. He apparently always paid cash, though it was common practice to "run a tab" in those days. It is also clear that he owned several parcels of land other than the home farm at one time or another. While there are records of sale for these parcels, there are no records of purchase. It is possible that he acquired these parcels when they were being sold for back taxes. These records were kept separately and have not yet been researched.

On 19 April, 1856, David R. transferred title to the northern half of the homestead farm to his son Alexander. The assumption is that this was done to distribute Alexander's portion of his estate to Alexander on his pending marriage to Jane Boggs in October of that year. David R. was at this time 61 years old. This land transaction is the last one recorded for David R.

David R. wrote his will in the Spring of 1862 in which he expressed his failing health. David R. Scott's Last Will and Testament is in the Monroe County Probate records in Albia, Iowa, and is quoted in full:

April 25th, 1862.

To all to whom it may concern, be it known that I, David R. Scott, being in feeble health and fully conscious of the uncertainty of life and the certainty of death, but being in the full exercise of a sound mind make the following as my last will and testament.

I will and bequeath to my son David Wallace Scott my homestead farm of forty acres and also thirty five acres of timber belonging to said homestead, also my wagon and harnesses and plow, the conditions of the above is that said David W. Scott shall support and keep in comfort his mother during her life time. This is not to defraud either of my other children having previously given to my other sons, James and Alexander, their equal portions, and I will my two daughters Elizabeth and Martha to have out of my other property an equal share with my daughter Sarah A. Boggs, she having received of me money and property to the value of Ninety Dollars.

The above I wish to be faithfully executed, witness my hand this day and date above written.

D. R. Scott

Witnesses: David H. Scott and Michael Lower.

The people who signed as witnesses were David H. Scott, David R. Scott's nephew, and Michael Lower, who was a next door neighbor and father-in-law to three of his children. Another document reveals that Michael Lower also served as a Justice of the Peace. David H. Scott was David R.'s nephew, oldest son of his brother Alexander. The complete biography of David H. establishes that he lived within about 10 miles of David R. when the will was witnessed and that he was in the area at that time since he did not join the Union Army for service in the Civil War until later. Incidentally, David H. Scott served with distinction during the war, rising from enlisted rank to the rank of Captain before breaking a leg and being mustered out.

The will implies that both James and Alexander received land as their inheritance before David R. died, and it is clear that Alexander did receive half of the home farm in 1856, but it is not clear that James M. was given land at that time. It should be remembered that James M. was a brick mason and not a farmer, so he may have received a share in a form other than land prior to David R.'s death.

However, David R.'s last will and intensions were not to be realized. In 1861 the Civil War began and Iowa remained with the Union. She gave many of her sons to the cause, one of them being David Wallace Scott. A summary of his war experience is recorded under his name later in this book. Here it will only be stated that he died on 6 January, 1864. This was 15 days before David R. passed on, probably not knowing before he died that he had lost his youngest son.

It is now fairly certain where David R. Scott was buried. His actual grave site has not been positively located, but over several years the following information has been developed which leaves little doubt as to his last resting place.

Initially, there was considerable searching through cemetery records and the cemeteries themselves in and around Albia, but neither David R. nor Anna could be found. However, George Robert Scott of Casper, Wyoming, a grandson of James Moore Scott, has a hand drawn plot map of the Oakview Cemetery in Albia. The map was in a family bible of the James Moore Scott family. The plot map identifies two plots in the Oakview Cemetery, one containing the graves of David Scott, Anna Scott, Elizabeth Scott, and an Alex Scott. The other contains the graves of J. R. Boggs, an Addison Boggs infant, two George L. Boggs infants, and a James M. Scott infant. It is noted on the map that the Boggs and Scott remains were moved to the Oakview Cemetery in 1890.

The individuals in the plot with David R. Scott and Anna are no doubt Elizabeth Scott, David and Anna's second daughter who died in 1862, and Alex Scott is no doubt Alfred Alexander Scott, Alexander and Jane Scott's second son and David R. and Anna's grandson. He died in 1866. The individuals in the plot with J. R. Boggs are all his infant grandchildren. Addison and George L. Boggs were his son and Catherine Boggs, wife of James M. Scott, was his daughter. Their dates of death have not been researched.

The James M. Scott infant was previously unknown since all of James M. and Catherine Scott's known children were accounted for. However, there is a six year gap between the births of James and Catherine's two oldest known children. A child could have easily been born and died during that time. It is not clear why the child was not

buried with James M. when the graves were moved in 1890. James had died in 1866 so his family plot was established at that time. It is surmised that the re-burial of all of the infant grandchildren of J. R. Boggs occurred in a common grave, and the individual remains may not have been identifiable at that time.

The James Moore Scott family plot in the Oakview Cemetery is some distance from the plots discussed above. In that plot are James Moore Scott, Catherine (Boggs) Scott, and two children, one marked "Maggie", and the other marked "Ward". James and Catherine's fifth child was named Margaret Elizabeth who died at the age of four in 1876. This is no doubt "Maggie". "Ward" was James Ward Scott, son of James Jackson Scott and a grandson of James Moore Scott. He lived only a few months, being born and dying in 1899.

There remains the question of where the Scott and Boggs graves now in the Oakview Cemetery were moved from. It is surmised that there was a cemetery on the Scott homestead farm, land that was originally owned by J. R. Boggs. J. R. Boggs had established his farm in 1843 and he died while living on that farm in 1848. His brother, Josiah Boggs and his neighbor Michael Lower had cemeteries on their own land, so it likely that J. R. did also, especially since the Oakview Cemetery had probably not been established by 1848. James R. Boggs was probably the first to be buried in this cemetery. The children of his sons would logically be buried with their grandfather in the family plot.

The land containing the J. R. Boggs cemetery was deeded to David R. Scott in 1855. His daughter Elizabeth died in 1862 and he would have likely buried this unmarried daughter on land which he then owned and in an established cemetery. The unknown James M. Scott infant would have also been buried there at about this time. David R. would have been buried there in 1864 since it was a now well established Scott/Boggs cemetery. His grandson Alfred Alexander would have been buried there in 1866, and finally Anna Scott would have been buried with her husband when she died in 1875 while she was living on that land with her son, James Moore Scott.

By 1890, neither the Scotts nor the Boggs owned the land. The owner at that time may not have wanted the cemetery on his land, or he was not taking care of it in a manner suitable to the Scott and Boggs descendants. For these reasons or perhaps others, they had the graves moved to the Oakview Cemetery so the graves could get proper care. However, it appears that the new Scott grave sites were not marked with either new stones or stones moved from the original graves on the Scott property, though there is a stone marking the J. R. Boggs grave site that may have come from the original J. R. Boggs grave. It is interesting to note that this stone also marks the grave of Jerusha Lower, widow of J. R. Boggs, who died in 1891 nearly 43 years after J. R.'s death. This stone is very old, and the inscriptions are just barely discernible.

There is little question, that the plot next to the J. R. Boggs plot in the Oakview Cemetery is the final resting place of David R. and Anna Scott. The hand drawn map of the plot site is very accurate in placing the J. R. Boggs plot, even to the extent of the curves in an old road leading to the site. However, the area shown on the plot map is not recorded in the cemetery plot records. These records describe the area as a "Free" area, an area in which burials were made in the early days somewhat indiscriminately and no records were kept. The site has been visited several times in an attempt to find some evidence to prove beyond doubt that David R. and Anna are buried there, but no evidence of a stone or other artifact has been located. Lack of positive evidence notwithstanding, it is concluded that this is in fact, their final resting place.

After David R. Scott's death in 1864, the provisions of his will could not be carried out since his son David Wallace had already died and left no heirs. It appears that David R.'s estate therefore passed directly to Anna. Perhaps in order to straighten out the legal aspects of the estate, it was necessary for Anna to legally relinquish her rights under the will. The following is recorded in the Monroe County records:

In the County Court of Monroe County Iowa, February four, 1864.

Be it remembered that on the 2nd day of February, 1864, the last will and testament of David R. Scott was read in open court. Therefore, Anna Scott, widow of said David R. Scott filed herewith her relinquishment of rights under the will, in words and figures following to wit:

To the County Court of Monroe County, Iowa, I, Anna Scott, widow of David R. Scott deceased hereby relinquish all my rights under or by virtue of the will of said David R. Scott who died testate, January 21st, 1864.

her

Signed Anna (X) Scott

mark

It appears from this document that Anna could not write her name having signed with an (X). This is in contrast to David's will which does have his signature, though that document was written in flowing script, probably by someone else, with David's quite crude signature appearing below it.

Whatever the legal aspects of the situation were, it is clear that Anna took legal title to the homestead farm, since in August of 1864 she legally passed title to the land to James M. and Alexander. The records show that an approximately equal distribution was made. James M. and Alexander each received half of the homestead forty acres referred to in the will and half of the thirty-five acres of timber mentioned therein. One result of these transactions was that they brought James M. and his family back to the original homestead. He was living in a different township in 1860 according to the census records.

The 1860 census also shows that all of the following families lived next to or close to one another during that census since they are listed very close together in the sequence of recording. The families were Josiah Boggs and several of his children, Alexander Scott with his wife Jane, Michael Lower and Jerusha, and David R. and Anna. In 1870 they are again listed almost consecutively, John Lower with Anna Scott, Michael Lower and Jerusha, James M. Scott and Catherine, and Josiah Boggs.

It is probable that Anna lived with James M. or Alexander after David R.'s death, but on 14 November, 1865 we find Alexander selling his parts of David R.'s original homestead farm to A. H. Atherton and James M. Black. It is known that at about this time, Alexander left the Albia area to live in Missouri. Anna did not go with him however. It is surprising to find Anna Scott in the 1870 census listed not with James M. Scott but in the John T. Lower household. John T. Lower was the son of Michael Lower and heir to the Lower property in the area. Anna being listed in the John Lower household may have been a quirk of the census taking process. She may have just been visiting the neighbors when the census taker came through the area and she was listed where he found her instead of where she actually lived. She no doubt lived with James Moore and Catherine Scott on the family farm until she died in 1875.

The 1875 date of Anna's death is from family bible records in the bible now owned by the George Robert Scott family of Casper, Wyoming. No other legal record reference to her death or newspaper obituary can be located. As noted above, she is no doubt buried with David R. in the Oakview Cemetery located in Albia, Iowa.

THE ALEXANDER SCOTT FAMILY

As noted at the beginning of this chapter, the family history of Alexander Scott, brother of David R. Scott will now be told. We will begin it with Alexander's marriage to Martha Wills, since his life up to that time has been told with that of David R.

Alexander Scott married Martha Wills in 1821 in Fleming County, Kentucky. Their first born was David Hamilton Scott, and he was followed by 10 more children, including one set of triplets born in 1831. According to the descendents of Alexander Scott, Martha Wills was the daughter of Samuel Wills and Margaret Jamison. Indeed, the Samuel Wills family is listed near the Scott family in the 1820 Census of Fleming County, KY. There are indications that the Wills family were of English blood and had a very early arrival in America, beginning in about 1660 in New Jersey, with branches arriving in Kentucky in the late 1700's via Pennsylvania. Research is continuing to verify this history.

Alexander Scott was, like almost all his Scotch-Irish race, a strong Presbyterian. In 1824 there was established in Fleming County, Kentucky a Presbyterian Church called the New Hope Church. The first records of that church have survived. Alexander and his wife Martha are the third and fourth names listed in the Register of Members, the register being opened on 30 April, 1824. Next on the register are David Wills and Sarah Wills, David being the brother of Alexander's wife Martha. These four people were of the first 15 members to commune in that church and were charter members. Also in those records is recorded the birth of Alexander and Martha's first son, David Hamilton Scott, on 27 January, 1825.

The records of the New Hope Church are interesting for as much as what they don't contain as what they do. For instance, there is no mention of either David R. Scott, Alexander's brother, or of Jane (Ramsey) Scott, Alexander's mother. Also, no Ramsey name appears on the list of members. There was probably a Presbyterian church in the area that preceded the establishment of the New Hope Church by many years, and was probably the prior church home of the fifteen members who established this new church. So far no record of that early church has been located.

It was not long after the birth of his first son that Alexander Scott joined his brother David R. in Putnam County, Indiana. The following is from David Hamilton Scott's biography. "In 1821 he (Alexander) was united in marriage with Miss Martha Wills, and several years later they removed to Putnam County, Indiana, locating in the midst of the forest. They lived in a camp until a log cabin could be erected and there the family experienced the usual hardships and trials of pioneer life. After some years the father sold his first farm, but purchased another in the same county and continued its cultivation until his retirement from active business life at an advanced age. He died on 6 February, 1879. He and his wife were consistent members of the Presbyterian Church, and he was serving as one of its Elders when called to his final rest."

"In the family of this worthy couple were eleven children: David H.; Samuel; John M.; Alexander, James T., and Margaret J., triplets; (Alexander died in youth); Thomas N.; Alexander M.; Martha A.; William H.; and Mildred E."

This biography was written as an entry in a Monroe County, Iowa history. It was therefore necessarily brief and lacked a great deal of detail. Alexander actually settled a few miles north of his brother across the county line in Montgomery County, Indiana near the town of Waveland. In the "History of Montgomery County, Indiana" by Beckwith, the early history of the Waveland Presbyterian Church is recorded. This church was organized on 28 November, 1828 in Brown Township. Alexander Scott and his wife joined this church the following spring, on 2 April, 1829. There is also a statement that the first baptisms were of three infants and occurred on May 2, 1830, one of which was a daughter of Alexander and Martha Scott. It is also stated that one of the infants was a "John Milton Young". There appears to have been an error in this history, since Alexander and Martha's first daughter was not born until 1831. However, their third son was born in 1829 and was named John Milton Scott. It was no doubt he who was baptized on this date, not the John Milton Young stated.

As mentioned in his son's biography, Alexander and Martha did relocate, they moved to Russell Township of Putnam County, Indiana and were located there by the time of the 1840 census. It is not clear when they moved, land records have not been researched to determine precisely when that occurred.

Martha died in 1847 shortly after the birth of her last child. Both Martha's and Alexander's graves can be found in the Portland Mills Cemetery in Parke County, Indiana. Though it is not mentioned in David Hamilton Scott's biography, Alexander married a second time. The 1850 Putnam County Federal Census shows that he had a wife named Sarah at that time, she being 3 years younger than Alexander. Sarah also appears as Alexander's wife in the 1860 Census for Putnam County.

A History of Russellville, Indiana records that Alexander was involved in the establishment of the New Hope Presbyterian Church in that Putnam County town. It is interesting that this church was named the same as that which he helped establish in Fleming County, Kentucky. The church was built in 1851 with Mr. and Mrs. Alexander Scott being charter members. Alexander is also listed as one of the two first elders of this church. Since Martha had died in 1847, the Mrs. Scott mentioned was Sarah. Alexander may have served as an elder of this church for over 28 years since he was one of the first elders in 1851 and was also an elder when he died in 1879.

It is somewhat difficult to piece together the records pertaining to Alexander Scott and his family, since all of the towns so far mentioned lay in three different counties. The towns of Waveland, Russellville and Portland Mills were actually fairly close together where the boundaries of Putnam, Parke, and Montgomery Counties meet, but the vital records, county records, and county histories are necessarily separate. That being so, it appears that several families migrated to this area of Indiana from Fleming County, Kentucky. One of the families was that of David and Martha Wills, David being Martha Wills' brother and brother-in-law to Alexander. Other families which migrated with the Scotts were Hamiltons, Wills, Moores, Ramseys, and Strahans, though it is not known if they came together or separately. Children of these families later married in Indiana, among them Alexander's son David Hamilton Scott and Mary Wills. They were married in 1845. Both had been born in Kentucky. In addition, two of Alexander and Martha's daughters married Hamilton men.

As noted in Alexander Hamilton Scott's biography, Alexander and Martha Scott had a total of eleven children, three of which were born as triplets. This is the first known case of multiple births in our Scott line. In all but one later Scott generations there have been at least one pair of twins but no other triplets.

Alexander and Martha were also the first family to fail to follow the Scotch-Irish naming convention precisely, though they did start that way and they certainly used all the given names of this Scott line. Alexander named his first two sons in accordance with the convention, but he named his third son John instead of after himself. The fourth son, one of the triplets, was named Alexander. This Alexander died at an early age. The name was used again to name the seventh son, this son being Alexander Marshall Scott, the man to whom we are indebted for writing his memoirs. His memoirs were, of course, written mostly about himself and the events of his life. Highlights of that nearly 200 page book will be related later as Alexander Marshall Scott was quite an interesting fellow and his story is worth telling.

As noted above, Martha (Wills) Scott died in 1847 and, according to her son's memoirs, Alexander married Sarah Maddox on 15 April, 1848. Young Alexander M. states that "the day father brought the new mother to our home (he was about 10 at the time) was the best day's work he ever did for his home and family." She was a widow and had several children of her own, some of whom were married. Alexander M. does not discuss this family, but he does relate that the last time he saw her was in 1864 when he was home on sick leave from the army during the Civil War and said goodbye to her as he was returning to his regiment. She died several days after his departure of typhoid fever. She is buried in the same cemetery as Alexander and his first wife Martha.

Alexander Scott died on 6 February, 1879 at the age of 82 years and one day. Alexander was buried in "the old graveyard on the hills a mile north of Portland Mills, where the Old Ceceder Presbyterian Church stood for many years." He lies with his two wives, his step mother, two or three of his sons and a daughter according to Alexander M. Scott's memoirs.

ALEXANDER MARSHALL SCOTT

Alexander Marshall Scott was born on 23 March, 1836 in a log cabin near where the town of Russellville now stands. He recalled in his early childhood that as the 6th son, he was mostly at the end of the line, and grew up bashful and shy, all the more so since he was "left handed and awfully cross-eyed and was generally considered to be the homeliest boy in the neighborhood". He was educated to the limit provided by country schools. Two of his boyhood chums were cousins Will and Bob Wills, sons of David Wills, who lived on a farm next to his father's. When Alexander was about 14, this family, along with Alexander's older brother David Hamilton and his uncle David R. Scott, migrated to Iowa. Alexander and these cousins remained lifelong friends in spite of the distance between them. Alexander grew to manhood in the area around Russellville, working mostly as a carpenter, a trade he learned from his father who was a wheelwright. At the age of 24 he went to work as a clerk in a dry goods store for \$10.00 a month. The next year the Civil War began.

Alexander M. Scott records in his memoirs that he enlisted in the 43rd Indiana Volunteer Infantry Regiment in August of 1861, and was mustered for duty on September 10th of that year. He was offered the lieutenantancy of Company B, but declined in favor of a man who had served three months previously and therefore was more qualified.

He was assigned as first Orderly Sargent. About eight months later both the Captain and 1st Lieutenant resigned and returned home. At that point the Second Lieutenant was promoted to Captain and Alexander became the 1st Lieutenant. He modestly discribed the history of the Company as follows:

"Our regiment was kept the greater part of the three years I was with it assisting in opening up the Mississippi River and its tributaries. Up and down the Mississippi, the Arkansas, the White, the Ohio and the Tennessee Rivers, almost all the time in a malarial sickly country. We did not do much hard fighting but lost many men by sickness. Of my own Company, of whom I had enlisted around Portland Mills, Russelville and vicinity, about 100 men, as fine a set of good healthy, husky country boys as you could find, we lost twelve by death, and fifteen others to sickness and disability before we lost a man in battle. There was not much glory or romance in our kind of soldiering, but we were obeying orders and doing our duty..."

In fact, Alexander saw no less than fourteen battles, including many of the important engagements that occurred in the western theater of Civil War including the Battles of New Market, Island No. 10, Fort Pillow, Memphis, Duvall's Bluff, (where one of our other ancestors, George Sites, died of disease) Helena, Yazoo Pass, Little Rock, and several others. While he recounts many interesting incidents that occurred during the war, only two will be remarked on with detail here. A reading of his memoirs gives a broader picture of his three years of army service.

"About the middle of March (1864) our generals decided to march on Little Rock and drive the confederates out and capture the city. Some time earlier I had ordered some supplies from home, among them a new pair of fine boots for which I paid twelve dollars. It was very hot down on that Arkansas day when our army was ordered forward for Little Rock. The dust and sand was from two to six inches deep in the roads. We started about seven in the morning with our blankets and ammunition and three day's rations and our arms, a load of fifty or sixty pounds to carry. The sun came down on us awfully hot and after marching till about ten o'clock the men were getting very hot and tired. Several men of our Regiment were prostrated by heat or sunstroke. We came to a grove of timber and a halt of two hours was ordered. Before the halt my feet were punishing me severely and when we halted our Colonel and our Regimental Surgeon and I and one or two other officers sat under the shade of a big tree. My feet were hurting me so badly I felt I could not walk further with my new boots on, so I pulled them off, took off my socks, and found my feet all puffed up with big blisters. I showed my feet to my Colonel and the doctor. They both said I could not possibly put my boots on again with my feet in that condition, and there was nothing for me to do but ride the balance of the way in the ambulance. I told them, no riding for me.

My captain was not with us. I was in command of my Company, and my Company was at the head of the line. I told my Colonel I was going to try it barefoot in that hot sand. He did not think I could stand it many miles, but when the command "Forward" was given I took my place at the head of the line. The dust and the sand was so hot I could not bear to stand still but kept stepping lively. I marched in that hot sand for two days until we got near Little Rock. By that time the blisters had dried up and my feet looked like a piece of old tanned leather.

When we started barefoot that first day I tied my new boots together and gave them to my negro orderly, telling him to take care of them. The second night on the march I was placed in command of a part of our picket line. I had to go on duty across a large creek right in thick woods, brush briars and snakes were plentiful, but I got back to camp the next morning and called for my orderly to bring me my boots. He began to look pale and stammered out, "Well, somebody stole dem boots last night." So those boots never gave me sore feet again. Fortunately my cousin David Burnside had an extra pair of shoes in his knapsack and I got him to give them to me. I wore them until we got into Little Rock. Many men in the Army had rougher times than I did those two days and nights I marched barefoot, but I have never found another officer who marched at the head of his Regiment barefoot for two days."

In the year 1862 Alexander M. Scott's brother, David Hamilton Scott, then of Monroe County, Iowa, joined the Union Army. The brothers found themselves in the same Army, commanding different Companies in different Regiments on the famous Yazoo expedition.

"The country was flooded, and the sight of a large fleet of transport boats, loaded with soldiers and several gun boats running as it were loose, through the Mississippi Valley was more novel than pleasant. I will give briefly, a few incidents of one day, - a day glorious and eventful in American History: - I allude to July 4, 1863 - the day when the tide of the Rebel Army was turned back at Gettysburg, at Vicksburg, and at Helena, never again to regain its prestige.

On that day our Brigade, with other regiments, amounting in all to about 2,500 effective men, were stationed at Helena, Arkansas, defending its strong position and large amounts of army supplies. General Prentise was in command. Our forces occupied a strong line of works on a chain of hills running parallel with the Mississippi River, about one mile long, with the main fort, Fort Curtis, occupying the central position. For several days prior, it was rumored that Generals Price and Marmaduke, with their army of 12,000 to 15,000 troops, were marching to attack us. But we common soldiers did not believe the Rebels would come to fight us in our stronghold, aided as we were, by the river gun boat fleet. But that hot July morning we were to learn that the Johnnies would fight, and fight us desperately too.

About 3 o'clock that morning the drums suddenly beat the long roll, - To Arms!! We tumbled out of our bunks, made a hasty and scanty toilet, formed our companies and regiments and double quicked it out to our line of defenses. And not a moment too soon did we get there. The boys were mad, and swearing that there was no occasion for such an early rising, and that General Prentis had tapped another keg of beer, etc.

Scarcely had we got into our positions in our works, when just as daylight was streaking the eastern sky, BANG! BANG! BANG!! went the guns all along the picket line, and in a few moments our picket guards were seen coming into camp, and they stood not on the order of their coming, but came lively, while close upon their heels came the Rebel Cavalry, shooting, shouting, and yelling. Suddenly the big guns in Fort Curtis boomed out, and a shell came screaming over our heads from the gunboats. Then every man in our camp knew that business had commenced.

Scarcely had our pickets got inside our works, until the whole Rebel Army of Arkansas was in front of us; and then was fought one of the hardest little battles of the war, although the greater events of that day so overshadowed it that history says little about it. No one who has not heard the roar, the rattle, the crash, the din of battle, can form any idea of the fearful, the exciting confusion that twelve or fifteen thousand muskets, well handled, and one or two hundred cannon can make. The hissing of bullets, the screaming of the shells, the shouting of officers, the rattling and hurry of artillery wagons and ambulances, the shrieks of the wounded, the groans of the dying, etc. etc., make a pandemonium that, as the boys used to say, "beat all hell on a picnic".

The Rebels, confident of easy victory, charged our entire line of works at the same time, and fought with a valor worthy of a better cause, for an hour or two. Failing to carry our works by this charge, they constantly receiving a deadly fire, they fell back in confusion, only to rally, reorganize their forces, and come again.

We had hardly got a long breath and reloaded our guns before the Rebels charged again, with desperate energy. Our men stood to their works and fought just as desperately, and against desperate odds in numbers.

We had no place to which we could retreat, except into the Mississippi River, to surrender meant death, or terrible suffering in the Rebel prison pens, so we fought it out on that line. Again the Rebels were driven back, only to reform their shattered columns for the third and last desperate charge.

They coolly formed their line, in plain view of our men, and then, with that demonical yell, so well remembered by all who have heard it, on, on they came, over our outside line of rifle pits, over the fallen timber and brush, cut down in front of us to impede their march. On, on, they came. It looked like no power we had could stop them! Right up to our breastworks they charged into the jaws of death!! Our men could see the whites of their eyes! Our men rammed home another cartridge but did not have time to withdraw their ramrods, pulled up and fired ramrod and all, and then with the butts of their guns and bayonets finally checked and drove them back, those that were not killed, captured or wounded. (The records say that the 43rd Indiana that day captured more Rebels than 43rd had men in action.)

We wiped the sweat and powder from our faces, and wondered How Long O Lord, can this thing last. But it was the last fighting for that day. Sullenly the Rebels drew off their forces, broken, defeated and disappointed, leaving more dead wounded and captured than we had men in the fight, leaving their dead for us to bury, and their wounded for us to care for. The Rebel force took up their line of retreat to Little Rock, and we had no force to pursue them. We were willing, for then, to just let it be.

My regiment was on the left of the line of battle, while the regiment my brother was in was on the extreme right of the line, a mile or more away. When the battle would lull in front of my regiment, I would hear the firing on the right. My anxiety to know whether my brother was killed or wounded became so great that, as soon as we found out for certain the Rebels were in retreat, I got permission from my superior officers and hastened to where my brother was stationed. I was rejoiced to find him and some other relatives in his regiment all right, and they were equally glad to see me still kicking."

During that year of 1863, Alexander M. Scott and four of his brothers were serving in the Union Army. Unlike most families that committed so many sons to the cause, all five of these men survived, came home, and lived to enjoy the blessings of the country for which they had risked their lives and fortunes. Not all made it home whole however. David Hamilton Scott was wounded in a later battle and crippled in the leg so badly as to make him unfit for further service. Also, Alexander M. Scott lost his health completely. In Little Rock in March of 1864 both brothers were pronounced unfit for military service. Alexander was examined by a board of medical examiners and told that he would not get well in the Army, that he must go home or die where he was. Brother David convinced Alexander he must resign and go home, and so together they left the Army. They went from Little Rock to Memphis, separating at St. Louis, David going home to his farm in Albia, Monroe County, Iowa, and Alexander returning to Indiana.

Alexander's boyhood chums and cousins, the sons of David Wills were also in the army during this period. There were four of them and they all enlisted in Iowa. Cousin Will was in the same brigade as Alexander's brother David Hamilton. One of the brothers was killed at Shiloh, and one suffered the horrors of Andersonville Prison for months, but he, Will and the other brother survived the war.

Alexander came home from the war in May of 1864 and in very poor health. He recovered somewhat but manual labor was out of the question so he went to work as a store clerk. A year later he and an army buddy opened their own store and after a year sold out so his friend could head west. They each cleared a thousand dollars on the store. He then moved to Ladoga, a small town a few miles north and east of Russellville in Montgomery County and bought half interest in a store there. On 13 December, 1866 he married Matilda Miller, a neice of his partner in the store.

Alexander and Matilda had a total of six children. Mary Alma was born in 1868, Robert Carl in 1869, Nellie Ruth in 1871, Letha Moten in 1874, Harriet Miller in 1876, and finally Frederick Morton in 1880. Frederick died at the age of 2 while the others all grew to adulthood.

In 1876 Alexander decided to run for the state legislature as a representative. He won the election and served a two year term.

He worked in the store for about 20 years till again his health failed him so he sold out and with the proceeds of about \$35,000 took a year off. He then took a job as a bank clerk. He worked as head man in the bank, it was owned by a farmer, for about 20 years when the bank failed and he lost all his savings and then some. He paid off all the creditors with his own money, no depositor lost a dime, but he was dead broke with only a \$24.00 a month pension from his war service. He and his wife then moved to Indianapolis.

He worked at various odd jobs as he could find work and got very involved in community life. Again in 1898 he ran for and was elected to the state legislature, this time from Marion County, and re-elected in 1900. He ran and was again elected in 1914 and again in 1916, so his total service in the Indiana state legislature was ten years.

Alexander had very strong views and was as firm a Republican as you could find. His memoirs are replete with derogatory comments regarding the Democrats who in 1860 had opposed Lincoln and were in Alexander's view more than willing to let the Union be sacrificed and felt most of them were traitors since they did much to impede the war. He never forgave the Democratic Party and was always suspicious of their motives if not their patriotism. He was very active in veterans groups and affairs and throughout the rest of his life used the title of Captain, his rank when he left the army in 1864.

He was very strong in the Temperance Movement, firmly believing that alcohol was an evil not to be tolerated. He tells many stories in his memoirs of the evils of drink, and how he avoided it. He worked tirelessly for prohibition and saw the day when Indiana went dry as a state. It had to have been one of his proudest moments, for in his view, he had helped to remove an evil from the land. Here is part of his argument from a speech he gave in support of Prohibition.

"I simply ask Mr Claypool if he can logically disprove a single one of the assertions in the following paragraph.

This traffic (in alcohol) has caused more tears, more anguish, more misery, more poverty, more crime, more aching hearts, more anxiety for fathers and mothers, more hungry and half-clad mothers and children, and ruined more lives and broken up more homes than tongue or pen can ever describe. Besides this, science condemns it and its own victims cry out against it and for help to escape this awful scourge."

Prohibition carried the day in Indiana and later throughout the whole country. While there is still no valid argument that any of Alexander's assertions were false, the remedy of Prohibition proved to be a false hope. The "awful scourge" persists, for we have yet to find a way to successfully prevent people from indulging in self destructive behavior, be it alcohol, drugs, tobacco or promiscuity.

Alexander was also a strong supporter of the woman's suffrage movement. His memoirs include a speech he gave in the Indiana legislature in support of the right of women to vote which runs about eight pages, too long to be reproduced here. It is as cogent an argument on the subject as can be found anywhere, and was used in other states to support the cause. Again Alexander was on the winning side. This victory though, has and will stand as long as his beloved Union stands.

In reading his memoirs, these three issues, along with his family, were the defining issues of Alexander M. Scott's life; the preservation of the union, the fight against demon rum, and the rights of women. He displayed a remarkable toughness, perseverance, and character in all that he did. He was in these ways very much like the first of his Scotch-Irish breed that trod our shores. We are grateful that he left for us not only his heritage but also a record of his life, so that we can better know who he was, and thereby better know ourselves. He died on 5 August, 1921. There is no doubt that when he met his God, He said to him, "Well Done".

The blood of Alexander Marshall Scott still runs strong in America. The line we know descends from him through his third daughter Letha Moten Scott who married Harry Daugherty. Their third child, Matilda Jane Daugherty married William Linn, they currently live in Indianapolis, Indiana, both reaching the age of 90 in this year 1995. Their daughter Elizabeth and her husband Len Traubman now live in San Francisco with their two children, and it was Len Traubman who provided us with the Memoirs of Alexander Marshall Scott. He and Liz are the author's fourth cousins, our common ancestor being David Scott. We are delighted that they are members of our extended family.

ISAAC LEMASTER 1728 - 1797

MARGARET JANE SHARP 1725 - 1816

NANCY ANNE

BENJAMIN LEMASTERS 1756 - 1837

REBECCA ANN MARTIN 1758 - 1844

FRANCIS BOGGS 1753 - 1837

MARY CLENDENNIN 1754 -

JOHN BOGGS 1780 - 1847

NANCY ANN LEMASTERS 1784 - 1870

THOMAS LEMASTER 1752 - 1825

CATHERINE THORNTON 1777 - 1850

BENJAMIN JOHN LEMASTER 1808 - 1891

LOUISA LEMASTER 1810 - 1858

WILLIAM LEWIS LEMASTER 1912 -

NANCY JAMES R. BOGGS 1803 - 1848

JOSIAH C. BOGGS 1805 - 1888

LEMASTER MARY NORMAN JOHN D. BOGGS 1818 - 1835

MARGARET ISAAC GEORGE LEMASTER 1800 -

JOHN GEORGE L. BOGGS 1831 - 1910

CATHERINE BOGGS 1833 - 1893

ELIZABETH ABNER KETURAH CATHERINE BOGGS 1841 - 1916

JACKSON ADDISON JAMES R. BOGGS 1848 -

PERRY ELDRIDGE NANCY JANE BOGGS 1836 - 1861

MARY ELVIRA JOANNA MAHALA MATILDA BOGGS 1847 - 1854

ALICE CHARLES BENJAMIN JOHN BOGGS 1856 - 1889

THE LEMASTER FAMILY

The Lemaster family became related to the Scott family through the marriage of three of David R. Scott's children to three of the children of James R. Boggs and Jerusha Lemaster. These marriages took place in the 1850's in and near Albia, Monroe County, Iowa. The following is the history of the Lemaster family which begins in 1660 in Maryland. The history of the Boggs family will appear in the following chapter.

It should be noted that very little of the Boggs and Lemaster family histories has been developed through original research by the author and his family except for the period of about 1839 to the late 1800's. However, the Lemaster and Boggs families have been the subject of intensive research by other very competent genealogists and historians. We are very much indebted to a Mr. Thomas Miller of Berea, Ohio who has spent many years of direct research on these families and has collected data from other recognized researches and historians of early Virginia, all of which he has graciously made available for our use and analysis. Among the authors and researchers he cites are Ron Hardaway and Edward L. Woodyard of Upper Glade West Virginia, Marilyn Schueltzky of Fort Wayne, Indiana, and Howard Lemasters and Margaret Herberger, authors of "Lemasters, USA", two editions.

Impressive as the work done on these families is, Thomas Miller concedes that positive proof of some relationships cannot be presented. He states in a letter to the author, "Some of the connections we cannot prove, and never will be able to prove. Every shred of paper in Greenbrier and Chester Counties has been scrutinized over and over by many people working this line. The records to absolutely prove some relationships are just not there." They therefore arrive at what he calls "reasonable conclusions", another phrase meaning essentially the same as our criteria for acceptance, "preponderance of evidence".

The author's analysis of the validity of Mr. Miller's work is much more generous than his own. While I do not have copies of or viewed many of his references, if they exist and the quotes are accurate, then I am willing to present to the readers of this volume the following story of the Lemaster family as being as nearly historically correct as we will ever be able to know.

The work of all of the above people covers much more than the specific line of descent of which we are interested, Thomas Miller having a data base of Boggs family members in excess of 4400 names and a library of references which exceeds our own three feet of shelf space on the Scott family. What follows is therefore a condensed version of what information is available. We hope to present here enough information to again answer the question of who our ancestors were and their history, and thereby better know ourselves.

Two general comments before the story begins. First, the spelling of the Lemaster name has taken many forms, the most frequent variation being Lemasters. It also appears as Le Master and La Master, plus two or three French variations. We will use the spelling Lemaster throughout.

The French origin of the name is the second comment. It is not clear where the tradition that the original Lemaster was a French Huguenot came from. He was not. He was present on American shores in 1660, a father and grandfather of native born Americans a quarter of a century before the first Huguenots arrived in Maryland in 1685. He was an Englishman, and his name was Abraham Lemaster. Here follows a condensation of a paper which Thomas Miller attributes to Ron Hardaway, the paper covering the first four generations of the Lemaster family in America.

THE MARYLAND CONNECTION

In most American History courses taught today in American schools, much is made of the founding of a colony in Maryland as a refuge for persecuted English Catholics. While it is true that the colony's founding family, the Calvert's, were Catholics and that the colony permitted Catholics a degree of religious freedom unknown in other colonies, the fact is that Maryland, like Virginia and Plymouth Colony before her, was established as a money making venture by the Calvert's who had been involved in various colonial schemes in America since 1619.

George Calvert, patriarch of the clan and the first Lord Baltimore, envisioned Maryland as a vast manorial estate with himself at the head of a thriving and prosperous feudal enterprise. George Calvert died before the charter for his Maryland experiment was issued, but his son, Cecil, shared his father's dream and ambition. The charter for "Terra Mariae" was delivered to Cecil Calvert in June 1632, and by October 1633 Calvert had hand picked twenty English gentlemen, mostly Catholics, and two hundred English artisans, mostly Protestants, and sent them off in two ships to found the colony. In the Spring of 1634 the town of St. Mary's was established on a bluff overlooking the mouth of the Potomac River, and the Maryland Colony began to prosper immediately.

The Marylanders had learned well the doleful lessons of Virginia. On the banks of the Potomac there would be no starvation, no Indian massacres, and a minimum of devastating epidemics. The Marylanders came to America fully prepared to farm for their sustenance. They chose well-drained, breezy sites for the settlements, and they did their best to be as inoffensive as possible to the Indians and neighboring colonists.

The quality of the settlers was also unusually high. After the first group of gentlemen and professional craftsmen had settled in, Cecil Calvert devised a scheme to attract Englishmen with pretensions of nobility to migrate to Maryland. Any person who could persuade five men between the ages of sixteen and fifty to settle in Maryland was rewarded with a land grant of 1,000 acres and power over his tenants which made him a virtual feudal baron.

As with other English colonies in America, Maryland's greatest need was a sturdy reliable work force. The answer to this problem was the indentured servant system. Cecil Calvert himself prepared a standard contract for Englishmen willing to sell their labor for a chance to start a new life in America. Most indentures called for a period of bound servitude lasting seven years. When the service was completed the former servants received what were known as "freedom dues". In Seventeenth Century Maryland where land was plentiful and people were scarce, the freedom dues for indentured servants included a land grant of fifty acres. It is an acknowledgment of the receipt of a fifty acre land grant as freedom dues that the ancestor of the Lemaster family first appears in Maryland.

ABRAHAM LEMASTER

In about the year 1660 a ship arrived at St. Mary's, Maryland Colony from England. On board were several young men who had decided to make their fortunes in the American plantations. All of them were artisans of some sort, and they all intended to sell their services to one of the numerous Maryland land barons. One of these was Abraham Lemaster, then about 20 years old. He may have had a young wife with him when he bound himself to serve a man named John Smith.

On 16 November 1668 Abraham Lemaster appeared before the court of St. Mary's County and confirmed to the court that he had assigned a fifty acre land grant awarded to him on the completion of his service to John Smith to one Roger Snell. Snell had been indentured to William Boreman, one of Cecil Calvert's feudal barons. Evidently he had completed his service at the same time as Abraham Lemaster, since Snell entered a claim for one hundred acres, half of which had been assigned to him by Abraham Lemaster, and the other half being most likely his own fifty acres freedom dues. The record does not show what Abraham received from Snell for this tract of land.

After assigning his freedom dues land grant to Roger Snell, Abraham Lemaster became a tenant on a plantation known as Betty's Delight. This two hundred acre farm had been originally granted to Thomas Nobley, but it had come under the ownership of Edward Evans and Abraham Lemaster became a tenant of Evans. Abraham worked Betty's Delight for about fifteen years as a tenant, and then in November of 1685 he bought the plantation from Evans.

Abraham Lemaster lived a long life on Betty's Delight, dying there on 6 December, 1722. He left a will written on 22 September, 1722 in which he leaves considerable property to his children, all named in the will except the oldest son. The named children were John, Isaac, Sarah, wife of John Tennyson, Mary, wife of Robert Barron, and Anne, wife of Stephen Noe. Abraham does not name his wife.

RICHARD LEMASTER

The oldest son of Abraham Lemaster was Richard Lemaster. Richard was not named in Abraham's will, the reason being evident from a land transaction on record in St. Mary's County. On 22 May, 1675 a patent was issued by Cecil Calvert to Richard Lemaster of St. Mary's County for a fifty acre tract of land originally owned by a Samuel Dobson who had assigned it to Richard Edelin who in turn assigned it to Richard Lemaster. The land was known as "Toombett" and it was to become the home of Richard Lemaster. The unusual element of this transaction is that Richard was only five years old at the time this land was assigned to him. Abraham Lemaster secured the tract from Richard Edelin, a neighbor and close friend, (Edelin wrote Abraham Lemaster's will in 1722) in his son Richard's name. Abraham's reason for doing this is not clear, but there are precedents of this sort of transaction in both Maryland and Virginia. When Abraham wrote his will, he no doubt felt that "Toombett" was sufficient legacy for Richard, and so did not name him in his will. In fact there is no documented evidence that Richard Lemaster was the son of Abraham, but the relationship is no doubt valid since there was no other Lemaster in Maryland who could have been his father.

Richard Lemaster was a major dealer in real estate in Charles County, Maryland between 1700 and 1740 since his name is found on numerous land transactions during that period. On one deed Richard is described as being a carpenter which may be the trade of his father Abraham when he came to America and Richard was trained by him in that trade.

Richard Lemaster married Martha Dennis, a daughter of John Dennis, around 1690. Of the sons of Abraham Lemaster, only Richard produced sons to carry on the Lemaster name. His sons were Richard, born in about 1691, Joseph, born about 1693, Isaac, born about 1695, John, born about 1697, William born about 1710, and Abraham, born in 1713. They had but one daughter, Mary, born in about 1694 who married Thomas Hays around 1713. All of the sons survived and eventually moved westward into western Maryland and Virginia.

JOSEPH LEMASTER

Joseph was the second son of Richard Lemaster and had been born around 1693. Although there is no marriage record, most Lemaster researchers agree that Joseph Lemaster's wife was Catherine Ward, a daughter of Thomas Ward of Charles County. This conclusion is based on the will of Thomas Ward in which he mentions his grandson, Thomas Lemaster, son of his daughter, Catherine Ward Lemaster. The given names of Richard Lemaster's daughters-in-law are all known with the exception of Joseph's wife. Thus Catherine Ward must have been the wife of Joseph.

Little information about Joseph Lemaster has been found. All evidence suggests that Joseph lived in Charles County Maryland and died there in about 1730. Joseph was the father of two sons, Thomas and Isaac. Isaac was born around 1728 and was probably an infant when his father died.

ISAAC LEMASTER

Isaac Lemaster apparently grew to manhood in Charles County, Maryland. Following the defeat of the French and Indians in 1758, Isaac Lemaster joined in a general westward movement of people, and on 8 August 1758 he bought a sixty acre farm in Frederick County, Maryland from an earlier settler, Joseph Flint. The exact location of this farm is not certain, but it probably was near the present day community of Flintstone in Allegany County, northeast of Cumberland in the Maryland panhandle. In 1770 he sold the farm back to Joseph Flint and moved westward again to the great basin of the Monongehela River. This was then in Virginia, but now West Virginia.

Isaac Lemaster got a land grant for 400 acres in this new area from the Virginia Land office in 26 February, 1780. In April of 1781 Isaac sold 220 acres of this land to Zackquill Morgan who had the land surveyed into lots and established the town of Morgantown, as the county seat for the new Monongalia County. During the next seventeen years Isaac Lemaster acquired title to several pieces of real estate in the Morgantown area, all of which he sold before his death in 1797.

Isaac Lemaster had married a woman named Nancy Ann, maiden name unknown, around 1749. This marriage would have taken place in Charles County about ten years prior to Isaac beginning his westward migrations. Several of his children were therefore born in Charles County. The names of their children would never be known were it not for a Revolutionary War pension declaration filed by one of Isaac's sons, Joseph, on 21 June 1819. In this declaration

he gives his war record which begins with his enlistment in Morgantown in 1776 and ends with his return there in 1780. He closes his declaration stating that he was the son of Isaac Lemaster and that he had four brothers, Isaac, Richard, Benjamin, and Thomas, and three sisters, Mary, Charity, and Cathryne.

Two of the brothers of Joseph Lemaster become important in our story. These were Thomas and Benjamin. Both became ancestors in our family line, and both actively participated along with their brothers in some of the seminal events leading to our freedom, The Revolutionary War.

THOMAS LEMASTER

Thomas Lemaster's birth year is not precisely known, nor is the order of birth of he and his siblings. He was probably one of the oldest of Isaac's children with researchers giving his birth year of between 1749 and 1752. He was likely born in Charles County, Maryland.

By 1774 Thomas was a young man in his early 20's living on the edge of the wilderness near what would become Morgantown, West Virginia on the head waters of the Monongahela River about 60 miles due south of Fort Pitt, now Pittsburgh. In 1774 he answered the call of General Lewis, apparently as a Scout, for an expedition against the Indians along the Ohio River, which flowed about 30 miles west of his home. About 50 miles further down the Ohio, the Kanawha River meets the Ohio as the Kanawha flows up from the southeast. The point of their meeting on the West Virginia side of the Ohio and east of the Kanawha is called Point Pleasant. On this point stands a battle marker commemorating what is called the first battle of the Revolution, The Battle of Point Pleasant. It was fought on 10 October, 1774.

The Battle of Point Pleasant is generally not a familiar one, our Revolutionary War histories deal with Yorktown, Valley Forge, Brandywine, Concord and the like. What occurred on the Ohio is perhaps best known as Dunmore's War, but it was indeed a battle that had great significance in the outcome of the Revolution. While Thomas Lemaster's role in the Battle of Point Pleasant is not known, he earned for himself the sobriquet "Thomas The Scout", which no doubt indicates his role in this episode.

The story is best told as a synopsis of the book, "The Battle of Point Pleasant, First Battle of the Revolution", published in 1909. It begins in the early 1770's when the Ohio River Valley was just beginning to be settled. It was not until 1775 that the Cumberland Gap became a pathway to the West through Kentucky and Daniel Boone country. There were always problems with the Indians, and early in 1774 an Indian attack, followed by a retaliatory raid led by a Col. Cresap created a virtual state of war along the Ohio.

Lord Dunmore, King George's Governor of Virginia, recruited an Army of Virginians to put down the Indians on the frontier. Dunmore appointed a General Lewis to lead half the group while he himself took command of the other half. The southern group (Lewis's) was to cross the Appalachians, move down the Kanawha to the Ohio, and wait for Lord Dunmore who would take the northern group northwest to Pittsburgh and then down the Ohio to join Lewis. They would then cross the Ohio together and take the war to the Indian nations in Ohio. General Lewis, with about 1100 men, who were almost all Scotch-Irish including Lewis himself, began their march through the wilderness and over the Appalachians, down the Kanawha, and arrived at Point Pleasant on the 30th of September. He then held up to await Lord Dunmore.

Dunmore, however, was not a Revolutionary. In fact, he was a very strong Loyalist, and his objectives were far different than what his plan had seemed. Dunmore held at Fort Pitt, and sent orders for Lewis to cross the Ohio without him and advance on the Indians in Ohio. The infamous Simon Girty was the messenger. It is evident from later evidence, that Dunmore had laid a trap for Lewis. On the other side of the Ohio, waiting for Lewis in ambush, were the cream of the Delaware, Mingo, Wyandot, Cayuga, and Shawnee tribes, all led by the formidable Chief Cornstalk of the Shawnee. The Indians knew that General Lewis had arrived at his appointed place at Point Pleasant, but they did not understand why he did not cross the river into their ambush, but sat on the south side of the Ohio for over a week. Lewis waited for Dunmore, Girty was late with the message, and both Armies were getting short on rations. The Indians decided to take the initiative, and crossed the river on the night of the 9th of October, planning to attack at daybreak on the 10th.

That morning, men from Lewis's camp spread out to hunt game. Two of these hunters stumbled upon the Indian camp. The Indians killed one of them but the other ran back to his own camp and raised the alarm. The Indians attacked immediately and the battle began. The Indian force was estimated to be at least as large as the 1100 men Lewis commanded, and the fighting was fierce. The battle lasted all day with issue very much in doubt until about noon, by which time Lewis's men began to gain the upper hand. By sundown the Indians were retreating stubbornly, and by cover of night, disengaged completely and re-crossed the river. Losses were heavy on both sides.

Lewis built a fort to protect his wounded, buried his dead, and, convinced that he had been betrayed. How else could so large an Indian force be brought against him without fore-knowledge of his plans?. In less than a happy state of mind, Lewis started up the Ohio to look for Dunmore. Dunmore, apparently knowing what had occurred, again sent Lewis a message telling him that the Indians had sued for peace, and he should return to Point Pleasant. Lewis was not deterred, so Dunmore, along with an Indian Chief named White-Eyes, went to Lewis' camp. He there convinced Lewis that indeed the Indians wanted peace, that the frontier was secure, and that he should return home with his men. Lewis reluctantly accepted his orders and returned to Virginia the way he had come. It was not until later that his suspicions of Dunmore's duplicity were confirmed.

It had been Dunmore's plan, coordinated with the English in London, to have the Indians wipe out Lewis and his command and to open a full scale Indian War on the frontier. This would turn the Revolutionaries from their purposeful drive toward liberty. However, Lewis and his Virginians had proved to be a tougher breed than Dunmore and the Indians had counted on. They overcame Dunmore's treachery and the Indian ambush and in so doing, actually significantly reduced the threat of Indian war on the frontier during the Revolution that was so soon to follow. The Virginians returned home to later join the Army of Virginia, and General George Washington eventually led them to a final victory over the British.

In a bit of poetic justice, in 1776 Lord Dunmore commanded a British fleet and troops at Gwynne's Island in Chesapeake Bay. General Lewis, again in command of Virginian troops, attacked Dunmore, defeated him, and drove him off with heavy losses. Dunmore "left the country for the country's good", returning to England, never again to see American shores.

In the material provided by Thomas Miller, there is referenced a Daughters of the American Revolution record for Thomas Lemaster that indicates that Thomas had further service during the Revolution. The reference states that he held the rank of Sergeant in the Army of Virginia. These original records are being sought to verify his service and what that service might have consisted of. The DAR reference also indicates that Thomas Lemaster had a wife, first name unknown, last name Lewis.

In the book "Lemasters USA, 1639-1965", Thomas is noted as having also served in Captain Hugh Caperton's Rangers, a group from Botetourt County in Central Virginia. Caperton was active in the Indian Wars along the Ohio in the early 1780's. There is a book, "The Killing of Adam Caperton by Indians" which tells of an engagement in 1782 during which Hugh Caperton's son Adam was killed in hand to hand combat by an Indian, the story being a blow by blow account of the struggle. However, Thomas Lemaster is not mentioned in this book.

It is fairly certain that Thomas Lemaster married twice. His first wife, whose first name is currently unknown, was probably from a Lewis family. Most researchers state that Thomas married in 1784 to a Catherine Thornton, though there is no record of the marriage. The time would be about right since this was the end of the Revolutionary War and Thomas would be returning to civilian life. However, Catherine (Thornton) Lemaster is found in the 1850 Missouri census living in the home of one of her sons and is noted as being 73 years old at the time. She was therefore born in about 1777, so she would hardly be old enough to marry in 1784. The DAR record which states that Thomas's first wife's name was Lewis, combined with a land record which states that Thomas Lemasters bought land from a William Lewis, indicates that Thomas's first wife was a Lewis.

It is very clear that Thomas Lemaster's second wife was Catherine Thornton. A land deed which will be cited later in this chapter clearly establishes that, and other evidence from family bibles also cited later, clearly indicate that Thomas's second wife was named Catherine. It is not clear however, how many children each of these wives bore to Thomas.

The research indicates that Thomas Lemaster had at least nine children. Margaret was born in 1786, Isaac in 1795, George in 1797, Mary in 1800, Benjamin in 1803, John in 1806, Jerusha in 1808, Louisa in 1810, and William in 1812. It would appear from these dates of birth that Thomas would have married Catherine Thornton in about 1794, this date being surmised from the nine year gap between the dates of birth of Margaret in 1786 and Isaac in 1795. There may have been other children born of Thomas and his first wife after 1786, and their deaths and that of their mother could have been related to childbirth or some sort of epidemic.

The family bible of James Moore Scott, the husband of one of the grand daughters of Thomas Lemaster and Catherine, has been preserved and is in the possession of the George Robert Scott family of Casper Wyoming. That bible contains the death dates of both Thomas and Catherine. Thomas is recorded as having died on 25 July, 1825, while Catherine did not die until 5 November, 1850. Catherine no doubt lived with one or more of her children after Thomas's death, and the above referenced census places her in the home of her youngest son, William Lewis Lemaster, in Jefferson County, Missouri in 1850.

That Jerusha and Louisa Lemasters were the daughters of Thomas Lemaster is proved by the following document. It is a Mason County, West Virginia deed of February, 1839.

"This indenture, made and entered into this second day of February in the year of our Lord 1839 between James R. Boggs and Jerusha his wife, formerly Jerusha Lemaster, Josiah C. Boggs and Louisa his wife, formerly Louisa Lemaster, and Benjamin Lyons and Nancy his wife, formerly Nancy Lemaster of the first part, and Benjamin Lemaster of the second part. Witnesseth that whereas the parties of the first part are part owners of two certain tracts of land in Mason County on Crooked Creek, as heirs and representatives of Thomas Lemaster deceased, one of which contains 50 acres and being the same lot conveyed from George Thornton to said Thomas Lemaster deceased, the other tract containing 45 acres, it being part of the land bought by said Thomas Lemaster deceased of William Lewis deceased originally containing 96 acres but 51 acres of which now belongs to Isaac Lemaster, now this indenture further witnesseth that for and in consideration of the sum of one hundred and fifty dollars, that is to say fifty dollars to James R. Boggs and Jerusha his wife, fifty dollars to Josiah C. Boggs and Louisa his wife, and fifty dollars to William Lyon and Nancy his wife, in hand paid by the said party of the second part....etc. etc."

Thus Jerusha and Louisa Lemaster are clearly the daughters and heirs of Thomas Lemaster. While it has no significance to our genealogy, the above document creates a puzzle as to who Nancy Lemaster was. Researchers do not name her as one of Thomas's daughters, yet she was clearly one of his heirs. It is likely that she was Thomas's daughter, and was probably born before Isaac in about 1793.

This document also clearly establishes that Jerusha Lemaster was the wife of James R. Boggs, and that Louisa Lemaster was the wife of Josiah C. Boggs. The date of the sale of the land, April, 1839, indicates that these two families were selling out to their brother Benjamin in preparation for their departure to Iowa in the summer of that year as we shall see in the next chapter on the Boggs family. But before that we shall discuss the life of Thomas Lemaster's brother, Benjamin Lemaster, who it turns out, was the grandfather of James R. and Josiah C. Boggs.

BENJAMIN LEMASTER

According to the data provided by Thomas Miller, Benjamin Lemaster was born on 15 June, 1756. Some of the papers conflict as to his birthplace, some say Virginia, some Maryland. Since his father Isaac still lived in Charles County, Maryland till 1758, Benjamin likely was born there. At the beginning of the Revolutionary War in 1776 he was 20 years old and living with his father Isaac on his farm near Morgantown. He too answered the call to arms

and saw extensive service during the war. His pension application for that service, submitted in 1832 in Nicholas County, (West) Virginia, was unusually complete in that it gave a summary of his involvement which lasted from September of 1776 to May of 1779.

Thomas Miller has provided us with a paper that combine the service of Benjamin Lemaster with the history of the Revolution as Benjamin would have experienced it. Unfortunately the author of this paper was not included by Thomas Miller, and so proper credit for its compilation cannot be attributed. It will be presented here with thanks to our unknown fellow researcher. His efforts are much appreciated.

BENJAMIN LEMASTER AND THE AMERICAN WAR FOR INDEPENDENCE

I. Virginia Goes to War

Because so many of the crises which precipitated the beginning of hostilities between Great Britain and her thirteen American Colonies occurred in Massachusetts, contemporary revolutionary activities in other colonies are often overlooked. Although Massachusetts's role as leader of the Revolution cannot be denied, Virginia's contributions to the overthrow of British authority in America places that colony in the forefront of the revolutionary movement.

Samuel Adams has been called the orchestrator of the American Revolution. Patrick Henry should be known as the lyricist. As early as 1763 Henry was inveighing in a court of law against the tyranny of George III for vetoing an act of the Virginia Burgesses concerning payment to Anglican ministers of the Colony. Although Henry technically lost the "Parsons Cause", his vilification of the clergy and the King in the courtroom made him an instantly recognizable hero to the people of Virginia.

Recognizing his powers of persuasive oratory, Henry successfully campaigned in Louisa County for election to the House of Burgesses just in time to deliver a series of scathing attacks on the recently passed Stamp Act. Henry was the author of seven resolutions condemning the Stamp Act, five of which passed the Burgesses. The final resolution, and the most controversial, declared that only the Virginia colonial legislature had the right and power to levy taxes on Virginians. Henry left Williamsburg immediately after his resolutions had passed and the more cautious members of the Burgesses met the next day and rescinded the "Virginia Only" resolution. But the damage was done. Copies of the resolutions were leaked to newspapers throughout the colonies and published in their entirety as though they had passed and were official Virginia policy. As author of the radical sentiments, Patrick Henry became a household name throughout the American colonies.

Henry was elected to the first Continental Congress in Philadelphia in 1774. Here he had to share the limelight with such towering figures as John and Samuel Adams of Massachusetts, Roger Sherman of Connecticut, and his fellow Virginians, Payton Randolph and Richard Henry Lee. This was an assemblage to which Henry could contribute, but could not dominate. Thus he was eager to return to Virginia in March of 1775 to attend a convention of Virginia political leaders at St. John's Church in Richmond. The business of the convention was to endorse the First Continental Congresses call for an economic boycott against England, and this was done speedily. Henry then took the floor and introduced a resolution calling for Virginia to organize militia regiments for a defense of the colony against British tyranny. Many delegates who heard Henry's resolution were shocked, among them George Washington and Edmund Pendleton. They considered Henry's call to arms irresponsible, provocative and premature. But in defense of his own resolution Henry's oratory rose to heights he had never reached before and would never surpass. "Is life so dear, or peace so sweet, as to be purchased at the price of chains and slavery?" he thundered. "Forbid it Almighty God! I know not what course others may take, but as for me, give me Liberty, or give me Death!!". The watchwords of the Revolution had been coined, and Henry's popularity with the people knew no limits.

Henry's resolution to put Virginia in a "posture of defense" was passed by the convention, and he was appointed chairman of the committee to organize two regiments of Virginia militia. But before these regiments could be organized, Governor Dunmore precipitated a crisis by seizing the colony's store of gunpowder at the arsenal at

Williamsburg. Henry took command of a company of Hanover County militia and marched on the capital. He did not get the powder back, but he intimidated Dunmore to the point where the governor immediately paid the colonial treasury 330 pounds for the powder. Henry's decisive action at a time when other Virginia leaders were willing to let events run their course solidified his popularity to the extent that his political rivals began to fear they had created a monster. Dunmore didn't help by declaring Henry an outlaw as soon as Henry had left Williamsburg to take his seat in the Second Continental Congress at Philadelphia.

In August, 1775 with Dunmore self exiled on a British ship off Norfolk, Henry returned to Williamsburg and was appointed Colonel of the First Virginia Regiment. Henry was eager for the appointment. After his success in the gunpowder crisis, Henry considered himself a sterling leader of men in military matters as well as political. But by this time Henry's competition in the Burgesses were ready for his new power play. Edmund Pendleton, from his position as chairman of the Virginia Committee of Safety, organized a conspiracy to keep Henry from actually taking command of troops in the field. When Dunmore landed at Norfolk and issued a call for all Virginia Loyalists to join him, Pendleton ordered William Woodford, Colonel of the Third Virginia Regiment, to take charge of the situation. Woodford led a small detachment to Norfolk and on 9 December his sharpshooters decimated the ranks of Dunmore's Tories who foolishly charged Woodford's entrenched position across a forty yards long causeway. Outmaneuvered by his opponents in the new Virginia Assembly and denied glory on the field of battle, Henry fussed and fumed until February of 1776 when he resigned his commission. The First Virginia Regiment was then incorporated into Washington's Continental Army, and Isaac Read was appointed Colonel.

At the same time Read's appointment was confirmed, Woodford was given command of the 2nd Virginia Regiment which also was incorporated into the Virginia Line. Hugh Mercer, a Fredericksburg doctor, (This is the same Hugh Mercer under whom John Scott served as Ensign in 1756 at Kittanning), was installed as Colonel of the 2nd Virginia Regiment, and George Weedon, an innkeeper and Fredericksburg neighbor of Mercer was appointed his Lieutenant Colonel. These three Continental Army officers of Virginia, Woodford, Mercer, and Weedon, would play vital roles during the next three years in the life of a young Monongalia County farmer...Benjamin Lemaster.

II. Benjamin Lemaster Goes to War.

During the summer of 1776 the Continental Army suffered a series of military disasters of sufficient magnitude to have destroyed the will of most men. The American Army in Canada had beat an inglorious retreat from the walls of Quebec, and by the time the British and smallpox had gotten through with them, 5,000 casualties had been left behind. George Washington, rushing from Boston to defend New York City, overreached his limits and nearly lost the cause at the Battle of Long Island. He did lose New York City at the Battle of Kip's Bay, then managed by only the barest of margins to extricate the remnants of his once fine army from Manhattan Island in another humiliating retreat.

In this atmosphere of near panic and defeatism, recruiting officers for the Continental Army were feverishly trying to round up replacements for the vast numbers of men lost in Canada and at Long Island. During 1776 a recruiting officer named Culp visited the valley of the Monongahela River in northwestern Virginia seeking warm bodies to fill the ranks of the First Virginia Regiment. The Monongahela basin was prime recruiting area. The men were toughened to tragedy and hardship from years of contending with Indians for the right to occupy the land. Many of them were renowned for their marksmanship with their long rifles and their woodcraft capabilities. Their only drawback, especially among the more seasoned frontier veterans, was an almost complete inability to respect officers or to subject themselves to discipline of any kind. Consequently Culp was looking for young men with frontier skills and an eagerness to fight for their country, but at the same time not so old as to be set in their independent ways. Culp found exactly what he was looking for in twenty year old Benjamin Lemaster.

The arguments Culp used to persuade Lemaster to leave his home and commit himself to a distant war are unknown, but his promises were of sufficient interest to Lemaster that he agreed to accompany Culp back to Berkeley County where a new company was organizing. It appears that once in Berkeley County Lemaster took the oath to defend Congress against the tyranny of the King and Parliament for a period of three months beginning on 1 October, 1776.

Lemaster became a member of a company of the First Virginia Regiment, commanded by William S. Lewis from Staunton. Lewis came from a military family and was well-known on the Virginia frontier for previous exploits. He was a younger brother of Andrew Lewis, a legend on the frontier for having commanded Virginia troops in the Battle of Point Pleasant in 1774 and who was then serving as a Brigadier General in the Continental Army at Norfolk. William Lewis's younger brother had been killed at Point Pleasant while serving under his brother. William's oldest brother, Thomas, was a long standing member of the House of the Burgesses from Augusta County and was then representing Augusta in the new Virginia Assembly. William Lewis had also been a soldier before. In 1755 he was with Braddock's unfortunate expedition and was seriously wounded at the Battle of Monongahela. In the twenty years intervening between Braddock's defeat and the outbreak of the Revolution, Lewis had become a respected and accomplished doctor in Staunton. When the First Virginia Regiment was organized in 1775 he was appointed Lieutenant under Patrick Henry's command. When Henry was replaced as Colonel by Isaac Read in February, 1776, Lewis was appointed Captain of a company. Lewis was the man under whom Benjamin Lemaster would serve for the duration of his career as a soldier.

When Benjamin Lemaster enlisted in September of 1776 there was no training period for recruits. It was presumed that he knew how to load, shoot and care for his rifle. His uniform was the clothing he wore, and his gear consisted of whatever he chose to bring with him from home. Any necessary drilling skills hopefully would be acquired on the march from Berkeley County to join the army.

When Washington had withdrawn from Manhattan Island he had taken up a position on the Bronx River north of Manhattan but still east of the Hudson River. The area was known as The White Plains because of the frequent presence of ground mist hanging over the low, marshy landscape. Sometime between 22 and 27 October, William Lewis's company marched into Washington's camp at White Plains and announced its availability for duty. On the morning of 28 October Benjamin Lemaster got his first look at what war was all about. He probably did not like what he saw.

Washington had established two positions at White Plains. A series of trenches and battery emplacements had been hastily built at White Plains itself. About three miles downstream from this position Washington had fortified a low ridge known locally as Chatterton's Hill. It was at Chatterton's Hill that Washington expected the British to make their move against him, and that movement came on the morning of the 28th.

Washington has posted the First Delaware Regiment under John Haslet in the center of Chatterton's Hill. Haslet's flanks were protected by regiments of Connecticut and Massachusetts militia and a sprinkling of Continental regulars who were supposed to set an example for the untried militia. The battle got off to an inauspicious beginning. The second cannon ball fired by the British opened a gaping wound in the thigh of one of the Delaware Continentals. Instantly the entire Delaware Regiment which formed the center of the line broke and ran for better cover. After a certain amount of forceful persuasion, Haslet succeeded in getting his men back into a respectable formation, and the battle then began in earnest. The Americans spent the entire day parrying one British surge after another. Although a tremendous amount of ammunition was expended, casualties were relatively light in both armies. At five o'clock in the evening the American forces, low on stamina and ammunition, suddenly withdrew from Chatterton's Hill abandoning the field of battle to the British.

Benjamin Lemaster was present at the Battle of White Plains, but was not directly involved in the action. However, he did have an excellent view of what transpired on the crisp October morning. Lemasters and his company were positioned on the right wing of Washington's defensive alignment and were held in reserve to the north of Chatterton's hill. That morning the First Virginia was attached to a division commanded by William Alexander, better known as Lord Sterling. Alexander had joined Washington at White Plains about the same time Lemaster had arrived in camp. He had spent the previous month as a prisoner-of-war, having been captured with nearly all of his command at the Battle of Long Island on 27 August. Washington, who regarded Alexander highly, had finally succeeded in exchanging the two highest ranking prisoners held by the Continental Army, Montfort Browne, Governor of the Bahamas, and Cortlandt Skinner, Attorney General of New Jersey, for Alexander only a few days before the Battle of White Plains. The fact that Alexander had been released from close confinement so soon before the battle may account for this normally energetic and efficient officer being placed in a reserve position on 28 October.

From his vantage point to the rear of Chatterton's Hill, Benjamin Lemaster would witness American troops retreating in a panic, not the last time he would see such an occurrence. Later he would take part in an equally spontaneous retreat. Not for the last time would he see a crack unit of the Continental Army reduced to shreds. Later he would be part of such a unit. And never would he forget the sight and sound of the scarlet and white clad British regulars flowing inexorably toward the American lines, the brilliant sun flashing off the deadly steel of the bayonets, the drums beating a tattoo inside the heads of the young and inexperienced American farmers as they waited nervously for a cannonball to come hurtling through their ranks. During the first day of battle the thought must have crossed Benjamin Lemaster's mind, more than once, that he had been a very foolish young man to have joined this enterprise.

III Benjamin Lemaster Becomes the Object of a Fox Hunt

Washington expected General Howe to follow up his tactical success of 28 October with a full assault on the American position at White Plains. In fact, Howe had planned a general attack for 31 October, but an un-seasonal thunderstorm of unprecedented severity turned the field of battle into a minor lake surrounded by a quagmire. The British returned to Manhattan while they could still get there, and turned their attention to Fort Washington, an American strong-point on the Hudson River still manned by 1200 soldiers, and three smaller forts in the same area held by an additional 1600 Continental troops and militia.

On 10 November Washington ferried 3,000 troops across the Hudson to move into a position to block a British strike into New Jersey. He was assured by Nathaniel Greene, commander of both Fort Washington and its sister fort on the Jersey side of the Hudson, Fort Lee, that both forts were impregnable. Feeling certain that Howe would not send a large force into New Jersey with American held citadels in their rear, Washington felt that 3,000 men would be sufficient to stop anything the British might throw into New Jersey. The First Virginia Regiment and Benjamin Lemaster made up part of Washington's 3,000 troops who trudged along behind their exhausted Commander-in-Chief to take up positions at Newark on 13 November.

The American soldiers had barely cooked breakfast on the overcast morning of 16 November when a courier dashed into camp with the worst possible news. Impregnable Fort Washington had fallen with the loss of its entire garrison. As the American army milled around in a fever of nervous anticipation, Lord Cornwallis crossed the Hudson River in a driving rainstorm and assaulted Fort Lee with 7,000 British regulars and Hessians. Cornwallis could have accomplished his task with a company of New York City merchants. Washington had ordered Fort Lee abandoned along with its nearly 50 artillery pieces, and Cornwallis simply rode in and raised the British flag.

For a week Cornwallis dallied, but on 29 November he sent General Howe a message that he would now catch Washington "as a hunter bags a fox", and he moved on Newark. A grand fox hunt had begun. Washington had no option but to run for it. His men were in a pitiful state due to lack of sufficient winter clothing and food. The army had no wagons to move heavy supplies, and the weather had turned into a never ending series of dismal rain and snow sodden days and nights. He abandoned Newark as soon as he was certain Cornwallis was moving in that direction and the army reached Brunswick on the Raritan River on the evening of 29 November. The army cooked their meager fare for dinner, then burned their fine new canvas tents because no wagons were available to carry them, and hit the road again. The rear guard tried to destroy the only bridge across the Raritan, but the Hessians reached the town before the job could be completed.

If Washington's army was good at anything at this point in the Revolution, they were good at running away. They ran across New Jersey as they had never run before, reaching Trenton on the Delaware River on 3 December far in advance of the lumbering Hessians and British. Washington had five days to get his men across the river, a task which was completed on 8 December. For seventy miles up and down the Delaware the Americans confiscated every craft capable of carrying a man across the river, then went into camp for what most of the men felt would be their last encampment with the Continental Army. Most enlistments were due to expire on 31 December. Benjamin Lemaster was counting the days until he could shoulder his rifle and walk away from the rising sun reflecting off those terrifying bayonets and those hateful red coats.

IV. Benjamin Lemaster Enjoys Winter Sports

In the American camp on the Delaware, George Washington had another serious problem. He had only 3,000 men with him, and most of them were planning to go home in a couple of weeks. A frantic recruiting effort in the Philadelphia area had turned out another 3,000 men, none of them experienced as soldiers. But they had agreed to serve only until the end of the year. It was clear to Washington that the Revolution was indeed composed of "summer soldiers and sunshine patriots". He had to take some significant and positive action immediately, and what he decided to do was to re-cross the Delaware under cover of darkness on the 25th and fall on the Hessian garrison at Trenton, hoping that their indulgence in Christmas cheer would make them careless and unprepared for a major assault.

Every American who has suffered through a required course in American History is familiar with Washington's perilous crossing of the Delaware and the forced march through cold and snow to Trenton. The First Virginia Regiment and Benjamin Lemaster waded the snow in the wake of their Commander-In-Chief on that bitter December night. The First Virginia was under the command of Adam Stephen, a Continental officer from Berkeley County. Stephen's division along with two divisions commanded by fellow Virginian Hugh Mercer and William Alexander were under the overall command of Nathaniel Greene whose overconfidence had lost the garrison at Fort Mifflin and obliged Washington to abandon Fort Mifflin. Green's job was to attack Trenton from the north at the same time another column under the direction of John Sullivan was to strike Trenton from the south, thus trapping the holiday-weary Hessians in the town with no hope of escape.

It nearly worked. About two hundred Hessians managed to flee the trap when a militia regiment failed to arrive at its post to block the last escape route. Nearly one thousand Germans were captured and more than one hundred were killed, including the commander of the garrison, Col. Johann Gottlieb Rall. It was a smashing victory for Washington at a time when he needed such a victory more than anything else in the world.

Benjamin Lemaster's company did not get involved in the close fighting in Trenton's streets. Mercer's and Alexander's men performed that duty with casualty free efficiency while Stephen's regiment made certain that no one escaped to the north of the town. No one did.

For the first time in his short career as a soldier Benjamin Lemaster had taken part in a successful action, but he had little time to enjoy it. The Hessians who had escaped had run the twelve miles up the road to Princeton where the strong British garrison at that town was alerted. Knowing that the British would not sit still and wait to be surprised, and recognizing that his men had been up and about for nearly twenty-four hours in the worst possible weather conditions without rest, Washington ordered his men back across the Delaware.

The big victory had been won, but nothing had been gained by it if Washington's army still went home on 31 December. After the men had taken time to eat and rest, Washington led them back across the Delaware and established headquarters at Trenton. On 30 December, the day before most of the men's enlistments expired, Washington assembled the troops for parade and then rode among them with a personal plea that they stay with the Army for six more weeks. At first his pleas fell on deaf and frozen ears, but he made a second attempt, and this time he offered each man who would stay a ten dollar bonus for enlisting for six more weeks. One by one the men began to step forward until finally nearly the entire army had accepted Washington's terms. Benjamin Lemaster too stepped forward and signed on for six more weeks. The next day Washington sent word to the impoverished Congress that the payroll for January would be considerably higher than they had expected.

Washington's move against Princeton in the early morning hours of 3 January, 1777 was not only a masterpiece of military maneuver, but also contained elements of dramatic irony. When Washington took Trenton, Cornwallis was in New York preparing to return to England for consultation with the war office. He abandoned his travel plans and hastened back to New Jersey where he took command of 7,000 regulars and Hessians and immediately headed for Trenton. James Grant, who had remarked that he could take 5,000 men and march from one end of the colonies to the other and not lose a man, was second-in-command.

The First Pennsylvania Regiment under the command of Edward Hand proved to be such "contemptible" soldiers that less than 1,000 of Hand's riflemen stopped Cornwallis's 7,000 regulars dead in their tracks, and forced them to spend the entire day of 2 January fighting for every foot of the last four miles into Trenton. Washington, in the meantime, had dug in on a rise of ground on the south bank of Assunpink Creek opposite Trenton and was calmly awaiting the British arrival.

Cornwallis finally rolled into Trenton at twilight and rejected the urging of William Erskine, his quartermaster general, that they should hit Washington at once before the Americans could dig in any more deeply. James Grant did not agree. With his customary disdain for American soldiers he argued that Washington was essentially trapped. He could not get back to the Delaware and there was no where for him to retreat to the south. Washington would have to stand and fight for a change, and Grant predicted that the rebellion would be crushed the following morning. Cornwallis agreed with Grant's assessment. Recalling his fox hunting analogy, Cornwallis dismissed his officers with the remark, "We've got the old fox safe now. We'll go over and bag him in the morning." Unfortunately no photographer was present on the morning of 3 January to record the dropped jaws and astounded eyes of Cornwallis and Grant as they watched the morning fog lift over the American lines to reveal mounds of dirt and smouldering campfires, and not a soldier in sight! Not until eight o'clock when the distant boom of artillery from Princeton reach Trenton did Cornwallis have the slightest inkling of where the American army had gone.

While Cornwallis and Grant were wringing their hands back in Trenton, the descent into the maelstrom had begun for Benjamin Lemaster at Princeton. William Lewis's company and another company of the First Virginia Regiment commanded by John Fleming formed part of a detachment led by Hugh Mercer and were the first troops to make contact with the British on that cold January morning. Under the naked branches of William Clark's apple orchard southwest of Princeton, Mercer and his men squared off against the crack 17th Regiment of British infantry under the command of the resourceful Col. Charles Mawhood. Mercer was backed up by two cannister-firing field pieces which served to keep the British at a standstill while the Americans delivered several volleys at the frustrated Englishmen. Suddenly, in one of those quirks of battle known to frustrated commanding officers as "fortunes of war", Mercer's riflemen and his artillery had to pause to reload at the same time. Knowing that he had about a minute to do something, Mawhood seized his opportunity and ordered a charge with bayonets. At no time during the Revolution would the British bayonet be wielded with any more ferocity than it was that morning in William Clark's apple orchard. Inadequately trained in the use of the weapon and ill-equipped to combat it, Mercer's men were quickly put to flight by the maddened English infantrymen. Mercer attempted to rally his troops, but they ran over and around him to get away from the flashing steel. Suddenly Mercer found himself alone, surrounded by a group of red-coated soldiers whose powder-blackened faces and torn clothing accented the strain they had just been through. They were not inclined to give quarter. At first the British soldiers thought they had cornered George Washington himself, and one of them shouted for the "damned rebel" to surrender. But Mercer waved his sword around his head, then lunged at the nearest red coat. A musket butt from behind struck him in the head and knocked him to his knees at which point the hapless doctor-general from Fredericksburg was bayoneted in the side and left for dead. (So died a comrade-in-arms of two men who had served with him, John Scott in 1756, and Benjamin Lemaster in 1777, men whose blood our Scott family shares.)

If Benjamin Lemaster had not been otherwise occupied he would have witnessed the attack on Mercer. However, Lewis and Fleming's men were frantically reloading as the British bayonet charge streamed into Mercer's disintegrating line. With one eye on their ramrods and the other on the British who were bayoneting everyone they could reach with wild abandon, the Virginians were beginning to lose their nerve. Captain Fleming had been around long enough to recognize the beginning of a general panic when he saw one. He began a desperate effort to get his men into position for a volley before the British were upon him. With little hope of being heard he began shouting for his men to dress ranks. Someone did hear him. A British soldier only a few yards away screamed at Fleming, "I'll dress you", and shot him through the head at almost point-blank range.

The Virginians had seen enough. The ranks broke and began running back in the direction from which they had come only moments earlier, the British firing wildly, then rushing up to bayonet anyone unlucky enough to go down. But luck was with Benjamin Lemaster. Unknown to him, an artillery captain named Joseph Moulder had managed to get his two cannons to the top of a hill overlooking Clark's orchard. Without waiting for orders, he loaded both pieces with grape-shot and trained them on the men of the charging 17th Regiment. Just as Moulder gave the order to fire,

Benjamin Lemaster was hit in the ankle by a lucky shot from a British Brown Bess musket. As he fell to the ground, Moulder's cannon belched forth their lethal cargo, and Mawwood's men fell back in shock and disorder. Lemasters managed to get to his feet and hobble to the rear just as Washington arrived on the scene to take personal command of the jittery militia which was supposed to be backing up Mercer's unit. Washington brought with him a regiment of veteran New Hampshire Continentals who steadied the militia, and Edward Hand's Pennsylvania Riflemen began gunning down the thoroughly alarmed British regulars from their left flank. The stubborn red coats remained on the field long enough to discharge one volley at the advancing rebels with Washington at the head on a white charger. It was Washington's day. Dozens of musket balls whistled past him, but neither he nor his horse were hit. When the Americans stopped and fired a volley at the British line, the best soldiers in the world broke and ran. Now it was Washington's turn to exalt. "It's a fine fox chase, boys!" he shouted, and he joined his enthusiastic soldiers in pursuing the fleeing British.

In the aftermath of the battle someone found John Fleming's horse wandering around the battlefield. The animal was brought to William Clark's house which had been converted into a field hospital. There Benjamin Lemaster's wound was examined and temporarily bandaged. Since his wound was slight he was able to ride, and Fleming's horse was loaned to Lemaster to enable him to catch up with the army and keep up as Washington marched into New Jersey. (A county in the new state of Kentucky would be named after John Fleming, and this county would become the home of members of our Scott family line)

Cornwallis finally appeared at Princeton three hours after the battle had ended. Surveying the carnage and interrogating some of the wounded British soldiers, he concluded that Washington had a much larger force than he had been led to believe. After a half-hearted pursuit of some of Washington's stragglers, Cornwallis left Princeton and began pulling in the British and Hessian outposts sprinkled all over New Jersey. Washington went into winter camp at Morristown, only twenty miles from Newark where he had begun his humiliating retreat across New Jersey a month earlier.

With New Jersey virtually cleared of the enemy, Benjamin Lemaster was able to go to Philadelphia to the hospital to have his wound treated properly. After a short stay in the relative comfort of the hospital, he returned to Morristown. In February of 1777 he re-enlisted in William Lewis's company for two years, and immediately left camp to spend a month on guard duty at Trenton. In May he was promoted to the rank of Sergeant, and he held this rank for the duration of his career in the Army.

V. Benjamin Lemaster Goes to the Races.

On 24 August, 1777 Benjamin Lemaster and the First Virginia Regiment marched triumphantly through Philadelphia, the American Capital, on their way to the head of Chesapeake Bay where Howe was expected to land and start a campaign to capture the city. Howe landed at the Head of Elk on 25 August and Washington established a complicated line of defense around Brandywine Creek just north of the Pennsylvania-Delaware border. Washington's plan of battle called for an elaborate network of support assignments, the success of which depended on his officers' ability to react promptly and properly to British movements and on General Howe's willingness to do what Washington wanted him to do. Unfortunately, nearly everything that could have gone wrong did go wrong. The Battle of Brandywine Creek on 11 September, 1777 turned into another disheartening rout.

Benjamin Lemaster and the First Virginia were probably once again attached to the division commanded by Adam Stephen. Stephen's division was placed on the east bank of Brandywine Creek to the north of Chad's Ford where Washington expected the British to cross in force. Stephen's troops, along with those of William Alexander and John Sullivan formed the right wing of the army and was again under the overall command of Nathaniel Greene.

The British attacked at Chad's Ford as Washington had planned for them to do, but it was several hours before Washington realized that he had committed the heart of his army to stopping a diversionary movement. While cannonballs flew back and forth across Chad's Ford the main British army under Cornwallis had circled far to the north and were about to descend on the rear of Washington's entire force. Once he realized what the British were doing, Washington reacted with energy and quickness. He ordered the right wing to swing around to face this new threat, and Benjamin Lemaster found himself racing with the rest of his comrades to take a position on top of a

plowed hill nearly a mile away from their original position. Stephen's and Alexander's divisions fought well from their vantage point on top of the hill, but Sullivan was late getting his troops into position on Stephen's left. Once they were in position, the British directed their main assault at Sullivan's disorganized line and Sullivan rapidly gave ground. In danger of being outflanked, Stephen's and Alexander's men withdrew in an orderly fashion fighting all the way. In the meantime, George Weedon and his Third Virginia Regiment had come up to cover the retreat of his fellow Virginians. Weedon's men had marched four miles in less than forty-five minutes to get into position. They opened ranks and let Stephen's and Alexander's men through, then closed and held off the British attack until a general withdrawal could get underway. By nightfall all the American army was in retreat toward Chester just southwest of Philadelphia.

Although Washington had suffered another grievous defeat, the army had committed itself well in most quarters. Faulty intelligence and ignorance of geography had cost the Americans success, but most of the rank and file felt that they had done as well as could be expected considering the circumstances. Morale was high and they were ready to fight again. Three weeks later they got the opportunity to do just that.

Following the defeat at Brandywine Creek, Washington engaged Howe in an elaborate game of cat and mouse with each army taking turns at being the cat. Washington intended to keep his army on the move and hope to catch Howe in a disadvantageous strategic position or in a moment of carelessness. Howe on the other hand, hoped to bring Washington to a decisive battle in which the Continental Army could be crushed.

Washington began the game by moving his army from Chester across the Schuylkill River to Germantown. Here he watched cautiously as Howe pretended to move toward Reading where the Continental Army had stored its meager supplies, then toward Philadelphia, then toward Wilmington. On 15 September Howe established positions at Westchester, and Washington moved down from Germantown with every intension of launching a general attack. At this point Washington's army outnumbered Howe and the Americans possessed the better terrain. Chances for a major victory seemed certain when nature intervened. The "Battle of Westchester", which might have rivalled Saratoga in its importance to the final American victory, never got off the ground. A torrential downpour on 16 September literally rained out the battle. Washington's troops lost nearly half a million cartridges which had been prepared for the battle, and the British suffered nearly as badly. Neither army was in condition to fight for several days after the rainstorm.

The armies began moving again. Washington withdrew from Westchester to Yellow Springs anticipating that Howe was going to strike at Reading. Howe moved from Westchester to Germantown and established headquarters on the same site Washington had occupied a week earlier. Washington then settled down at Pennypacker's Mill on the Reading Road twenty miles west of Germantown. On 26 September, almost as an afterthought, Cornwallis led a detachment of grenadiers into Philadelphia and announced that he had captured the city.

On 2 October Washington moved his army to Center Point, fifteen miles from Germantown, and at twilight on the evening of 3 October the army moved out as quietly as 11,000 men accompanied by horses and caissons could move. Benjamin Lemaster, his shoes worn through with three weeks of almost constant marching, marched along again under the command of Adam Stephen. At dawn on the 4th the army was still three miles from the British lines, but a dense fog had settled over the Schuylkill River Valley and visibility was greatly reduced. The men groped forward and at six o'clock in the morning an advance cavalry unit made contact with a British outpost at Mt. Airy. The battle of Germantown had begun.

Stephen's division had been assigned to the left wing along with the divisions commanded by Nathaniel Greene and Thomas McDougall. It was their job to open up on the British right when the leading regiments of the American center led by Anthony Wayne, Francis Nash, and John Sullivan made contact. Unfortunately Stephen got separated in the fog from Greene and McDougall. They moved on into position without him while Stephen and his entire division blundered around hopelessly lost in the fog. Heavy firing off to the right finally caught Stephen's attention, and he turned to the sound of the guns, advancing into the increasingly dense fog now made worse by the smoke of battle.

Stephen did not know it but the firing he had heard was coming from William "Scotch Willie" Maxwell's division which had been held up on the main road by a small group of British soldiers holed up in the home of Benjamin Chew, a noted Philadelphia Loyalist. On orders from Henry Knox, Washington's artillery chief, Maxwell was trying to overcome the Chew house before moving on to the front. His entire division ground to a halt and engaged in a fire-fight with the strongly fortified redcoats while Knox's artillery banged away at the mansion. It was all to no avail. The house held, and the harvest of this pointless exercise soon bore bitter fruit.

Anthony Wayne had met with extraordinary success in driving the British before him back through the center of Germantown. On Wayne's left, Greene's division, minus Stephen, had also advanced in good order. Peter Muhlenberg's corps had led the assault from the left with such energy that the Ninth Virginia Regiment, which had spearheaded the attack, found itself so far out front of the rest of the American army that a British unit was able to get between the onrushing Virginians and cut them off from the rest of Muhlenberg's division. The commander of the Ninth Regiment, the energetic George Mathews of Augusta County, was obliged to surrender not only his entire regiment but also one hundred prisoners his men had picked up as they pressed forward. Muhlenberg nearly let the rest of his division get isolated in the same manner and men had to fight harder to retreat than they had fought to move forward.

In the meantime Stephen's men, including William Lewis's company and Benjamin Lemaster, suddenly spied men in blue coats ahead of them in the fog. Someone shouted "Hessians!" and Stephen's men poured a withering fire into the backs of the men in front of them. The "Hessians" turned out to be Anthony Wayne's men. Wayne's soldiers, thinking the British had got behind them, immediately began a hasty retreat. As they emerged from the thick fog, Stephen's troops recognized them and immediately concluded that the British were in hot pursuit, unaware that it was their fire that had stampeded Wayne's division. Stephen's men joined the mass exodus, and a minute later both divisions burst through the fog to collide with Maxwell's men who were still trying to reduce the Chew House. Panic and retreat now competed with each other for control of Washington's army.

Anthony Wayne was probably closer to resigning his command that morning than he had ever been. He was witness to the incredible spectacle of a shattered British division running for its life in one direction while his victorious but thoroughly confused Continentals were running for their lives in the opposite direction. Adam Stephen was reportedly variously to be lying under a fence drunk or riding among his troops trying to stop their retreat, his voice too weak to carry above the din. George Washington, who had been on the verge of ordering the army to advance on Philadelphia, could not believe his eyes. In total despair he could only order a general retreat. Howe and Cornwallis, aware that they had narrowly averted disaster, hastily gathered their forces and withdrew to Philadelphia. Washington then moved his headquarters to White Marsh just north of the city.

Although Washington had lost two major battles and the enemy was firmly ensconced in the young nation's capital city, Washington had one more ace to play. In the Delaware River seven miles down stream from Philadelphia, two forts had been built, Fort Mifflin, located on an island near the Pennsylvania shore, and Fort Mercer, located on the New Jersey bank. Washington figured that if he could hold these forts they would deny use of the Delaware River to the occupying British army in Philadelphia, thus making the city a liability for Howe rather than an asset.

In September immediately following the defeat at Brandywine Creek, Washington issued orders to strengthen the Delaware River forts. He appointed Henrich d'Arendt, reputed to be an engineer, to supervise the strengthening of the forts, but when d'Arendt saw the pitiful condition of Fort Mifflin he developed a mysterious illness and was unable to exercise his command. The job of putting the forts into defensible condition fell to d'Arendt's second in command, LtCol. Samuel Smith, a Baltimore native. Smith arrived at Fort Mifflin on 23 September and was appalled at the condition of the fort and its garrison. There was not enough of anything, the entire garrison was sick, and British warships were gathering at the mouth of the Delaware for a move up the river.

On 18 October Smith finally received some relief from Washington. Two Hundred healthy, vigorous members of the First Virginia Regiment were sent to Fort Mifflin. Among them was Benjamin Lemaster. Lemaster and his comrades must have wondered what they were supposed to do in a dilapidate fort marooned on an island which was actually nothing more than a mud bank deposited by the Schuylkill River. They did not have long to consider the incongruity of their situation.

On the night of 22 October a fleet of six British warships, including the sixty-four gun "Augusta", managed to warp their way past obstructions in the river and begin maneuvering into position for a dawn attack on Fort Mifflin. Unfortunately for the British, the "Augusta" and a smaller ship, the sixteen gun frigate "Merlin", ran aground on one of the numerous sand bars in the river. As the early morning mist lifted over the river, watchmen in the fort were horrified to see the British fleet drawn up before the fort in apparent battle formation. But their terror turned to glee a moment later when they saw the forty-gun frigate "Roebuck" move out of formation and throw a line to the "Augusta". Only then did the men in Fort Mifflin realize that the "Augusta" was stuck on a sand bar and was literally a sitting duck.

Running to their guns, a devastating bombardment was poured into the helpless ship from the fort's batteries, as well as from a floating artillery park under the direction of the minuscule but enthusiastic Pennsylvania Navy. The "Roebuck" was forced to halt its attempt to re-float the "Augusta" and concentrated instead on removing the crew of the stricken ship. Even during this rescue operation, the firing from the fort did not slacken. At length a fire broke out on the "Augusta" and burned out of control for nearly an hour. A few minutes after noon the "Augusta" exploded with a tremendous roar which shattered windows in Philadelphia seven miles away. Smoke from the explosion was visible at Washington's headquarters at White Marsh more than twenty miles away. Sixty British sailors and the "Augusta" chaplain were killed in the explosion.

Benjamin Lemaster was stationed at Fort Mifflin from 18 October to 15 November during which time the fort was under almost constant bombardment from British batteries located on the Pennsylvania shore. Many members of the garrison were wounded from flying splinters, slivers of shattered stone, and grape-shot, and for days at a time no supplies could reach the fort. On two occasions Col. Smith sent Lemaster from the fort to Washington's Headquarters at White Marsh to advise Washington on the general situation at the fort and to plea for more men and supplies. Although Washington desperately wanted to help, he had to send Lemaster away on both occasions with nothing more than verbal encouragement.

Fort Mifflin was evacuated on 15 November, 1777 and Philadelphia was conceded to the British. Washington moved his army from White Marsh to a narrow valley four miles farther west. Valley Forge became the Continental Army's winter home for 1777-1778, and the name has become synonymous with suffering and privation as well as extraordinary courage in the face of adversity. Benjamin Lemaster suffered at Valley Forge along with four thousand fellow volunteers, but he also was one of the troops who underwent professional training under the expert manipulations of Fredrick Von Steuben. Lemasters and the Continental Army emerged from Valley Forge the following spring much better men and soldiers for the experience.

During the winter at Valley Forge Washington reorganized the Continental Army. Adam Stephen was court marshalled and cashiered for his performance at Germantown. Command of his division was turned over to Peter Muhlenberg, a Lutheran minister from Woodstock, Shenandoah County, Virginia who had performed brilliantly at Germantown. The First, Fifth, Sixth, Ninth, and Thirteenth Virginia regiments were assigned to Muhlenberg, along with the Eighth Virginia Regiment which he himself had organized at the beginning of the war. The First Virginia was placed under the command of General William Woodford, formerly Colonel of the 2nd and 3rd Virginia regiments, and Richard Parker, who had performed well under William Maxwell at Brandywine Creek, was promoted to Colonel of the First Virginia Regiment. Benjamin Lemaster would serve under Parker's command for the rest of his career in the army.

VI. Benjamin Lemaster Has a Hot Time.

Sir Henry Clinton replaced William Howe as the British Commander in Chief at Philadelphia in May 1778. Clinton had new orders from London to abandon Philadelphia, go on the defensive in the north, and concentrate on conquering the former southern colonies. Clinton's first order of business was to get his army out of Philadelphia and back to

New York, a relatively simple task it seemed, but one which soon became enormously complicated. Clinton intended to simply load his men, horses and material on transports in the Delaware River and sail out Delaware Bay and up to New York. However, Philadelphia Loyalists took exception to the British decision to abandon the city and leave them at the mercy of revenge minded Patriots. They demanded that Clinton evacuate them along with their families and as much of their property as they could carry. Since Loyalist support was a key element in the British plan to win back the colonies, Clinton felt obliged to take care of the Loyalists. By the time Philadelphia's Tories were loaded aboard Clinton's ships there was no room left for Clinton's soldiers. The decision was then made to march the army across New Jersey to Staten Island.

Clinton began his march on 16 June 1778 and by 18 June he had his entire army across the Delaware and strung out for twelve miles across the New Jersey countryside. Hardly believing his good fortune, Washington moved his army, swollen with spring recruits, from Valley Forge and crossed the Delaware at the same time as Clinton. The American army moved through New Jersey on a path parallel to the British army awaiting an opportunity to strike.

On June 28 Washington felt that he had the exhausted British army where he wanted it, grouped around Monmouth Court House and still twenty miles from the coast. For several days afternoon temperatures had approached one hundred degrees. The British troops were encumbered with winter uniforms and heavy packs. Washington was certain that they could not withstand a sustained attack in force, and he expected significant results.

Washington sent Charles Lee, only recently exchanged after a winter of captivity in New York, at the head of a 5,000 man force to provoke the British to action. Among the brigades under Lee's command was that of William Woodford which included the First Virginia Regiment and Benjamin Lemaister. Since the day of the Battle of Monmouth Court House historians have been plagued by contradictory accounts of the action. Charles Lee did not approve of Washington's plan to bring the British to battle, and at the first sign of resistance he ordered a general withdrawal claiming that the American soldiers could not stand against the British professionals. An unpleasant confrontation occurred on the field when Washington accosted Lee and demanded an explanation for the withdrawal. Lee was unable to explain things to Washington's satisfaction, and he was sent to the rear in disfavor. Later Lee would be court-martialed and cashiered for his behavior at Monmouth.

Washington then took personal command and turned a dispirited retreat into something else. Woodford's brigade joined a division led by William Alexander and formed a line on the American left just in time to be subjected to a furious assault and artillery bombardment from the dreaded 42 Infantry Regiment, the "Black Watch", made up of kilted Scottish Highlanders. Alexander's and Woodford's men held to their great surprise, and when the Highlanders showed a moment of indecision, the First Virginia under Parker and the First and Third New Hampshire regiments under Enoch Poor, dashed out from behind trees and stone walls and charged the startled Scotsmen. With Von Steuben's training fresh in their minds, the Continentals discharged their muskets and then charged with the bayonet. The screaming bagpipes and doom invoking drums of the Highlanders did not inspire their normal terror in this instance. The invincible Scotsmen retreated in disarray and were eliminated as an active force for the remainder of the day.

At five o'clock in the evening Washington called on Woodford's brigade again. The British had broken contact and were trying to get organized for a general withdrawal. Washington decided that a strong pursuit might destroy the entire British army. Woodford's brigade was joined by Enoch Poor's New Hampshire regiments and Thomas Clark's North Carolina brigade, and they were sent forward to give chase to the virtually incapacitated British. However, before the Continentals could catch up with the straggling redcoats, they began dropping out of ranks from heat exhaustion. As darkness descended the British were able to limp away.

The Battle of Monmouth Court House occurred on the hottest 28 June remembered in New Jersey. The temperature soared to over one hundred degrees in early afternoon at the peak of the battle. Henry Clinton later reported sixty of his British troops died from heat stroke. The Americans claimed to have suffered at least thirty-seven deaths from the heat and at least one hundred others required hospitalization. It appears from Benjamin Lemaister's muster records that he was one of these heat stroke victims. William Lewis's muster roll for the month of July

shows that Benjamin Lemaster was sick and in the hospital at White Plains. It is likely that Benjamin's illness was caused by the extreme heat at the Battle of Monmouth Court House, and it took him a month to recover from the effects of it.

VII. Benjamin Lemaster Goes Home.

By August 1778 Benjamin Lemaster had recovered from the effects of the Battle of Monmouth Court House and had rejoined his regiment at White Plains, the scene of his first service in the war nearly two years earlier. Following Henry Clinton's withdrawal to New York, Washington had strung out his troops in a huge semi-circle around New York City. Not being privy to Clinton's orders to concentrate on the south, Washington could only sit and watch the British while trying to anticipate what they might do.

There were many potential targets in the New York area which might be attractive to the British. The entire state of New Jersey was American occupied again. West Point, the formidable post on the Hudson River would be a valuable conquest. Strikes into lightly protected Connecticut were possible. Washington was hard pressed to watch all these avenues of attack, and his troops were shuffled around at an exhausting pace. During the period from August 1778 until the spring of 1779 Benjamin Lemaster served under three different captains at several different outposts. He stood guard duty at White Plains, was stationed at nearby Camp Robinson for a time, suffered through another winter camp, this time at Bound Brook, New Jersey, and he started the spring of 1779 on lookout duty at Sandy Hook, New Jersey. This last assignment must have been particularly boring. Sandy Hook was an elongated sand bar attached to the New Jersey coast and which jutted directly north into Lower New York Bay. The southern tip of Long Island and Verrazano Narrows were visible from Sandy Hook, and Washington posted lookouts there to keep him advised on the movement into and out of New York harbor. During his stint at Sandy Hook, Benjamin Lemaster had nothing to report.

The last muster roll on which Benjamin Lemaster appears as a member of the First Virginia Regiment was recorded on 7 May, 1779. He drew pay on that day for service in the month of April, and then disappears from the records of William Lewis's company. In Lemaster's application for a pension filed in 1832 he stated that he thought he had left the army sometime in 1780. However, muster and payroll records indicate that he completed his term of service and went home for good in May 1779.

Benjamin Lemaster got out just in time. On 12 May his old company commander, William Lewis, was promoted to Major and transferred to the Tenth Virginia Infantry. Then in December of that year, William Woodford, Lemaster's last brigade commander, was ordered to Charleston, South Carolina to assist Benjamin Lincoln in protecting that city against an imminent British invasion. Woodford took along with him the First and Tenth Virginia regiments. On 12 May 1780 Woodford and his entire brigade, along with the remainder of the Southern Army were surrendered by Lincoln. Woodford and Lewis along with their men were imprisoned in New York for the remainder of the war. Woodford died in prison on 13 November, 1780. At that they were luckier than Richard Parker, Lemaster's colonel during the final year of his service. At eight o'clock in the evening on 24 April, Parker looked out over one of the parapets which had been built around Charleston and a British sharpshooter drilled him in the forehead with a well placed shot. As Henry Lee recalled the scene in his memoirs, Parker "fell dead in the trenches, embalmed in the tears of his faithful soldiers, and honored by the regret of the whole army." Fortunately for Benjamin Lemaster he was not present to shed any tears for his fallen colonel. Three weeks after Parker's death the army was surrendered.

There were, of course, thousands of soldiers in the Continental Army whose service records equal that of Benjamin Lemaster, but Lemaster's record is a credit to him, the officers under whom he served and the "rabble in arms" of which he was a part. He stayed with the army when the temptation to put the rising sun behind him and head for the serenity of the Monongahela Valley must have been overwhelming. He starved and froze through Morristown in 1777, Valley Forge in 1778, and Bound Brook in 1779 and emerged as a professional soldier. He survived personal and national depression during the humiliating retreat through New Jersey in 1776, and participated in the exultation after the victories at Trenton, Princeton and Monmouth. He was wounded in battle fighting for his country, and he carried messages in person to his Commander-in-Chief. He underwent the terror and strain of being subjected to constant artillery bombardment at Fort Mifflin. He overcame the personal embarrassment of running away from the

enemy by joining in a charge which routed the most feared soldiers in the British Army. In those days the army didn't give medals. Had they, Benjamin Lemaster would have earned his share. He was like many before and after him, an unsung hero who helped earn and preserve our freedom.

There are several references other than the above biographical history which deal with Benjamin Lemaster and his Revolutionary War record. One of these is the Revolutionary War Pension Files in the National Archives, Benjamin Lemaster, file S18490, a Sergeant of the Virginia Line. There are several references to Benjamin Lemaster in the Lineage Book of the Daughters of the American Revolution. None of the data therein conflict with the foregoing.

There is considerable material on Benjamin Lemaster in the book titled "Lemaster, U.S.A., 1639-1965" authored by Howard Marshal Lemaster and Margaret Herberger published in 1965. This book is the product of many sources and contributors and is generally well referenced, and where appropriate, well caveated. For instance, "Though we have very little on the ancestry of Benjamin Lemaster, tradition says that his father was William Lemaster and his mother Lady Catherine Graham." The information was derived from a grand daughter of Benjamin, and is wrong. The book also states:

He applied for pension from Nicholas County November 13, 1832 stating that he enlisted in the army in 1777 with Mr. Culp, a recruiting officer for Capt. William Lewis. He enlisted in Warm Springs, Berkeley County, (now Berkeley Springs, Morgan County) although he was a resident of Monongalia County, which had been established just the year before, and probably then included the present Nicholas County. He enlisted for three years and thought he left the Army in 1780. He marched with Capt. Lewis to White Plains, New Jersey where he joined the command of General George Washington. He was in the Battles of Monmouth and Princeton where he received a slight wound in the right ankle. He conveyed to hospital in Philadelphia, (tradition says he met his future wife, Rebecca Martin there). After recovery he joined the Army in Pennsylvania where he was in the Battles of Germantown and Brandywine and spent a month at the siege of Fort Mifflin, during which time he rode express for Major Smith to General Washington at White Marsh. The affidavit for pension was signed by Andrew Friend and William Given, Justice of the Peace.

His pension was issued Oct 15, 1833....

His petition was granted when he requested Nicholas County Court, term of 1818, to notify War Dept. to correct his name on some of their papers from "LaMasters" to "Lemaster".

Mrs. Rita Fleener of Fort Dodge, Iowa, a descendent of the Boggs family, has also provided information relating to Benjamin Lemaster. She has provided a copy of a clipping from either a newspaper or a book that discusses Benjamin Lemaster. Unfortunately she did not provide the source. The clipping is quoted in full.

Lemaster, french. Benjamin Lemaster, a Revolutionary soldier, enlisted in Pennsylvania, after the war came to Augusta County, Virginia, and later settled on Hutchinson's Creek in Nicholas County, about the year 1790.

He was wounded in battle, was with Washington at Valley Forge, and at times served as a courier for General Washington. In June 1818 he filed his affidavit for a pension as such soldier, and the County Court in its certificate to the War Department gave the name LaMasters. The certificate was returned by the Pension Department, and the name was corrected to Lemaster as it appeared on the Army Rolls. He had a large family of ten daughters: Polly Boggs, Nancy Boggs, Jane Boggs, Rebecca Rader, Elvira Rader, Agnes Frame, Kezia Campbell, Catherine Given, Charity Stephenson, and Elizabeth Robinson. He left no son to perpetuate his name, but numerous descendants of the daughters still live in the county. He lived to a good age and lies buried on his old farm land.

Benjamin Lemaster did marry Rebecca Ann Martin in 1779, shortly after he returned from the war. That he met her while he was in the hospital in Philadelphia is probably incorrect. Rebecca Ann Martin was the daughter of John Martin and Elizabeth Goldsborough. She was two years younger than Benjamin, having been born on 9 September, 1758.

The data provided by Thomas Miller contains an extensive genealogy of the Martin family going back to 1575 in England. The earliest known Martin was named William Martin, born in 1575 somewhere in England. All that is known of his family is that in about 1600 he married an Elizabeth Maunsell who had been born in about 1580. Their only known child was Thomas Martin born in about 1605. This Thomas Martin married in about 1625 in Dorchestershire, England. Of this marriage there are two known sons, another Thomas and a John. Both were born in Park Pale, Dorchestershire, England and both of these men migrated to America.

This third Thomas Martin was probably the first Martin to come to America and the Maryland Colony. He was born in 1629, but did not marry until 1663 when he was 34 years of age. The marriage took place in Talbot County, Maryland. Talbot County lies on the east side of the Chesapeake Bay, and it was here that Thomas Martin very likely indentured himself to one of the Maryland feudal barons for a period of at least seven years, the reason for his late marriage. He therefore probably arrived in Maryland some time around 1657 or so, a year or two earlier than Abraham Lemaster.

This third Thomas Martin married Elizabeth Day who had also been born in England, Hertfordshire in 1636. Of this marriage there were born six children, four sons and two daughters. Of the four sons, yet another son was named Thomas, born in 1672 in Talbot County, Maryland. To make the name confusion even more profound, in 1701 this fourth Thomas Martin took a wife of the name Anne Thomas, and named yet another son Thomas Martin!

The fifth Thomas Martin was born on 24 July, 1704 in Talbot County and on 14 January 1734 he married an Elizabeth Goldsborough. Elizabeth Goldsborough is thought to be the illegitimate daughter of Robert Goldsmith and a woman whose name is thought to have been Rebecca. Robert Goldsborough's wife, Elizabeth Greenberry, had a daughter, also named Elizabeth, who died at the age of 8. There were no other children of this marriage, but they did raise the other Elizabeth, giving her the name of Goldsborough as though she was of the family. In 1752 Thomas Martin died, leaving Elizabeth (Goldsborough) Martin a childless widow.

In 1756, Thomas Martin's brother John Martin, married his brother's widow Elizabeth (Goldsborough). This marriage took place in St. Peter's Parish, Talbot County, Maryland. It appears that they, like the Lemaster family, took part in the movement west after the end of the French and Indian war in 1758. Their daughter, Rebecca Ann Martin was born on 9 September of that year, though her birthplace is not known. Both John Martin and his wife Elizabeth died prior to 1790 in Morgantown, Virginia. Their daughter, Rebecca Ann, had become the wife of Benjamin Lemaster in 1779, probably in or near Morgantown, Virginia.

As noted in previous references, Benjamin Lemaster and Rebecca Ann Martin had an incredible string of ten daughters and no sons. The first daughter Elizabeth was born in 1780, while the last, Elvira, was born in 1804. Sometime between the first birth and the last, Benjamin and Rebecca moved from the Morgantown area to Nicholas County, West Virginia. There are two references as to when that was. The newspaper clipping noted above says that they moved to Nicholas County in about 1790, while the book "Early Settlers of Nicholas County" by Colonel Edward Campbell states that he settled there in 1798 or 1799. It is therefore likely that at least the first five daughters were born near Morgantown, Virginia, though as many as seven of them could have been born there.

The geopolitical boundaries of the area where Benjamin Lemaster finally settled are very confusing. Over time the boundaries changed not only from Virginia to West Virginia, but the county names changed from Augusta to Monongalia to Randolph to Nicholas to Braxton and possibly Harrison and Kanawha. It is clear though, that while Benjamin's address changed from time to time, he still smoked his pipe on the same porch of the same house. And it was near this house that the family of Francis Boggs settled. Three of Francis Boggs' sons married three of Benjamin Lemaster's daughters. The first marriage took place in 1799 between James Boggs and the second oldest daughter Mary ("Polly"). John Boggs married the third oldest daughter Nancy Anna in 1801, and Charles Boggs married the fifth oldest daughter Jane in 1809.

The second marriage, that between John Boggs and Nancy Anna Lemaster produced seven children, two of which, James R. Boggs and Josiah C. Boggs, married two of the daughters of Benjamin Lemaster's brother, Thomas Lemaster. James R. Boggs married Jerusha Lemaster and Josiah C. Boggs married Louisa Lemaster. These marriages were therefore

between first cousins, once removed, with the common ancestor being Isaac Lemaster. The next chapter will present the story of the Boggs family and how they came to this point and where these Boggs men and their Lemaster wives came to be related to the Scott family.

THE BOGGS FAMILY

The Boggs family became related to the Scott family through the marriage of three of David R. Scott's children to three of the children of James R. Boggs. These marriages took place in the 1850's in and near Albia, Monroe County, Iowa. The following is the history of the Boggs family.

Again, we owe much of what follows to the work of Mr. Thomas Miller of Berea, Ohio who has provided extensive data on the early history of the Boggs and Lemaster families. This author has done little or no research on these family lines beyond about 1800, and extends his gratitude to Mr. Miller and his fellow researchers for that part of their work presented here. Indeed, what follows is only a limited set of the information provided. Mr. Miller's data base includes some 4400 Boggs and related family names. In addition, correspondence relating to his data base has provided additional insights, and confidence, in the data provided. It is with that confidence that what follows is presented as meeting our criteria for "preponderance of evidence", and while the story may not be completely accurate, it is very likely as accurate and complete as our own research could have developed.

The Boggs family line begins, surprisingly enough, with a man named John Livingston who was born in Scotland in about 1625. He was a Covenanter. A Covenanter was a Scottish Prysbyterian who supported the Solemn League and Covenant intended to defend and extend Prysbyterianism. In 1648 the Covenanters were defeated by Cromwell at Preston and by 1660 the Covenanters were being severely persecuted. The persecution resulted in exile to Ireland. In Ireland John Livingston and other Covenanters settled in the bogs near Londonderry, and John, along with a possible brother named Hugh, changed their name to Boggs, probably to reflect their new location, and also possibly to avoid further persecution. John had at least one known son, James Boggs, who was born in 1667 in the bogs near Londonderry.

James Boggs married and raised a family in Londonderry, Ireland. The name of his wife is not known. However, in 1724, James Boggs, now a widower, sailed for America with his children, two daughters and seven sons. He was one of the many Ulster Scots who migrated to Pennsylvania during this period, landing at the port of New Castle, Delaware in 1724. On 17 November, 1726 he bought 100 acres at White Clay Creek in Newcastle County, Delaware. That he was able to transport a family of ten to America and then to purchase 100 acres of land after his arrival implies that he was a man of some means in Ireland, at least he did not leave there a pauper. His decision to emigrate was very likely based on the same factors that drove most of the Scotch-Irish to leave Ireland for a new opportunity in a new land, hatred of and by the Irish, and persecution by the English. James Boggs' will was dated 9 February, 1736, so he died probably some short time after that.

James Boggs second oldest son was named Francis. He was born in Londonderry, Ireland in 1702 and migrated to America with his father in 1724. James was married when he arrived in America, his wife was named Agnes, and she too had been born in Londonderry, Ireland in 1702. They were married in 1720. Their first two children were born in Ireland, while their third, James Boggs, was born in New Castle County, Delaware. There were therefore at least thirteen in the Boggs family on the trip to America in 1724.

When his father James died, Francis Boggs moved his family to Doe Run, East Fallowfield Township, Chester County, Pennsylvania. He settled on the Brandywine River and became a miller. Francis and Agnes had seven children, six sons and one daughter. Francis Boggs, along with a man named John Filson, founded the Doe Run Presbyterian Church on Strasburg Road. Francis died there in Fallowfield Township in 1763.

Francis Boggs' third son, James Boggs Sr., was born in New Castle County, Delaware in 1725. At the age of 26 he married Margaret Jane Sharp in the Old Swedes Church in New Castle County on 25 January, 1751. The proliferation of Boggs sons continued. James and Margaret Boggs had nine children, eight of them sons and only one daughter. All but the last two were born in Chester County, Pennsylvania. The last two, Andrew and Alexander, were born in Greenbrier, Augusta County, Virginia. James Boggs Sr. had moved to Greenbrier between 1765 and 1767. He lived there for the remainder of his life, dying in February of 1806. His wife Margaret died some time after 1816.

Francis Boggs was the second son James Boggs Sr. Francis was born in Chester County, Pennsylvania in 1754. He migrated to Greenbrier in Augusta County, Virginia with his father and in about 1776 married Mary Clendennin who had been born in Greenbrier County in 1761. Prior to his marriage, Francis Boggs served with General Lewis as an Indian Scout and was present, along with several of his brothers, at the Battle of Point Pleasant in 1774 during Dunmore's War. At a later point in his life he applied for a Revolutionary War Pension, but was rejected because of lack of enough service time in a regular Continental Army unit. However, six of the Boggs brothers did participate in the Revolutionary War at one time or another. In 1800 Francis migrated to what is now central West Virginia, ending up in what is now Braxton County. All of his children, except one were born in Greenbrier. Only the last Miriam, was born in West Virginia.

Francis and Mary (Clendennin) Boggs also had a large family, eleven children total, but a more balanced ratio of five sons and six daughters. The genealogy of their mother, Mary Clendennin, is also provided by Thomas Miller.

THE CLENNENNIN FAMILY

The Clendennin family begins with Lord Adam Clendennin, who was born in about 1650 in Dangholm, Scotland. He was Lord of the Barony of Bartalloch Castle, and not much else is known of him. He had a son, William Clendennin, born in 1680 at Staplegorton, Dangholm, Scotland. William married Ann Kirkpatrick, who was also born in 1680, and together they had seven children, all but one being born in Dumfries, Scotland. William was driven from Scotland during the Jacobite Rebellion in 1715, and he and his family went to County Down, Ireland, where William died in 1724.

Charles Clendennin was the fifth child of William and Ann Clendennin. He was born in about 1712 in Dumfries, Scotland and went to County Down with his father in 1715. Charles Clendennin then migrated to America, though when is not known. He apparently entered the New World through Baltimore, and then moved on to Chester County, Pennsylvania. From there he went to Lancaster County, Pennsylvania, where he married Mary Ann Patterson in 1739. There were ten children of this marriage, seven sons and three daughters. The second son, Adam Clendennin, was born in Augusta County, Virginia in 1740, so Charles Clendennin and his wife Mary had moved to Augusta County shortly after their marriage. Mary Ann died in 1788 in Spring Creek, Greenbrier County, Virginia. Charles lived his last years at what would become Fort Lee, which his son George built, and which George Boggs named in honor of his father, Charleston, now the Capital of West Virginia. Charles died there in about 1793.

James Clendennin was the oldest son of Charles and Mary Ann (Patterson) Clendennin. He was born in 1739 in Lancaster County, Pennsylvania. He married Margaret Anderson in 1758 after he had moved to Greenbrier County with his father. Margaret Anderson was born in 1742 and was a widow with a daughter named Hannah when she and James were married. She bore seven more children to James, the second of which was Mary Clendennin who was born in 1761 and who married Francis Boggs in 1776 as noted above.

Francis Boggs and Mary Clendennin had a large family of ten children, five sons and five daughters. The oldest three sons, James Clendennin Boggs, John Boggs, and Charles C. Boggs Jr. all married daughters of Benjamin Lemasters in Kanawha and Nicholas County, West Virginia. James Clendennin married Mary Lemaster in 1799, John Boggs married Nancy Ann Lemaster in 1801, and Charles C. Boggs Jr. married Jane or "Jennie" Lemaster in 1809.

John Boggs had been born on 16 February, 1780, while his wife Nancy Ann Lemaster was born on 31 October, 1784. They too had a large family of 7 children, five sons and two daughters. Two of these, James R. Boggs and Josiah Clendennin Boggs were both born in what is now Braxton County, West Virginia and both married Lemaster women. James married Jerusha Ann Lemaster on 21 August, 1828, and Josiah married Louisa Lemaster in 1829. These were the daughters of Thomas Lemaster, their great uncle. These marriages were therefore between first cousins, once removed.

Three of the Boggs sons, James R., Josiah, and Lemaster Martin along with their families, joined the migration to the west. They left Braxton County in 1839 and were part of a group that included a man named William Scott, no known relation to the David R. Scott line, and a fifth man by the name of J. B. Graves. The three Boggs brothers had several children before they left for Iowa. James R. and Josiah each had four children and Lemaster had five.

This migration began in what was then Virginia, the present state of West Virginia not coming into being until 1863 during the Civil War. The decision by the Boggs' to migrate was the lure of new land and also may have been motivated in part by the desire of the West Virginians to have a state of their own. Their economy and life style differed greatly from the eastern half of the state. The western people were separated from Colonial Virginia by the mountains and the eastern people controlled state government by virtue of numbers and wealth. The western people seceded from Virginia in 1863 and sided with the North during the Civil War based on these differences and the slavery question. It is noted that these people were Scotch-Irish. It is therefore not surprising that people from this area would be among those seeking new opportunities in the west. The Boggs brothers, and incidentally many of the their Lemaster neighbors, joined the migration west.

They arrived on the west bank of the Mississippi River in 1839 in what later became Van Buren County, Iowa. The group stayed there for a time, the lands further west not yet opened for settlement by the government. In 1841 all three Boggs wives bore children in this county. In 1843 land to the west was opened up and the Boggs brothers, along with William Scott and J. B. Graves moved into what became Monroe County, Iowa. They were among the first white families to arrive. Josiah's daughter Joanna, born in 1843, was the first white child born in the county. The Boggs' were a prolific family, the three Boggs brothers having a total of 27 children among them, thereby contributing heavily to the early Iowa population.

Rita Fleener, a descendant of Josiah Boggs, has provided a copy of a letter her grandmother wrote to her relating the story of the arrival of Josiah Boggs in the Albia area. Josiah had arrived at the Des Moines River in May of 1843 near Eddyville, Iowa and had to ford the stream. He drove his oxen pulled wagon across and then swam back across the river. He then brought his wife and children across swimming with each one on his back until he had them all across. He subsequently met some Indians and went with them to an Indian village located a bit to the northeast of the present town of Albia. The location seemed a good spot, and he settled there, buying the land from the government and receiving a Patent on it. This patent is written on parchment and can be viewed in the Albia Historical Museum. Josiah's brother, James R. Boggs also acquired land there, his property being a mile or so west of Josiah's.

As previously noted, the Boggs brothers had large families. Josiah Boggs was the father of thirteen children, five sons and eight daughters. James R. Boggs was the father of nine children, six sons and three daughters. It was with the James R. Boggs family that the Scott family intermarried, three marriages in all.

It is not known if Lemaster Boggs purchased land near Albia or not. Most of what is known of him comes from an Albia newspaper clipping found in the James M. Scott family bible owned by the George Robert Scott family of Casper, Wyoming. It reads as follows.

C. Boggs of our city received a telegram yesterday morning which conveyed the sad intelligence that his father, L. M. Boggs, who lives near Woodburn, Clark County, had died Tuesday evening. L. M. Boggs would have been 93 years of age today had he lived. He and three brothers and William Scott and J. B. Graves were the first white families to move into Monroe County. They came in 1843 and Mr. Boggs settled three miles north of Albia.

Mr. Boggs resided in the county until 1848, and is identified as one of the active pioneer leaders of the county. He leaves many friends among our early settlers. He will be buried today near Osceola.

Rita Fleener records his birth as 29 January, 1808 and his death as 24 January, 1899. This would indicate he was nearly 91 when he died, not the 93 reported in the article, which was apparently published on 29 January, 1899.

James R. Boggs died on 30 August, 1848, his death occurring one month before his last son was born. The cause of death is not known. The son he never knew was named James R. Boggs, no doubt in his memory. His wife Jerusha was left with eight children, the oldest but 17 years of age. Their oldest child, John Boggs had lived to only the age of three.

In spite of the fact that she had no husband, it appears that Jerusha Boggs remained on the land she had settled with James R. In the 1850 Iowa census we find that Jerusha is recorded as the head of the household, the man of house being her oldest surviving son George L. Boggs, then 19 years of age. The rest of the Boggs children are there, Catherine, Elizabeth, Abram, Katurah, Jackson, Anderson, and finally James at age 2.

Michael Lower arrived with his family some time around 1850 and had settled on land adjacent to the James R. and Josiah Boggs properties. Michael Lower had lost his wife either shortly before or after arriving in the Albia area. Michael and Jerusha were married on 16 September, 1851. In due time they had a child of their own, a daughter was born in 1853 to whom they gave the unusual name of Desdemona Indiana. She lived only to the age of 10, dying in 1863.

In 1917 an affidavit was recorded in the Monroe County records by Perry Boggs, the oldest son of Josiah Boggs, and at the time of the recording, aged about 87 years. It is not known why this affidavit was recorded but it has information of interest to the Scott genealogy. It is quoted in part.

I, Perry Boggs, being first duly sworn do depose and say that I was personally acquainted with James R. Boggs, and that he died on or about September 1848, leaving as his sole and only heirs, his widow, Jerusha Boggs afterwards intermarried with Michael Lower, and his children, George L. Boggs, Catherine Boggs, Elizabeth A. Boggs, Abner S. Boggs, Keturah Boggs, Jackson Boggs, Addison Boggs, and James R. Boggs, who were all minors at the time of death of the said James R. Boggs their father.

This data agrees with the Iowa State Census of 1856 which shows that indeed Jerusha was now the wife of Michael Lower, and at the time of the census, there are five Lower children and four of the youngest James R. Boggs children living in the Lower Household.

In 1851, the David R. Scott family arrived in the Albia area. It is not known exactly where the Scotts originally settled. David R. Scott had purchased land some distance north of Albia on his arrival but he also acquired the land originally owned by James R. Boggs. The land records show that title to this land passed to David R. Scott in 1855, but since James R. Boggs had died in 1848, David R. Scott may have moved onto the property much earlier. This location would have made the Scott and Lower families next door neighbors. A possession date prior to 1855 seems to be the case since marriages between the Scott and Boggs families began in 1853. David R. Scott's oldest son, James Moore Scott married the oldest Boggs daughter Catherine in March of that year. In 1856 the oldest Boggs son, George L. Boggs married the oldest Scott daughter, Sarah Ann. Also in the year 1856, David R. Scott's second son Alexander married Jane Boggs, daughter of Josiah Boggs.

The Alexander Scott family remained on the Scott property and began their family. Two sons were born in 1857 and 1858. However in July of 1861, Jane (Boggs) Scott died, the cause of death not known. She was buried in the Boggs Cemetery on Josiah Boggs' property. In November of 1862, Alexander Scott took a second wife, this time Keturah Catherine Boggs, the third oldest daughter of James R. Boggs, cousin of Jane Boggs, and a sister-in-law by virtue of the previous Scott/Boggs marriages. Alexander and Keturah left the Albia area in 1865, returned in about 1874, and finally moved from the area to western Iowa in 1879.

Louisa (Lemaster) Boggs, wife of Josiah Boggs, passed away on 25 March, 1858. She was buried in the Boggs Cemetery on Josiah's farm. Josiah did not remarry. He lived until 1888. Portions of his obituary are as follows.

Another of the pioneer settlers of Monroe County passed away last week. Josiah C. Boggs peacefully and quietly breathed his last at 2:30 o'clock Saturday morning, May 12, 1888 at the residence of his daughter, Mrs. William Miller.....

In his demise, Monroe County loses one of its earliest and most respected citizens. He was born in what is now Braxton County, West Virginia on 23 December, 1805 and was married to Louisa Lemaster, October 1, 1829. In March of 1839 they came to Iowa and in May of 1843 came to this county and located on a farm a mile northeast of town which became their permanent home and which they never parted until they left all things terrestrial. She was born in Mason Co., West Virginia December 5, 1810 and died March 25, 1858.

At an early day in the history of this county, Mr. Boggs was converted at a Christian meeting and united with the M. E. Church. He always lived an exemplary life although for some years he had not attended church. In politics he was originally a Whig. Even after the organization of the Republican Party, he was an earnest and conscientious adherent to its principles.

Funeral services were conducted at the old homestead by Rev. M. Carrier at 2 o'clock Sunday afternoon, May 13th and all that remained of Josiah C. Boggs was interred on the farm, having passed away at the good old age of 82 years, 5 months, and 29 days.

Mr. Boggs leaves a large number of descendants to mourn the loss of an honored sire, ten living children, at least 24 grand children, at least 17 great grand children.....

There is also a second obituary from another paper, shorter than the one quoted above. It adds no further information of interest and so will not be quoted here.

Michael Lower, Jerusha (Lemaster) Boggs second husband, lived until 28 April, 1875 at which time he died and was buried in the Lower Cemetery on the Lower property. He was probably buried there with his first wife. The Lower Cemetery was destroyed by the city of Albia in the late 1970's or early 1980's to build a Little League Baseball field on the northern edge of Albia. The graves were not moved to a new location. A gravel road leading to the ball diamond is thought to pass over this cemetery. There is a part of a single gravestone at the side of this road, only the base of the stone and a part of the upper portion remain. There is an unreadable inscription on the upper part and it is not possible to identify who the marker was for. An almost identical gravestone can be found on the south side of the County Courthouse in Albia. It too has an unreadable inscription but cannot be identified. A local man explained that this marker, now used to keep the courthouse door open in the summer, came from the Lower Cemetery.

Jerusha (Lemaster) (Boggs) Lower was 67 years old when Michael Lower died in 1875. After his death, she may have lived for some time with her step-son John Lower, who became heir to the Lower property north of Albia. She also may have lived for a time during this period with Alexander and Keturah Scott who had returned to Iowa in about 1875 and were living in the Monroe County area until 1879. Indeed, she is living with Alexander and Keturah in Montgomery County in western Iowa in 1880 as recorded in the Federal Census of that year. She no doubt went to western Iowa with them.

There is a photograph of Jerusha (Lemaster) (Boggs) Lower in the possession of Velma Case of Tenville, Iowa, one of Jerusha's grand daughters. On the back is written "Grandma Lower, age 73, 4th of November, 1880". This picture was taken by a professional photographer by the name of Z. P. McMillen in Red Oak, Iowa. The occasion for the photograph was Jerusha's 73rd birthday, she having been born on 4 November, 1808. Jerusha probably lived in the Alexander Scott household until about 1883 when she returned to the Albia area to live with James and Catherine (Boggs) Scott until she died in 1891.

Jerusha cannot be located in the 1885 Iowa census with either the Scott, Boggs, or Lower families. It is fairly certain however, that she had returned to the Albia area around 1883 and was probably living with her daughter Catherine (Boggs) Scott at the time of that census. Jerusha passed away on 22 November, 1891. Her obituary has been located in the Josiah Boggs family bible, now owned by Mildred Miller of Albia, Iowa and quoted in full.

Jerusha Lemaster Boggs Lower--1891

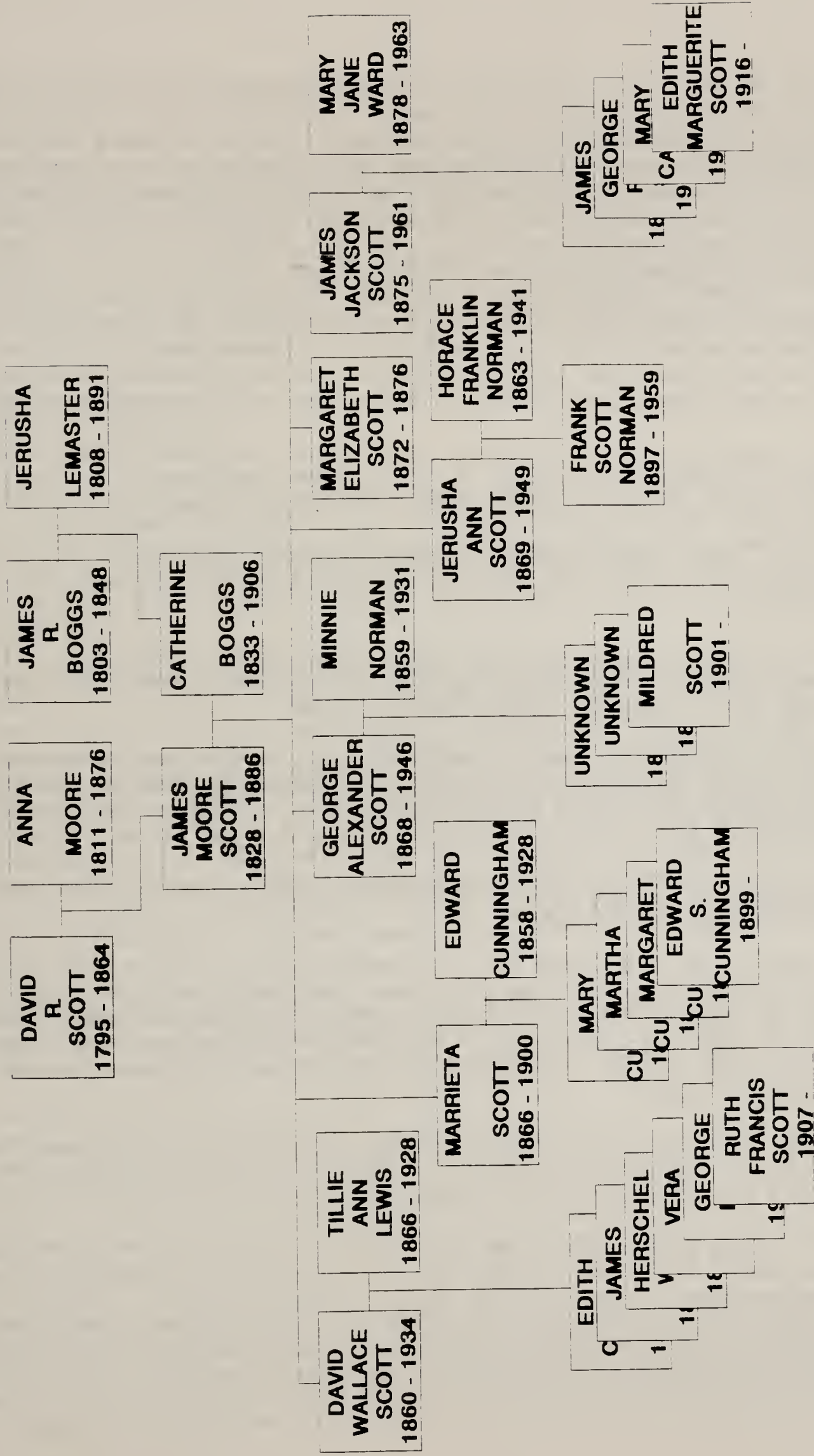
On Sunday morning, November 22, occurred the death of Mrs. Jerusha Lower, by heart failure, aged 83 years and 18 days. The deceased, formerly Jerusha Lemaster, was born in Mason County, West Virginia, November 4, 1808; was married to James R. Boggs in 1828 and moved to Iowa in 1839 and to Monroe County in 1843. Mr. Boggs died August 30, 1848 leaving five sons and three daughters, all of whom are living. On September 16, 1851, Mrs. Boggs was married to Michael Lower, who died April 29, 1875, after which time she lived with her children. For the last 8 years she has lived with her daughter, Mrs. Scott of this county. Reverend E. B. Linn of the Presbyterian Church

of Albia preached a very impressive sermon, after which she was buried in the Albia Cemetery. She bore her sickness, which was of long duration, with all the fortitude of a true Christian. She was a kind and loving mother, a friend to all. She leaves a host of relatives and friends who mourn her truly. But our loss is her gain. The bereaved ones have the sympathy of all.

The paper in which the obituary appeared was not noted in the Josiah Boggs bible insertion, that insertion being made several years after Josiah's death in 1888. It is certain however, that the obituary is from an Albia paper and the reference to Mrs. Scott with whom Jerusha had lived for the eight years prior to her death, would have been Catherine (Boggs) Scott, then the widow of James Moore Scott. James Scott had passed away in 1886.

Jerusha's grave site in the Albia Cemetery has been located as reported. It is somewhat surprising that she is buried with James R. Boggs and not with Michael Lower. Interestingly, the stone which marks both Jerusha's and James R.'s graves uses her Jerusha Lower name rather than Boggs. The reason for this may have been tradition, that a person is buried with their first wed spouse, and so her burial is with James R. Boggs, though he preceded her in death by 43 years. Another reason may have been that Michael Lower was probably buried with his first wife, and also in a private cemetery. The care of the grave-site would therefore not be assured. She, or Catherine Scott, may have therefore decided on the burial with James R. Boggs.

FAMILY OF JAMES MOORE SCOTT



JAMES MOORE SCOTT

James Moore Scott, eldest son of David R. and Anna Scott, was born 22 June, 1828 in Putnam County, Indiana. The birth date is from his gravestone in the Albia Cemetery as is his date of death. James M. Scott came to Albia, Iowa with his father and the rest of his father's family in 1851. James apparently did not always farm. He is listed in the 1850 Indiana census as a "Brickmason", a trade he must have learned and pursued in that state. His 1886 death record in Iowa states that he was a "Bricklayer". However, he is listed as a farmer in two census records, so he likely pursued both trades throughout his life.

James Moore Scott married Catherine Boggs, oldest daughter of James R. and Jerusha Boggs in March of 1853. Catherine had been born in Virginia, now West Virginia, in 1833 and migrated to Iowa with her father's family in 1839, arriving in Monroe County in 1843. Theirs was the first of three marriages between the children of David R. Scott and James R. Boggs. James and Catherine lived in Monroe County their entire married lives.

The 1860 census shows that James and Catherine were living in Mantua Township of Monroe County in that year. Their oldest son, David Wallace Scott, born in 1860, is also listed in that census, as is a Sarah Ann Burkhall. The Burkhall child is five years old and the reason for her living in the James Scott household is not known.

In the 1870 census, James and Catherine are found in Troy Township of Monroe County. In this census are listed David, age 10, Mary, age 5, George, age 2, and Jennie who is 7 months old. The name Jennie is probably a nickname for Jerusha Ann.

In the 1880 census, James and Catherine are found in Guilford Township of Monroe County. David is no longer living at home since he is not listed. However, the family now consists of Mary, age 15, George, age 12, Jerusha, age 9, and James, age 4. In this census, James is listed as a farmer.

In the 1885 Iowa State census, James and Catherine are again in Guilford Township of Monroe County. In this census there is a Wallace, age 24 listed. This is probably David Wallace, now returned to live with the family. Next is listed Marrietta, age 19, no doubt the previously listed Mary. Then follows George, age 16, Jerusha, age 15, and lastly James, age 9.

The 1895 Iowa State census, the last one examined for this family, lists only Catherine with two children. They are Jerusha, age 24, and James, age 19.

It is clear from the census listings that five of James and Catherine's children lived to adulthood. The oldest was David Wallace, who was probably named after James' younger brother who had died in the Civil War. The oldest daughter was probably named Marrietta, though some family records have her name as Mary E. George's middle name according to family records was Alexander so he may have been named after James' brother Alexander. Jerusha Ann was no doubt named after both of the grandmothers, while James was no doubt named after his father. Young James' middle name was Jackson.

There were other children. Patra K. Scott, a grand daughter by marriage to James M. Scott, identifies a Margaret Elizabeth Scott, born in 1872 and dying in 1876, as the fifth child of James and Catherine. This child is not referred to in any census but is listed in family bible records.

There is also the question of the un-named James M. Scott infant child buried in the J. R. Boggs plot in the Oakview Cemetery in Albia, Iowa. This child is referred to on a map of the plot found in a family bible now owned by the George Robert Scott family of Casper, Wyoming. George Robert Scott was a grandson of James Moore Scott. Since there is a large time gap between the birth of David Wallace in 1860 and Marrietta in 1866, it is possible that a child was born and died during this time frame. It is not possible that Margaret Elizabeth is the child in question, since her grave site is known to be with her parents.

The family burial plot in the Oakview Cemetery in Albia, Iowa has two stones that are markers for two children. The stones identify a Ward and a Maggie. There are no other inscriptions. "Maggie" is a nickname for Margaret, so this is likely the grave of Margaret Elizabeth. Ward is no doubt the grandson of James and Catherine, the first son of James Jackson Scott, who was born and died in 1899. George Robert Scott, also a son of James Jackson Scott, asserted that this was the grave of his brother. Indeed, an obituary for this child has been found in the above mentioned family bibles held by the George Robert Scott family. It is quoted as follows.

James Ward, the infant son of Mr. and Mrs. James M. Scott, died Sept. 4, age nine weeks. Although his stay here was of a short duration, he was the pride and pet of the fond parents, but God seen best to remove the little rosebud, and call the little spirit home. The little boy was laid to rest in beautiful Oakview Cemetery, Sept., 5.

Ward dear, you have left us here,
Like the setting of the sun.
We'll trust Thee ever, Father dear,
And say, "Thy will be done".

As noted above, James Moore Scott and Catherine Boggs were married on 31 March, 1853. James purchased land in Mantua Township in 1855 and apparently moved there to live. He is recorded in the 1860 census as being in that township. However, he sold that land in 1861, apparently at the time that he moved back to the home farm with David R. and Anna. David R. was, according to his will, "in feeble health" at that time. Also his younger brother David Wallace had joined the Union Army and left the homestead. James was therefore required at the home farm to run it and care for his parents.

There is inconclusive evidence regarding James M. Scott's service in the Union Army during the Civil War. His grave site is marked with the 5 pointed star of the Grand Army of the Republic which would indicate that he was a veteran of that conflict. The GAR, a society of men who fought for the North in the Civil War, is comparable to the present day American Legion or Veterans of Foreign Wars. However, no record of his service in the Union Army been found. Hickenlooper's "History of Monroe County" lists a James M. Scott of that county as having been in the Union Army, but the unit cited is an Ohio Infantry Company, an unlikely unit for him to have served in. Also, during the years of the Civil War and for many years later, lists were kept of those who were eligible for Militia duty by township throughout the state. James appears on these lists for Monroe County in the years 1863, 64, 65, and 1867 along with his brother Alexander. He does not appear in 1862, though his brother Alexander does, which would indicate that if he did serve, it would have been in the early part of the conflict. James also appears in the eligibility lists in 1871 through 1874. Additional research may clarify the question of James' military service.

After David R. Scott's death in 1864, Anna passed to James a portion of the family homestead on which he and Alexander were living at the time. He probably continued to live there until late in the 1870's. The David R. Scott homestead site has been visited several times since 1988. There now stands on that ground a very old brick and mortar barn. The family which now lives on that property has no knowledge of the barn's history or when it was built, but it is very possible that this structure was built by James M. during the time that he lived there. If he lived there from the early 1860's to the late 1870's, the structure would have to be at least 120 years old. Pictures of the barn and its method of construction were taken for possible dating at a later time. In 1992 the barn was undergoing a refurbishment with the basic structure being preserved. The exterior of the brick has been covered with stucco but the interior still shows evidence of the original construction, a testament to the soundness of James' masonry skill, if he did in fact build the barn. There does not appear to be any other artifacts on the property relating to our ancestor's temporary reign over this part of God's earth.

In 1880 we find James M. and Catherine living in Guilford Township which lies to the west of Albia and which contains the town of Hiteman. One of Catherine's obituaries quoted below notes that they lived on "The Vance Farm" at the time of James' death. George Robert Scott, the above mentioned grandson of James Moore Scott, drew a map of the Hiteman area in 1992 on which he located the James Moore Scott family farm south of the town of Hiteman, though he did not note the distance. It appears that at least at this time, James had returned to farming and he

apparently continued in that profession until he died on 14 April, 1886. Land records have not been checked to establish when James left Troy township or if he bought the "Vance Farm", but there is no question of his movements in his later years.

There is interesting documentation regarding James M. Scott's death. The state of Iowa did not record deaths until 1880 so deaths prior to that time have to be documented in some other way. However, James M. Scott's death is recorded on page three of the first book of recorded deaths in Monroe County. He died on 14 April, 1886 at the age of 57 years, 9 months and 24 days. The cause of death is given as "Worn out". Medical diagnosis was apparently quite primitive in early Iowa History!. Even though he was living on a farm, and presumably that was how he was making his living at that time, his occupation is given as "Bricklayer".

James' wife Catherine did not die until 1906. Her obituary is as follows:

James M. Scott wife Catherine:

Died at her home in Hiteman Ia. on November 16, 1906, Mrs. Catherine Scott, aged 73 years, 4 months. The deceased, formerly Catherine Boggs, was born in West Virginia in 1833. She came with her parents to Iowa in 1839 and to Monroe County in 1843. Her father J. R. Boggs with three brothers and J. B. Graves and Billy Scott were the first white families to settle in Monroe County. At the time, Indians were in possession of the land. She was married to James M. Scott on March 31, 1853 and his death occurred April 14, 1886.

She was a kind and loving mother, and a friend to all. She leaves to mourn her death, besides a host of friends, one daughter and three sons. But to such as she, their loss is her gain. The funeral services were conducted at the home on Sabbath by Rev. Griffiths after which internment was in Oakview Cemetery, Albia.

The Golden Gates were open wide,
A gentle voice said "come",
And angels from the other side,
Welcomed our loved one home.

A second obituary from another paper also exists. Since it is significantly different from that quoted above, it too is quoted in full.

Died-Nov. 16, 1906, of neuralgia of the heart, Mrs. Catherine Scott, at the advanced age of 73 years.

Mrs. Scott was born in West Virginia in the year 1833: when six years old she, with her parents, James R. Boggs, Josiah C. Boggs and Lemaster M. Boggs came to Iowa Territory in 1839, settling in Van Buren County until the Spring of 1843. In that year her family came to Monroe County, settling one and a half miles northeast of Albia where she grew to womanhood.

In 1852 or 1853 she was united in marriage to James M. Scott and later settled on the Vance farm. While living on that farm she had the misfortune to loose her husband by death. Since her husband's death, she had made her home with her son Jas. Scott. She had five children, of whom four are living, Wallace, George, James, and Mrs. Frank Norman. Mrs. Cunningham died a few years ago. For several years past her home has been with her youngest son in Hiteman. For several years she had been in poor health, about two weeks ago she was taken with a severe attack of neuralgia of the heart, and after a week of intense suffering she quietly passed away last Thursday, Nov. 16.

Aunt Catherine, or Grandma Scott as she was familiarly called, was a kind and affectionate wife, a loving mother, and Grandma and a good neighbor, as all her friends and neighbors will testify.

Her funeral was from the home of her son last Sunday, Nov. 19, at 11 A.M. The remains were laid to rest in the Oakview Cemetery in Albia.

From the first obituary, only one daughter was living at Catherine's death. The daughter who had died is referred to as Mrs. Cunningham in the second. This was Marrietta, and she had died in 1900. Her obituary is as follows:

Mary Cunningham, nee Scott, died at her home 3 miles northeast of Georgetown, Ia, Thursday, October 26, 1900 of consumption, after several months of sickness. She leaves a kind husband and four small children, 3 girls and one boy baby about one year old, besides many relatives and friends to mourn the loss of a good woman and a kind mother. She was about 35 years old, was raised to womanhood in this county, where she has always resided, loved and respected by all who knew her. Funeral was held at the home Saturday, after which internment took place in the Albia Cemetery. Her husband and four little ones have the sympathy of all in the sad loss of a kind wife and loving mother.

Jerusha Ann, James and Catherine's other daughter, did not die until 1949. Her grave can be found, along with that of her husband H. Frank Norman, next to the James M. Scott family graves in the Oakview Cemetery in Albia. Jerusha's obituary has been located and is quoted as follows:

Jerusha A., second daughter of James M. and Catherine Scott, was born November 12, 1869, in Albia, and died at the Grayson Nursing Home in Des Moines June 9, 1949 at age of 79 years, six months, and 27 days. She lived most of her life in Hiteman. She married Frank Norman August 28, 1895 and they became the parents of one son, Frank. The son survives. Mrs. Norman is also survived by a brother, James Scott, Casper, Wyoming, and three grand children and two great grand children. Her husband, two brothers, and two sisters preceded her in death.

Mrs. Norman was a member of the Congregational Church, Rebecah Lodge, and Order of the Eastern Star. Funeral services were June 11 at Downs Funeral Home in Albia, conducted by the Rev. C. L. Young, and burial was in the Oakview Cemetery here.

The Jerusha Ann Scott and H. Frank Norman family line has continued and is now represented by Billie Jayne (Norman) Stevens of Des Moines, Iowa. More information on this branch of the family tree may be added at a later date.

James and Catherine's son George Alexander Scott also married a Norman. Her name was Minnie. They were married in 1895, the same year as their brother and sister married. Minnie died in 1931 in Hiteman but George did not die until 1946 when he lived in Casper, Wyoming. Both are buried in the Oakview Cemetery in Albia, however.

JAMES JACKSON SCOTT

The history of James Jackson Scott, the youngest son of James Moore and Catherine, has been provided by one of his sons, George Robert Scott of Casper, Wyoming, now deceased. George Robert Scott wrote this history in the Spring of 1992 at the age of 91 years. It is as follows:

James Jackson Scott, the youngest son of James Moore Scott and Catherine Boggs, was born 4 November, 1875 on a farm near Tyrone, Monroe County, Iowa. It was on this farm that he grew to manhood. He married Mary Jane Ward on 6 September, 1898 in Georgetown, Monroe County. They began their married life on the home farm with James' mother, Catherine. This farm was located a few miles south of Hiteman, a small town west northwest of Albia.

James and Mary's first son, James Ward Scott, was born on 22 June, 1899, but his life was short and he died on 4 September of that same year. He is buried in the James Moore Scott cemetery plot in Oakview Cemetery in Albia. His obituary is quoted above.

At about this time, James and Mary, along with James' mother Catherine, moved into the town of Hiteman. James went to work for the Waplo Coal Company, one of several coal companies mining the rather extensive coal deposits in that part of southeast Iowa. James later became the top foreman of the mines around Hiteman. His job was to oversee all the things needed to be done above ground for the operation of the mines. James' brother George Alexander Scott was the blacksmith at one of these mines. His sister Jerusha Ann was married to H. Frank Norman who was an underground miner in one of the mines.

James and Mary's family continued to grow. George Robert Scott was born 31 January, 1901 and their third child and first daughter Mary Catherine, was born on 27 September, 1904. This was the last grandchild Catherine was to know. She passed away on 16 November, 1906 as noted above. She is buried with her husband James Moore Scott, her daughter Margaret Elizabeth, and her grandson James Ward Scott in the Oakview Cemetery in Albia.

In the Spring of 1908 James Jackson decided to return to farming. He rented a farm from the coal company, the farm being located on the north side of the road across from the Hiteman Cemetery. The cemetery is located just west of the town of Hiteman. He also bought a team of mules from the coal company for \$80.00. These mules had been used down in the mines for some time and had to be brought to the surface. The mule barns down in the mines were not very well kept and these mules, when brought to the surface, were covered with manure, dried sweat and coal dust. At first they looked like a bad buy, but James cleaned and curried them and put them on good feed and they eventually turned out to be a very good looking and working team of mules. They helped support James and his family on his farm for five years. At the end of that time James decided, like many of his ancestors before him, to seek a better opportunity, and went seeking a new place to settle and live.

In March of 1913 he sold all of his stock and farm equipment. The team of mules brought \$225.00. He left Iowa alone, leaving his family there temporarily, while he looked for a new place to settle. He traveled to Oregon, Washington, and Montana but could not find what he was looking for. He wrote to his wife telling her to come to Kane, Wyoming along with the kids for a visit with his older brother, David Wallace Scott and his family. David had migrated to Kane some years earlier.

David and his family were farming his uncle James R. Boggs' farm. This farm was located where the Shoshone River empties into the Bighorn River near Kane in Bighorn County almost at the Montana border near the center of the state of Wyoming. After a short visit the family began the return trip to Iowa. James's wife Mary had a very close cousin who lived in Sargent, Custer County, Nebraska, and they decided to stop there on their way back to Iowa and visit with this family.

Mary's cousin had married a man named Henry Leinneinger and he owned a part interest in a hardware and farm implement store in Sargent. Sargent is located in north central Nebraska. Henry was not happy working in the store, preferring to buy and sell hogs. He and James became business partners. James became part owner of the hardware store. James worked his and Henry's share of the hardware store and put up the money for Henry to finance a hog brokering operation. As a result, the James Jackson Scott family settled in Sargent, Nebraska in the summer of 1913.

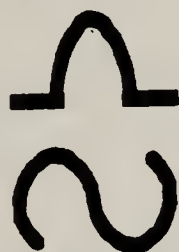
The hardware store operation was not a happy one for James and he and the other owner broke up the operation and sold the store in February of 1916. James returned to Wyoming where the government had opened some land for homesteading. James filed a claim on the southeast quarter of Section 22, and the southwest quarter of Section 23, Township 33, Range 70N in Converse County, Wyoming. Converse County is in the east central part of Wyoming, east of Casper, and in the North Platte River valley. The land was about 9 miles northeast of Douglas, the county seat of Converse County. The Scott family arrived in Douglas on the 1st of June, 1916. There James bought a wall tent, a team of horses, a milk cow, and a wagon. They lived in the tent for about two months while a house was being built. It must have been a "just in time" completion, daughter Edith Marguerite was born on 11 September of that year.

In 1918 the government passed the Homestead Extension Act which permitted homesteaders to expand their holding by another half section. James filed a claim on the north half of Section 27 of the same Township and Range of his existing land, the addition adjoining the south line of his existing property. James now owned 640 acres, but Wyoming is not the best of farming country. The weather can be harsh, often there is not enough moisture, and the growing season is short. In the fall of 1918 James took a job as a carpenter on the Chicago and Northwestern Railroad. The family rented a house in Douglas and moved into town. James worked most of the time in Casper about 75 miles west of Douglas, coming home over the weekends.

The oil industry was developing around Casper at this time and refineries were being built and oil was being shipped out. It was an economic boom time for Casper and surrounding communities, and also for the railroad. In January of 1920 James was given a new job by the railroad. He was responsible for the provision of water for the steam locomotives being used on the line and also maintenance of the facilities that supplied the water, from Lusk to Casper, Wyoming. His headquarters were in Douglas so he could spend much more time at home.

On 12 October, 1922 James and Mary's daughter Mary Catherine married Gordon M. Fitzhugh. Gordon and Catherine started ranching on a ranch owned by Gordon's father located 10 miles south of Douglas.

When the Scotts arrived in Wyoming in 1916 there were very few fences. Horses, cattle and sheep wandered where they would, though sheep herders controlled the movement of their flocks. However, horses and cattle were free to roam and if one was found by a rider and not branded, the finder could brand it and claim it as his own. Also, brands had to be unique and of such a design that it was impossible for the brand to be perfectly overlain by another to prevent "running" a new brand over an existing old one. James Jackson had registered a cattle brand with the Wyoming Live Stock Board when he was homesteading north of Douglas. He had designed a brand called "Mill Iron over Reversed Lazy S". It would appear similar to the illustration.



James Jackson Scott gave this brand to his daughter and son-in-law, Mary Catherine and Gordon Fitzhugh, who in turn gave it to their son, James Fitzhugh. It has now passed to his son, Dana Fitzhugh, and the brand is still an active registered brand with the Wyoming Live Stock Board.

James was transferred several times while he worked for the railroad. The Scott family lived in Casper for a year, then in Chadron, Nebraska for a short time, then back to Casper. On 20 May, 1926, James and Mary's son, George Robert married Dallas Ann Anders, the marriage taking place in Ainsworth, Nebraska.

In 1936 James sold the homestead land that he had proved up in 1921. James and Mary continued to live in Casper. James finally retired from the railroad in November of 1941 and he and Mary bought a house at 1316 East First Street in Casper. They continued to live there until James' death on 24 December, 1961 at the age of 86. Mary sold the house and lived with her son George Robert for a time and then with her daughter Edith Marguerite who had married Marcus Dunbar on 29 June, 1940. Mary died 24 April, 1963 at the age of 85 while living in the Dunbar home. James and Mary are buried in graves 7 and 8 of lot 2 of block 158 in Highland Cemetery in Casper, Natrona County, Wyoming.

GEORGE ROBERT SCOTT

George Robert Scott, son of James Jackson Scott and grandson of James Moore Scott, has contributed his own biographical sketch. This too was written in the Spring of 1992 when George Robert was 91 years old. At that time he was the oldest known living member of the David R. Scott family line. I have taken some editorial liberty with his work, but the words are mostly his.

George Robert was born 31 January, 1901 and his sister Mary Catherine was born in 1904. An older brother, James Ward had been born in 1899 and died as an infant in that same year. As noted above, his father at that time worked for the coal companies around Hiteman, but returned to farming in 1908. George went to school in Hiteman and completed the 7th grade there in 1914. In that year his parents moved to Sargent, Custer County, Nebraska where he attended the 8th and 9th grades in 1914-1916. In May of 1916 the family moved to Converse County, Wyoming where George's father established the homestead referred to above. The family lived in a tent until a house could be built. In that new house was born George's younger sister, Edith Marguerite. George's father had to find work

away from home to support the family and George had to become the man of the house. He missed two years of school while living on the homestead but was able to return to school to complete his 10th grade when the family moved into Douglas in 1918.

In November of 1919, George left home and went to Casper, Wyoming to get a job as a boiler maker's helper in the Chicago Northwestern Railroad round house. He worked in the round house for only four months when he took a job in the carpenter crew. The carpenter crew worked over a large area, from Casper to Lone Pine, Nebraska and north through the Black Hills of South Dakota. The end of the first World War brought slow economic times and the Chicago Northwestern reduced its work force only a year and three months after George went to work on the carpenter crew. George was laid off as he was low in seniority. George worked odd jobs until the fall of 1921 when a neighbor of the Scott family offered to take George to Souix City, Iowa where he was going to work in a dairy. George went along. They made the trip in a 1915 Reo automobile, and when they arrived George also got a job in the dairy. He worked there during the winter and in the spring took a job in the Curtis Sash and Door factory, a job he took at the suggestion of his landlord who also worked there. He worked in the factory until April of 1923 when he was notified by the railroad that he could get his job in the carpenter crew back if he wanted it. He had liked the carpenter crew job better than he had any other to that time, so he returned to Wyoming.

In 1925 George was working a carpenter job for the railroad in Lone Pine, Nebraska where he met Dallas Anders. They went together until the spring of 1926 when Dallas' family decided to move to Oregon. George and Dallas decided to marry rather than part, and did so on 20 May, 1926. They rented a small apartment in Lone Pine and almost exactly one year later, they became the parents of George Robert Scott Jr.

George continued to work with the railroad carpenter crew up and down the line. In August of 1927 Dallas took Junior to visit her parents in Portland, Oregon. Dallas wrote George from there, telling him that her parents were taking care of a 4 year old grandson. His mother had deserted him to marry another man and her parents were having a hard time taking care of themselves and the little boy. Dallas wanted to bring the child home with her and care for him. George agreed on the condition that they raise the child as their own and that they never return him to his mother. Dallas returned home in September with Junior and the four year old nephew, Wayne M. Gay, who was indeed raised to manhood as a natural son of George and Dallas Scott.

George needed to spend more time at home with his family so in January of 1928 George and Dallas moved to Casper, Wyoming. George took jobs as a contract carpenter. In the Spring of 1929 George took a temporary job with the Texas Oil Refinery in Casper, building a large railroad tank car barn. As the barn was nearing completion he was asked if he would like a steady job in the refinery. He accepted the offer. He continued to work in the refinery for the rest of his working life.

George was too young to serve in the first World War, but his sons served in World War II. Wayne served in Europe in the Army Engineers while George Jr. served in the Naval Air Forces. Wayne married Hazel Mead in March of 1947. They have three sons, two grandsons and a grand daughter. George Jr. married Lois Dean in September of 1947. They raised a son and daughter and have three grandsons and two grand daughters. Wayne attended Wyoming University one year before going into the Army. George Jr. has a Masters Degree in Administration from the University of Wyoming. Wayne spent his working years in the Texas Oil Refinery. George Jr. became a school teacher, Assistant Principal, and Principal in the Natrona County School System.

George Robert Scott retired from the Texas Oil Company as Operating Supervisor of the refinery in Casper on 1 September, 1962. He and Dallas loved to fish for trout in their home state of Wyoming and made three trips to Washington State to try their luck at salmon. During their retired years they traveled through most of the west and made a trip to George's place of birth in Hiteman, Iowa in 1982. They continued to reside in their home at 2813 E. 4th St. in Casper, actively enjoying fishing for Wyoming trout and their family of two sons, four grandsons, one grand daughter, five great grandsons and three great grand daughters.

George Robert Scott died of cancer at the age of 91 years, 4 months, and 7 days on the 7th of June, 1992. Dallas continued to live at their residence on 4th street in Casper. She and George had celebrated their 66th wedding anniversary in May of 1992. Their decision to marry in 1926 was apparently a sound one. His obituary follows:

GEORGE R. "BOB" SCOTT

CASPER. Graveside services for George R. "Bob" Scott, 91, will be conducted at 1:30 p.m. Wednesday at Memorial Gardens Cemetery by Rev. Leonard Robinson, missionary pastor from the Emmanuel Baptist Church.

Mr. Scott died June 7, 1992 at the Wyoming Medical Center. He was born Jan 31, 1901, in Hiteman, Iowa, the son of the late James and Mary (Ward) Scott. He moved from Long Pine, Neb. to Casper in 1928. On May 20, 1926 he married Dallas Anders in Ainsworth, Neb. Mr. Scott was employed as a bridge builder for Chicago and Northwestern Railroad.

He then went to work with the Texaco Refinery and retired in 1962 as an operating forman. Mr. Scott was a life member of the Odd Fellows Club in Casper.

Survivors include his wife, two sons, George Scott Jr. and Wayne M. Gay, both of Casper; a sister Marquerite Dunbar of Oelrichs, S.D., five grand children, and eight great-grandchildren.

He was preceded in death by his sister, Catherine Fitzhugh and an infant brother.

Flowers or memorials to either Meals on Wheels or to the Blue Envelope Fund would be appreciated by the family.

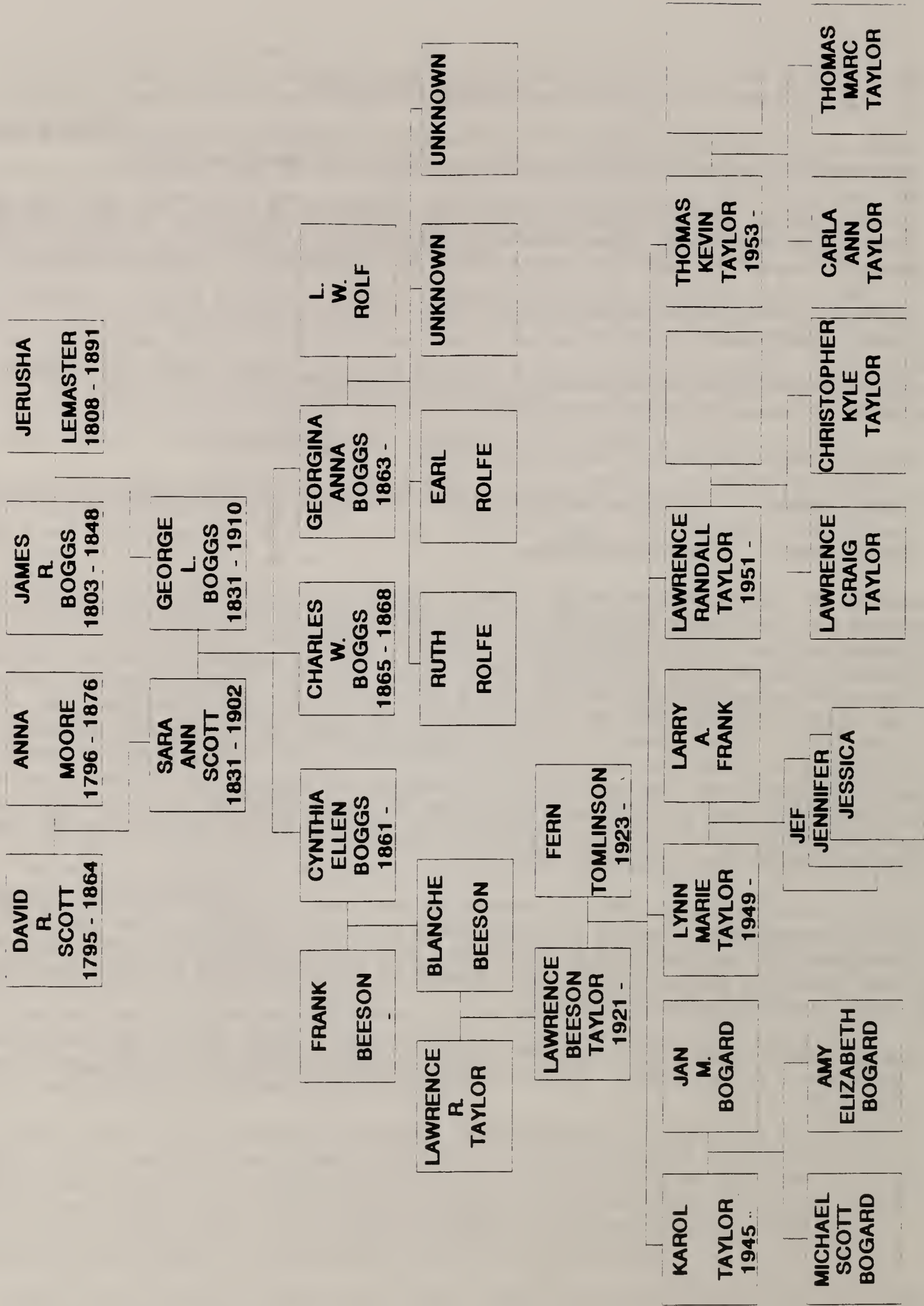
Memorial Chapel is in charge of arrangements.

As noted above, George Robert was born on 31 January, 1901. On that date a copy of the New York Times was selling for one cent. The Times for that date has an advertisement for a pair of men's leather shoes for \$2.50. Dressed hogs were selling for \$7.25 per hundred weight. In Hiteman, Iowa, the site of George's birth, prices were no doubt cheaper, New York has always been an expensive place to live. But that newspaper is a measure of the change that has occurred in America during George Robert Scott's lifetime. Today you could easily spend over \$100.00 for a good pair of men's leather shoes, and it would be difficult to find a restaurant that would serve a pork chop dinner for \$7.25. In his lifetime George Robert Scott saw his country fight two World Wars, and several others around the globe. Communism was born and died, as did Nazism and Fascism. At least we hope so. Automobiles were a new thing at his birth. They have evolved to become machines not imagined in 1901. He saw the start of the age of flight and saw a real man on the moon. He lived when they invented radio, and motion pictures, and television, and computers, and lasers, and vaccines, and automatic everythings. Indeed, George Robert Scott has lived over the span of an amazing change in the human condition.

How was he different from his Scotch-Irish ancestors who came to America sometime in the 1700's? Not much, I think. Times and things change, but I saw in him much of what I see in the history of John Scott, David R. Scott, James Moore Scott, and James Jackson Scott before him. He met and lived life much like they did, moving to a better opportunity, improving his surroundings, nurturing his family, and being an active part of the idea of America. I am proud to share his heritage.

Dallas continued to live at home on 4th Street in Casper until she too passed away on 8 June, 1994 about four months short of her 90th birthday. She is buried with her husband in the Memorial Gardens Cemetery in Casper, Wyoming.

FAMILY OF SARA ANN SCOTT



SARAH ANN SCOTT

Sarah Ann Scott was born in Putnam County, Indiana in 1831, the second child and first daughter of David R. Scott and Anna Moore. She is identified in all census records of David R. through 1850 but there is no detail of her unmarried life in the David R. household.

Sarah Ann Scott married George L. Boggs on 3 January, 1856 in David R. Scott's home which was just north of Albia, Iowa. This was the second marriage between the Scott and Boggs families, James M. Scott and Catherine Boggs being married nearly three years earlier. The wedding was officiated by a Minister, A. L. Barnes, of the United Brethren Church. From this reference it is assumed that David R. was, at least at this time, of that church. The 1856 Iowa State census was taken that summer and George and Sarah are listed in the census in Troy township, Monroe County, Iowa. They have no children listed in the census.

Sarah Ann and George L. Boggs are found in the 1860 Federal census living in Mantua township of Monroe County, Iowa. They are listed just before James M. Scott and Catherine Boggs and their family indicating that they were next door neighbors to their brother and sister. Both families were farming. A land record for George Boggs indicates that he was working 40 acres. There are no children listed as being in the Boggs household in 1860. However, there is evidence that two children had been born and had died prior to this time. George Robert Scott of Casper, Wyoming has a Scott family bible in which there is a map of a burial plot in the Oakview Cemetery in Albia which contains two George Boggs infant children. Their original graves were probably on the David R. Scott farm and were moved there when all the people buried there were moved to the Oakview Cemetery. The names and sexes of these two children are not known.

Sarah Ann is mentioned in her father's will, which was written in 1862, as having received from him an inheritance of money and property to the value of ninety dollars. In view of the land and other property in the will, this would not seem to be an "equal" share, as it is called in the will. Be that as it may, it is not stated when David R. gave this money to her. It may have occurred in the fall of 1856, the year of her wedding and the year Sarah's younger brother, Alexander, married Jane Boggs, George's cousin. It is thought that Alexander received his share of the estate when he married and this would have been a likely time to distribute Sarah's share to her.

The 1870 Census shows that two daughters had been born in the 1860's while they lived in Monroe County. Cynthia was born in 1861, and Georgiana was born in 1863. Sarah Ann and George's gravestone in Frankfort Cemetery near Red Oak, Iowa reveals that they also had a son, Charles W. Boggs, who was born in 1865. He died in 1868, shortly after their move to the Frankfort area. Charles is buried with them in the family plot. George and Sarah moved to Frankfort township of Montgomery County, Iowa in 1867.

The 1870 census also has two other individuals, ages 22 and 21, living in their home. The first is a J. R. Boggs identified as a male farmer. J. R. Boggs is no doubt George's youngest brother James, who was born in 1848, which would make him 22 years old at this time. The second individual is a Z. R. Boggs and is 21 years old. Since James was the last child born to the older James R. Boggs and Jerusha, the Z. R. Boggs, being younger than James is thought to be his wife. Her name was Rebecca Z. Benbow, the census taker reversing her initials. It is not known how long they lived with George and Sarah.

The 1880 census has recorded that the George L. Boggs household now consisted of he and Sarah and two daughters by the name of Ella and Anna. Their ages are 19 and 17 which makes them the same age as the Cynthia and Georgiana of the 1870 census. This name change is confusing but can perhaps be explained. Ella is probably Ellen, Cynthia Ellen. Anna is probably a shorten version of Georgiana.

Also listed in the 1880 census is William Emery, a male boarder, 14 years of age. This is thought to be the son of John T. Emery and Martha Scott, David R. Scott's youngest daughter. He was therefore the nephew of Sarah Ann. Martha had died in 1876 and so William may have been an orphan, or at least motherless, and in need of a place to live. It is clear that he was staying with his aunt and uncle at this time, but there is no other known record of this young man.

In 1885 the Iowa State census lists George L. Boggs and Sarah Ann with Georgiana, age 18. The next entry is for Frank and Cynthia Beeson, Cynthia being the former Cynthia Boggs. Frank and Cynthia Beeson have a one year old son named Roy.

In the 1895 Iowa State census, George L. and Sarah Ann are now living alone. Georgiana has married a Mr. Rolfe and is living in an unknown location. According to George L. Boggs' obituary quoted below, Georgiana died in March of 1898. The next entry in the census is again for Frank Beeson and his family, his wife being identified this time as Ellen rather than Cynthia. Roy is not listed, the reason for this omission being unknown. They have two additional children, Frank L., age 6 and Maud, age 4.

Sarah Ann (Scott) Boggs died on 6 September, 1902. Her obituary has been located and is quoted below:

Mrs. George L. Boggs died at her home four miles east of Red Oak last Saturday. She was born in Putnam County, Indiana, Oct 30 1831 and was married to George L. Boggs on Jan 3, 1859. She was the mother of five children, only one, a daughter surviving. The deceased had been a member of the Christian church for many years. The funeral, which was held Monday, was largely attended. Interment was made in the Frankfort cemetery.

The daughter that had preceded her in death was Georgiana, wife of L. W. Rolfe. Her obituary is as follows:

Mrs. L. W. Rolfe, wife of a farmer residing in Frankfort township eight miles northeast of Red Oak, died Sunday, March 6, 1898, leaving a baby three days old and three other small children to the care of her husband, who is himself in poor health. The death was an exceedingly sad one. Mr. Rolfe's mother had, a few days before his wife's illness, gone to the home of Loren S. Foote, near Grant, to help care for him during his illness which resulted fatally, and while there she took seriously ill and is not yet able to be removed. At the same time Mrs. Frank Beeson, a sister of Mrs. Rolfe, was unable to do anything for her on account of the serious illness of her own child.

Mrs. Anna Boggs Rolfe was born in 1863 in Monroe County, Iowa. Four years later she removed with her parents to this county, where she has resided ever since. She was married in 1891 to L. W. Rolfe.

The funeral occurred Monday forenoon at the Pleasant Lawn U. P. church, Rev. R. H. Ingram of the Christian Church conducting the services, assisted by the pastor, Rev. S E. DuBois. Interment was made at the Red Oak cemetery. The deceased had many friends in and about Red Oak who will miss her deeply.

George L. Boggs did not follow Sarah Ann in death until some 8 years later, living until 30 October of 1910. George Boggs' obituary appeared in the Red Oak Sun on 4 November, 1910.

DEATH OF GEORGE L. BOGGS

Was for 43 years a Resident of Montgomery County

After residence of 43 years in Montgomery County, during which time he proved himself a man of sterling worth, George L. Boggs passed away on his farm a little over four miles east of Red Oak, where he made his home with his daughter, Mrs. Frank Beeson, on Saturday morning, October 29, at about 9:30 o'clock. He was nearly 80 years of age and had been in failing health for the last year, but only since about two weeks or more he had been bedfast. Death was due to cancer of the stomach.

On Tuesday afternoon, Nov 1, funeral services were held at the home of Mr. and Mrs. Beeson, Rev. W. W. Merritt, a close friend of Mr. Boggs for nearly half a century, delivering the funeral sermon, in which he paid high tribute to Mr. Boggs many virtues. There was singing by Mrs. Basil Altaffer, Miss Elisa Ogden, Mrs. O. A. Milner, Mrs. G. H. Davidson, John Carnicheal and John Grover. The pallbearers were Henry Illingworth, C. C. Tomlinson, J. N. Cooper, John Gilchrist, Alfred Levine, and George Davidson. Burial was in Frankfort Cemetery, where Mrs. Boggs and one of their children are buried.

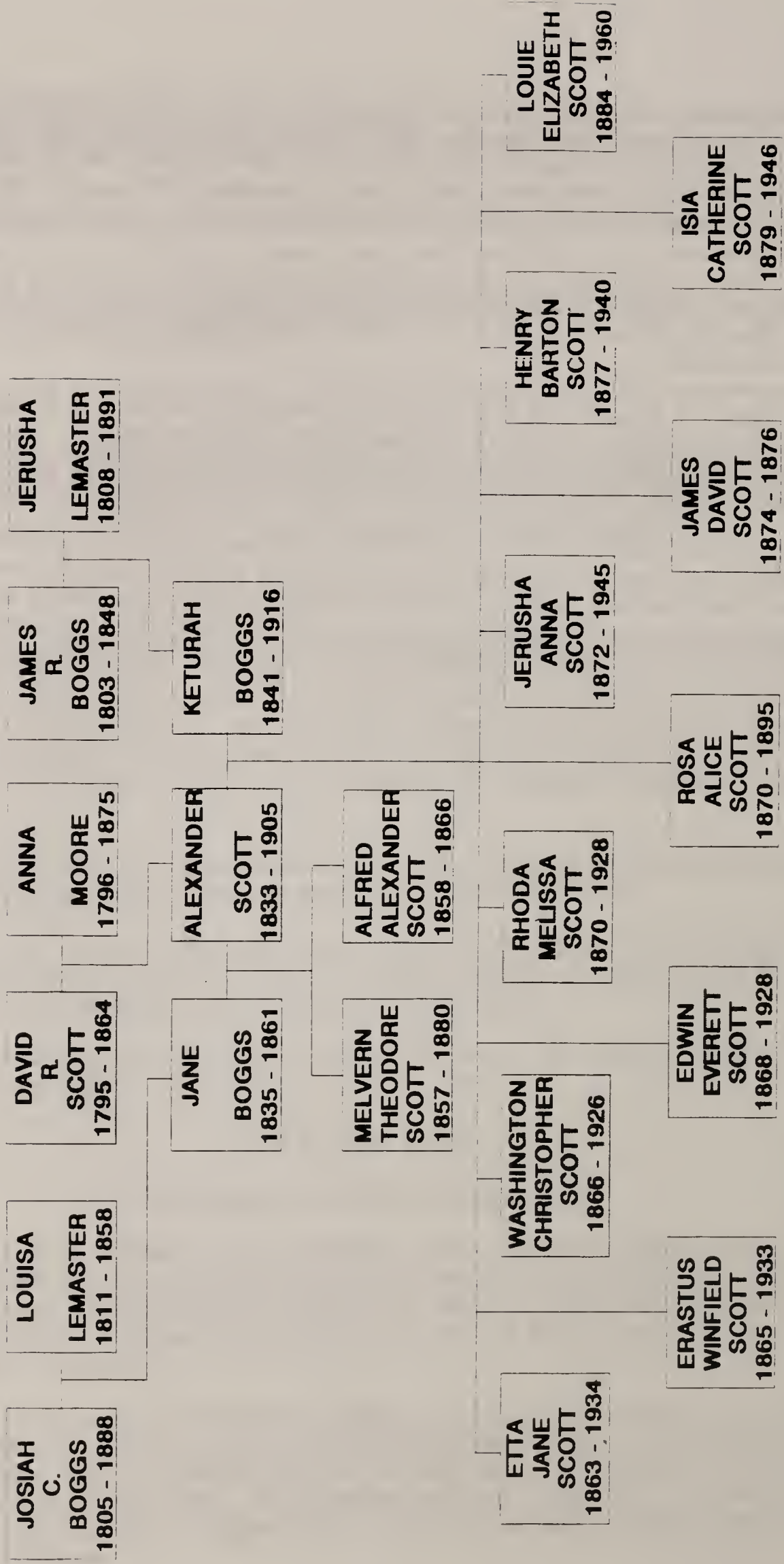
Mr. Boggs was born near Point Pleasant, Va. March 16, 1831, and lived there some seven years until he came with his parents to Iowa. They made their home for a time in VanBuren county and moved later to Monroe County, near where the town of Albia is now located. Mr. Boggs was one of the surveyors who helped lay out the original plan of Albia. He was married in Monroe County, Jan 3. 1856, to Miss Sarah A. Scott, and in 1867 they moved to this county, Mr. Boggs having bought the farm in Frankfort township which he continued to own until his death and on which he died.

One daughter, Mrs. Beeson, survives and there are also six grandchildren. Mrs. Boggs died Sept. 6, 1902, and one daughter, Mrs. Anna Rolfe, died in March, 1898. Three other children died in infancy. One sister and three brothers also survive.

Coming to Iowa in an early day, and to this county when the locality was still in its infancy, Mr. Boggs was identified with all the early efforts to make this section a desirable community. He was one of that splendid type of pioneers, who, in spite of obstacles, lived by the golden rule and earned the respect of a large circle of acquaintances. All who knew him are pained by his passing and extend sympathy to the bereaved ones.

The Sarah Ann Scott branch of the Scott family tree has continued to the present as outlined in the chart preceding this section. The information contained in the chart has been provided by Lawrence Beeson Taylor and his wife, Fern, now living in Ralston, Nebraska. The Taylors declare that Omaha is a suburb of Ralston. They further note that when Anna Rolfe died relatively early in life, that Anna's sister, Ellen Beeson, raised Anna's children, Ruth and Earl Rolfe. It is not known what happened to the two other Rolfe children alive at the time of Anna's death.

FAMILY OF ALEXANDER SCOTT



ALEXANDER SCOTT

Alexander Scott was born in Putnam County, Indiana on 22 June, 1833. He was born on the land that his father David R. Scott had purchased in Russell Township of Putnam County. Alexander stayed with the family through their move to Parke County and on to Iowa. There is no information about his early life in Indiana. In 1851 when he was 18 his family left Indiana and migrated to Iowa. The journey was no doubt made by wagon and on foot across Illinois to the Mississippi River and then into Iowa. It is not known whether this journey was made as part of a larger group or if the Scott family travelled alone. There is evidence that parts of the Wills and Lower families also migrated to Iowa at or about this time, and if so, they may have travelled together. They probably brought with them what live stock and household possessions they owned since they no doubt were intending to start anew in an unsettled area. As previously noted in the discussion of David R. Scott's land transactions, the destination in Iowa may have already been known, since the land in Iowa was purchased before the land in Indiana was sold.

Alexander's family of father and mother and six children arrived in the Albia area of Monroe County, Iowa in the year 1851. The David R. Scotts became neighbors to the Boggs families and others in the area including the Lowers. At the age of 22, Alexander married Jane Boggs on 9 October, 1856 and settled on his own farm of forty acres, part of his father's original homestead deeded to him at the time of his marriage. He began to raise his own family. The 1860 census finds Alexander engaged in farming with his young wife Jane and two sons, Melvin Theodore and Alfred Alexander. The sons had been born in 1857 and 1858 respectively. In the year 1861, Jane (Boggs) Scott died at the age of 25 years, 2 months, and 11 days, leaving Alexander with sons age 3 and 4. Jane was buried in what is now called the Boggs cemetery, a parcel of land set aside and preserved for cemetery purposes by Jane's father, Josiah C. Boggs, in 1875. This action was done through an amendment to his will and portions of that will and amendment are quoted here:

"I will that after my decease, my body be decently interred near the grave of my beloved wife, Louisa, on my home farm." "I hereby reserve.....the following described real estate to-wit, commencing....(legal description)...., in which now lie buried my deceased wife, Louisa, and two of our children."

One of these children was Jane. Her gravestone in the Boggs cemetery is one of the few clearly identifiable artifacts that remain there. Unfortunately, the specifications for the cemetery as laid down in Josiah's will have not been carried out by subsequent owners of the land. The land is now, 1990, used as a pasture and the gravestones have all been moved into a pile. Jane's stone has likely been moved several feet from its original site, so the exact location of the grave is not known.

On 27 November, 1862, Alexander married for the second time. His new wife was Keturah Boggs, daughter of James R. Boggs, step daughter of Michael Lower, and a first cousin to his first wife, Jane Boggs. In 1863 Keturah bore her first child, Etta Jane. Erastus Winfield followed in 1865, then Washington Christopher in 1866, Edwin Everett in 1868, twin daughters Rosa Alice and Rhoda Melissa in 1870, Jerusha Ann in 1872, James David in 1874, Henry Barton in 1877, Isia Catherine in 1879, and finally Louie Elizabeth in 1884. Then as now, life was not certain, and Melvin Alexander, Jane's first son, died at the age of 23. Jane's second son, Alfred Alexander, died in 1866 having reached the age of only 8. Keturah's son James David died at the age of two. Henry Barton's daughter writes in a letter to her cousin Edna Cranor that James David died from having eaten the berries of the poisonous "night shade" plant, a tragic way to lose a two year old child. They were a hardy family however, and the other ten children all reached respectable age.

Unlike his brothers James Moore and David Wallace, there is no indication that Alexander took part in the Civil War which began in 1861 and ended in 1865. It may be that since his wife was dead and he had two infant children, that his father was not in good health, and that his brother David Wallace was gone to war, the Scott family could not afford to have him gone. He would be sorely needed to handle the affairs of the family until it was over. Apparently he did that, and during those years married Keturah Boggs and began a second family. It is also noted that during the years of the Civil War and for many years later, lists were kept by township of those who were eligible for Militia duty throughout the state. Alexander appears on these lists for the years 1862, '63, '64, and '65 for Troy township of Monroe County, indicating that he in fact did not enter the Army during the war.

After the war was over and after the birth of Keturah's second child, Erastus Winfield, Alexander decided to move to Missouri.

On 14 November, 1865 it is recorded that he sold his land to a Mr. A. H. Atherton and James M. Black. On 22 January, 1866 Alexander purchased 120 acres of land from a John Chaney in Madison Township of Mercer County, Missouri. Mercer County lies on the northern border of Missouri approximately in the center of the state. The land was identified as the SW 1/4 of the NW 1/4 of Section 29 and the South Half of the NE 1/4 of Section 30 in Township 64N, Range 25W.

Washington Christopher was born on this land on 2 November, 1866. Edwin Everett followed in 1868 and twin daughters Rosa Alice and Rhoda Melissa were born there in 1870.

In January of 1870, Alexander sold the land in Sections 29 and 30 of Mercer county for \$1750.00. He retained a plot of one and a quarter acres in the northeast corner of the property, this apparently being the location of his home. A likely reason for this becomes apparent on examination of the 1870 Census. In that census Alexander is recorded as having the occupation of "Sawyer". It appears that Alexander did not go to Missouri to farm but to go into lumbering. It is surmised that he had purchased the 120 acres to harvest the timber on it and in the preceding four years had finished that job. The land then being cleared, it was available for sale as potential farm land which brought a bit more than he had originally paid for it. It is presumed that the timber would be used as railroad ties to lay tracks for the then rapidly expanding railroads in the area.

In the 1870 Federal Census Alexander's family is recorded in Madison Township of Mercer County. Alexander is there with his wife, Etta Jane, Erastus Winfield, Washington Christopher, and Edwin Everett. For some reason the twins Rosa and Rhoda are not listed, though the date of the census is after the date of their births. They were born on 28 February, 1870 and the census was dated 20 August, 1870. Alexander is also recorded as having real estate valued at \$100.00 and a personal estate of \$1800.00. These numbers more or less accurately reflect the value of the acre and a quarter home site and the monies received from the sale of the 120 acres.

In February of 1871 Alexander purchased 40 acres identified as the Northwest Quarter of the Northwest Quarter of Section 12 of Medicine Township of Mercer County for \$200.00. This land lies about 20 miles east of Alexander's home site. It is not known whether or not Alexander moved his family to this new location or if he intended to again harvest timber from this land and work at a remote location. There is no record of sale of the one and a quarter acres in Madison Township, either at this time or later, so it is not known when Alexander moved his family from the Madison Township home site.

Alexander did not keep the 40 acres in Medicine Township very long. He sold it for \$300.00 on 14 December, 1871 keeping it a mere 10 months. For this reason, it is surmised that it was an investment opportunity or a timber harvesting site and never used by Alexander as a home site. It is interesting to note however, that this sale was not recorded for record until 29 October, 1872. Shortly thereafter, on 26 November, 1872 a daughter, Jerusha Ann was born. Family and census records indicate this birth took place in Mercer County, Missouri, so Alexander and his family were still there in late 1872.

It is not possible to establish with any certainty when Alexander and his family returned to Iowa. According to family records, Keturah bore a son, James David Scott, in Missouri on 16 December, 1874. Since the sale of the home site in Madison Township was never recorded, Alexander and his family could have remained there until after the birth of James David. However, in Keturah's obituary, the total time the family spent in Missouri is noted as being seven years. Since Alexander and Keturah left Iowa in 1865, they would have had to return to Iowa in 1872 for the seven years to be correct. There are no records after Alexander's return to Iowa that resolve this issue, but the 1874 date seems more likely.

George Findley, a grandson of Alexander, related the following story to the author regarding Alexander's return to Iowa. He recalls a family story that Alexander in his wagon with goods and family encountered a man who attempted to block his way on the return trip through an area that was settled by "Danes". It seems that the "Danes" did not take kindly to people passing through their area, and the man insisted that Alexander drive his wagon a considerable distance around. Alexander allowed as how he had no intension of going around anyone and challenged

the man with a double barreled shot gun which he had under the wagon seat. Faced with this, the man stepped aside and Alexander proceeded on to Iowa without further incident. George recalls that his grandfather was not very proud of having threatened violence, since he was a very religious man and did not believe in violence. However, he was not going to let any man tell him where he could and could not go. This attitude is not at all surprising considering Alexander's Scotch-Irish heritage. It also might explain why Alexander never got involved in the Civil War. It is unfortunate that George could not recall the year or the location of the incident.

It is not clear where Alexander was going when he returned to Iowa. Family records reveal that James David Scott died in 1876, but the location of the death is not recorded and no grave has been located. This child died from eating the poisonous red berries of the black nightshade plant, which might indicate that Alexander lived in a rural area, though that is by no means certain. From the 1885 Iowa State Census, the location of the birth of Keturah's ninth child, Henry Barton, was Monroe County. Henry Barton was born on 5 January, 1877 so Alexander had been in Iowa, and perhaps Monroe County, for at least three years before this birth. No records have been found there to verify this, however. According to that same 1885 census, Alexander and Keturah's tenth child, Isia Catherine, was also born in Monroe County on 6 January, 1879. However, the 1895 Iowa State Census records that Isia was born in Marion County, that county bordering Monroe County on the northwest. Taking this discrepancy into account, it still appears that Alexander and his family lived in or around the Albia, Monroe County area from the time he returned to Iowa in 1872 or 1874 until at least the early part of 1879.

What he did during this period is not known. Again George Findley tells a story about his paternal grandfather's migration to western Iowa. He recalls a conversation between his two grandfathers in which the elder Findley (also named George) was held up for weeks in his trek across southern Iowa from heavy rains which had flooded all the streams. He could not proceed until the waters dropped low enough for the streams to be forded so he put his family up in a hotel and waited. The hotel was called the Elkhorn Hotel. The elder Findley thought that Alexander looked like the proprietor of that hotel, that he could not mistake the beard. Alexander allowed that he was in fact the proprietor of the hotel, and that he remembered the Findley family as having stayed there.

The above story indicates that during this period Alexander was an innkeeper for a period of time. Unfortunately, George Findley could not recall the location of the hotel, nor has it been possible to locate any record of an Elkhorn Hotel in the records so far searched of the businesses of Monroe and Marion Counties. Marion County seems more likely, specifically the town of Pella. This town lies to the east of the Des Moines River, which may have been the stream blocking the elder Findley's progress. Further, there is an Elk Rock State Park near Pella, indicating that the name Elkhorn would not be unusual for the area, though one does not normally associate elk with Iowa in this day and age. There is a town in northwest Iowa called Elkhorn, but it is far from the likely location of either of George Findley's grandparents at this time.

The 1880 Federal Census positively locates Alexander and his family in Frankfort Township of Montgomery County, Iowa. This is east of Red Oak, Iowa and near the town of Villisca. He is noted in the census as being a farmer. He may have come to this area because his sister, Sarah Ann (Scott) Boggs lived nearby with her husband, George L. Boggs who, according to his obituary, was a very successful farmer in this county. Alexander's family at this time is a large one of 13 people. Along with Alexander and Keturah are 10 children. The oldest is Theodore, Alexander's son by his first wife Jane. He is noted as being afflicted with some ailment that cannot be read on the census record. Indeed, 19 days after the census, family records show that Theodore died. His burial place is not known. All of Alexander and Keturah's children have now been born with the exception of Louie Elizabeth. In addition the census lists Jerusha Lower, Keturah's mother who is now widowed for the second time. She is 72 years old.

According to George and Velma Findley, Alexander's grandchildren, Alexander moved about a great deal within Montgomery and Cass County, which borders Montgomery County on the north, for several years. Indeed, we find Alexander in Victoria Township of Cass County in the 1885 Iowa State Census. He is engaged in farming. In this census all of Alexander and Keturah's children are listed including Louie Elizabeth who was born in Cass County on 28 June, 1884, perhaps on the farm being worked by Alexander in the 1885 census. Jerusha Lower is not listed however, she has returned to the Albia area and is living with Catherine (Boggs) Scott at this time.

The Findley family recalls that Alexander rented several farms and land during this period. It is George Findley's recollection that Alexander was fairly well off financially when he came to western Iowa, but he also recalls that Alexander did not do well as a renter, losing quite a bit of money farming the lands that he rented. He had no idea why this should be so, but perhaps it led Alexander to the conclusion that he would do better owning his farm rather than renting. He would do just that later.

In 1890 Alexander's children began to marry. Etta Jane married Millard Long in that year and one of the twins, Rosa, married William Call. Washington Christopher left the family group at about this time, going to northern Iowa where he would work his own farm and marry Sarah Ann Hassell in 1892. Washington was joined by his brother Edwin Everett in 1893, and Edwin married Cora Turner in northern Iowa in 1895.

By 1895 the Iowa State Census reveals that Alexander and Keturah's family consisted of Erastus Winfield, then 30, and the other twin Rhoda, now 24. Jerusha Ann, 22, Henry Barton, 18, Isia, 16, and Louie Elizabeth, 10, complete the list. They are located in Washington Township of Montgomery County, Iowa and Alexander is farming his own land.

On 30 January, 1892, Alexander, along with his oldest son Winfield, jointly purchased a farm in Washington Township of Montgomery County near a place that was later to be known as Tenville. The town name of Tenville was derived from the name of the school that was built nearby. This was the tenth school built in the township, or Number Ten School. The village that grew up around it came to be called Tenville. The school no longer exists, nor does the church the Scott family attended, and Tenville is now without a single business.

The legal description of Alexander's farm is rather long and involved, consisting of portions of two different sections and several different quarter sections. There were two parcels, one of 128 acres and one of 40 acres. This farm was located about six miles north of the present town of Villisca on the east side of the Nodaway River at Tenville, in 1892 an un-incorporated town of 21 people lying just north of the intersection of U. S. Highways 34 and 71. Velma Case, one of Alexander's grand daughters, and daughter of Louie Elizabeth, now lives in Tenville within a few hundred feet of Alexander's last home. Velma's home is on part of the land Alexander bought in 1892. For this reason, the legal abstract of her property contains a description of Alexander's original farm and the sequence of mortgages and payment of those mortgages and the amounts involved. It also contains a copy of Alexander's last will and testament.

Alexander lived on this property until he died in 1905. It is quite clear that the land was jointly owned by Alexander and his son Erastus Winfield, but it is not clear as to what percentage each held. It is assumed that it was 50-50. There were always mortgages against the property, but it is not possible to tell from the legal abstract what the mortgages were for. The sequence of financial activity for the period of Alexander's life time is as follows.

In 1892 the original price of the property was \$1550.00, of which \$300.00 was paid in cash and a mortgage of \$1250.00 was taken by a Mr. R. L. Hammond, the previous owner, to be paid in five years.

At the end of that five years in 1897, the property was again mortgaged, this time for \$1400.00, and again for a five year period. Mr. Hammond held the mortgage.

For some reason, the property was again mortgaged in 1898 for \$1550.00, the holder of the new mortgage being a Mr. Wetherbee, and the mortgage to Mr. Hammond was paid off. The new mortgage was also for five years. At the same time a second mortgage was taken by a Mr. Woodward for \$116.25, the second also to be paid off in five years.

In 1901 both of these mortgages were re-written for greater amounts. Mr. Wetherbee's mortgage went to \$2850.00 and the second held by Woodward grew to \$221.25.

In 1903 both mortgages were again re-written. The mortgage held by Mr. Wetherbee was now \$3800.00, but the second held by Woodward was cut to \$190.00. These were the mortgages existing at the time of Alexander's death in 1905.

One might surmise from the mortgage records that Alexander and his son Winfield were not very successful farmers, even with the help of Henry Barton. They certainly owed more on the land when Alexander died than when they bought it. This may speak more to the economic conditions at the time rather than their skill in farming. There was a major depression starting with the panic of 1893 which continued almost un-abated for ten years with only 1900 and 1903 being modest growth years. With the economy doing so poorly it is not surprising that Alexander's apparent net worth was declining in his later years. However, it appears that the land was at least two and a half times more valuable when he died than when he bought it in 1892, otherwise no lender would have accepted a mortgage for those amounts. Whether this increase in value was due to Alexander's improvements or to inflation is not clear but it seems unlikely that it was due to inflation during a depressed economic period. Velma Case remembers that the clearing of the land continued even to her own personal memory. If there was nothing else to do, there were always trees to cut and stumps to pull so that more land could be brought under cultivation. There is no question that this would increase the value of the property over the years. In addition a new home was built on the land during this period further enhancing the value of the property.

It is not clear when Alexander built his new home. One possibility is that he used his remaining capital from his more affluent days to make the original down payment and to build the home when he first moved onto the property in 1892. A more likely possibility is that it was built later. George Findley believes the house was built in about 1903, and prior to that the family, like most others of the time, lived in log houses chinked with dirt and sod. He thinks that the house Alexander built was one of the first wooden frame houses in the area and that its building was a proud achievement for the time. George's memory is probably correct, though the large increase in mortgage value in 1901 would indicate the house was built or started at that time.

The size of the house would also indicate that it was built some time after 1900, though what would seem small by modern standards actually housed a surprising number of people in the early days. There were after 1900 only five members of Alexander's family remaining at home. Erastus Winfield was there as a bachelor, he was never to marry. Rhoda, one of the twins, had married Frank Hassell in 1898. It is not known when Jerusha Ann married Frank Shelton, but it is thought to have been before 1900 since she would have been 28 at that time. Henry Barton and Isia were still at home, but the youngest, Louie Elizabeth at age 15, had married George Findley in early 1900.

We have taken photographs of the Alexander Scott house and barn as they stood in April of 1987 and video taped those same buildings in August, 1989. If the house was built around 1903 as surmised, then the structure would have been about 85 years old at that time. The photograph of the large dead tree standing near the house is the subject of a family story told by Grace Wright, a daughter of Louie Elizabeth, who spent several summers living in the house. She tells that when Alexander arrived at this site and decided to build there, he had run over a small elm sapling with his wagon and it was bent under the wagon where he stopped. He decided to save the tree for shade in the front yard of the new home. This tree grew to be a very large tree judging from the size of the trunk and dead branches lying about, and would have made a splendid shade tree indeed.

The photographs and video of the house are clear evidence of the ravages of time. The structure was in such bad shape that we did not enter it, we felt it was unsafe to do so. The house does not seem to have been a very large house, but was no doubt adequate for the family of Alexander, Keturah, Winfield, Henry and Isia. The barn appeared much larger by comparison, a not unusual circumstance on a farm. There were two other out buildings on the property when it was photographed, a "root" or storm cellar and a privy. There might have been others at one time, a chicken coop being a likely candidate. The storm cellar was used for cool storage of vegetables and meat and as a safe haven from the very heavy thunderstorms common to this part of the country, some of which produce tornadoes and violent gusty winds along with heavy rain and hail. The privy attests to the fact that the house was never equipped with running water. The water well was dug near the front porch of the house. Again we felt it was unsafe to get too near it since the well was hand dug and hence a relatively large hole lined with stone. Cement had been added later around the top as a partial cap and foundation for a hand pump. Digging such a well and lining it must have been a significant job, but was no doubt necessary since there is no nearby surface water source that could have been used by the family. The house itself was of two stories with the lower level being the living room and kitchen and the upper level being used for sleep area. It is not clear how many rooms there might have been in the house but there appears to have been three bedrooms upstairs and along with the living room and

kitchen, a sort of utility room or work area. The house has now deteriorated to the point of collapse under its own weight, in fact a branch from a tree has crushed part of the roof. There now only partially stands what was no doubt a proud achievement for Alexander Scott near the turn of the century.

The question of why Alexander and Keturah moved about a great deal, leaving Albia and Monroe County, living in Missouri for a time, back to the Albia area for five years, then to Montgomery County and Cass County, and finally settling in Montgomery County was asked of the Findley family. The remembered explanation was that Alexander was looking for a place where Keturah could feel better, that she didn't feel good most of the time. It was Izola Findley's opinion that Keturah would have felt just fine if she had quit having a baby every year!. George Findley also recalls that Keturah's health was not good and that Alexander moved about a great deal seeking a better place for her. It is not known what her ailments might have been but she died 11 years after Alexander though it is noted that she was eight years his junior.

Alexander was known to be a very devout Christian of the Universalist Church. He was apparently very well read of the Bible and not in the least bit shy about quoting from the Book to all. In fact he was known to stand in church and correct the minister in any misquote or implied deviation from the Book. It may have been that this strictly religious man had something to do with the decision of his two sons Washington and Edwin, who were known to like a good time and have a drink now and then, to leave home and seek their own fortunes, first in northern Iowa and then on to Minnesota and North Dakota. He may have also had some affect on his other sons, Winfield never married and was remembered as being not a pleasant man. Henry Barton was afflicted with a very bad stutter, a condition sometimes attributed to stress.

Alexander was known to have been able to speak the local Indian language and apparently got on well with them, though by the turn of the century, not many Indians were left in the state of Iowa.

The Findley family recalls that the children of Rosa and William Call came to live in the Scott house for a time. The remembered circumstances were that Rosa had married William and had three daughters by him. The Call family lived somewhere in Missouri. One day Alexander received a letter from the oldest daughter in which she related that her father had "taken her mother by the arm and led her away". After three days alone without food or care, the children had gone to a neighbors house and were staying there with them and needed help. Alexander and George's grandfather, George Findley went to Missouri and retrieved the girls. This is the last that is known of either William Call or Rosa, but Rosa must have died since she is noted as "deceased" in Alexander's will and Rosa's share of his estate was divided among the girls. This tragic story did not end there. The Call children are remembered by George Findley as being "not quite right" and had to be watched all the time. They did not fit in well with the Scott household. George relates that "one of them married a bum and another, something worse". He is not sure what happened to the third or indeed, to any of them.

Not much is known about Keturah's personality. George Findley relates that she was very fond of fruit and would eat it from the tree so eagerly the juices would run down her chin. She was also lame, she was injured by a runaway team at some point in her life and, according to George, "dragged one leg". He has referred to her as Keturah Catherine in some conversations. This is the only source that identifies her middle name. He also relates that she was often referred to as "Kit", an obvious contraction of her first name. She was not a very handsome woman in appearance. Edwin Elmer Scott, one of her great grandsons, believes that she had Indian blood, the evidence being the photographs of her that still exist. In them she does indeed look to be of Indian extraction. Edwin recalls his grandmother Cora Scott telling him he was part Indian and contends that the source would obviously be Keturah. However, none of the Findley family believes that Keturah had an Indian heritage, and there is no evidence of any Indian blood in the Boggs family line, nor indeed, in any branch of the Scott family tree.

There exists a family portrait of Alexander and Keturah Scott and ten of their children. The original photograph was annotated by Cora (Turner) Scott, wife of Edwin Everett Scott, apparently in 1957. The photograph includes Isia, Rhoda, Washington, Rose, Henry Barton, Edwin Everett, Jerusha Ann, Winfield, Etta Jane, Louie Elizabeth, Alexander and Keturah. On the back of the photograph Cora has written, "Scott Family-all dead but the little girl. She is Aunt Lou, about 72 now. 1957".

Dating the photograph is a matter of conjecture. Louie Elizabeth was born in 1884. Guessing her age in the photograph to be about six, the photograph would have been taken in about 1890, or within a year or two of that date. It could not have been much later than 1890, this is the year that the children started to marry and leave the household.

In the photograph, the family members all appear to be very well dressed. There are watch chains on the men, the suits and dresses all fit well, there is lace and velvet trim on the ladies dresses and the men all appear to be wearing silk ties. The shoes all seem to be in very good shape. The implication is that the family was fairly well off when the photo was taken, which correlates with the George Findley remembered financial status that Alexander enjoyed at the time. The photograph was obviously posed in an un-natural setting with false scenery and grass so it was no doubt taken in a photo shop, probably in Villisca, Iowa, though there are no identifying marks to identify the source.

The Scott men were remembered by the Findley family as all being physically of slight stature, both short and of slender build. Edwin Everett was relatively tall however. Keturah was apparently not a large woman, appearing quite small in the photographs. While the general population of America has increased in physical size over the years, the Findley family was surprised by the height and heft of their cousin Glenn's sons. Grace (Findley) Wright also relates that the Scott women were considered to be very good looking, and that the family in general, were a pretty proud bunch. The latter trait is not evident in the photograph, but certainly the Scott women deserved their reputation for looks.

There are also formal portraits of Alexander and Keturah Scott. These portraits are pasted to hard paper board backing inscribed "Twentieth Century Gallery, Red Oak, Iowa. Both Alexander and Keturah look older in these pictures than in the family portrait discussed above. The name of the studio would indicate that the pictures were taken some time after 1900, or perhaps very close to that date. It could be speculated that the turn of the century was the occasion that prompted the taking of these portraits. Velma (Findley) Case has in her possession nearly life size renditions of these same pictures. She states that they were originally the property of Henry Barton and his wife Jennie and were given to her by one of their children. The photographs have been hand colored and are mounted in darkly stained oval wooden frames with very unusual convex glass over them giving the pictures an appearance of depth and realism. These striking photographs hang in Velma's home in Tenville.

Alexander lived to the age of 73, dying on 18 January, 1905. This notice appeared in the Villisca newspaper the next day.

Alexander Scott living just east of Arlington Mill, died yesterday forenoon at about 9 o'clock of pneumonia after a short illness at the age of 73 years. The funeral will be held from the house at one o'clock Friday afternoon and the remains will be buried in Arlington Cemetery. The obituary will be published next week.

The obituary that appeared the following week was as follows.

Alexander Scott was born June 22, 1833 in Putnam County, Indiana. He came with his parents to Iowa in the early days and settled near Albia, Monroe County, Iowa where he lived for many years. He was married to Keturah Boggs November 27, 1862. To this union were born eleven children, nine of whom are living: W. C. Scott and Mrs. Rhoda Hassell of Deltramin, Minnesota; E. E. Scott of Wilton, North Dakota; Mrs. Ralph Shelton (Anna) of Afton, Iowa; Mrs. Jane Long; Mrs. George Findley; E. W. Scott; Henry Scott; and Isia Scott of this place; all of who were present at the funeral except E. E. Scott. Deceased had been a member of the Universalist Church for many years and lived a Christian life, an example to all who knew him. His wife and children mourn the loss of a true husband and kind father, but their loss is his gain. The funeral was held from the home last Friday afternoon at one o'clock, conducted by the Reverend J. K. Driver, assisted by the choir of the Presbyterian Church at Arlington. Many friends and neighbors attended the service to sympathize with the bereaved in the hour of their sorrow. A large procession followed the body to its last resting place in Arlington Cemetery.

Alexander's will is recorded in the abstract of the deed on Velma Case's property in Tenville and reads as follows:

I, Alexander Scott, of Washington Township, Montgomery County, Iowa, being of sound mind and usual health make this my last will and testament.

Item 1. It is my desire that my wife, Keturah Scott, have one third of all my property so long as she lives.

Item 2. I hereby devise to my son Henry Barton Scott the undivided half interest of the farm on which I now reside, and described as follows to wit 160 acres, being the south 1/2 of the north 3/4 of Section 28. Also 3/8th of the southeast of the North 1/4 of Section 27, all in Township 72 N of Range 36W of the 5th Meridian containing 120 acres. Also 40 acres in Section 28 lying directly east from the above described land.

Item 3. To my six children to wit to Erastus Winfield Scott, Washington C. Scott, Ettie Jane Long, Rhoda M. Hassell, Anna Shelton, Isia Scott, Louie Findley, also my 3 grand daughters being daughters of the daughter Rosa Call deceased I wish the balance of my property to be equally divided after paying my just debts and my funeral expenses.

Item 4. I do appoint my two sons, Erastus Winfield and Henry Barton executors of this my last will to serve without bond.

Dated at Villisca, Iowa January 14, 1902.

The will seems to be very amateurishly drawn, or the transcription of it from the original was not done very accurately. The land description in Item 2. is not standard, and probably is not a legal description. In addition, the amount of land noted in the will is considerably in excess of what the Scott family owned at the time. The total is 320 acres in the will whereas the original purchased amount was only 168 acres. It is believed that the error is in the will. In addition, the will creates other problems.

In Item 1. of the will, Alexander leaves 1/3 of all his property to Keturah but in Item 2. he leaves all of his share of the land to Henry Barton. The family had to go to court to resolve this issue. It was resolved by giving Keturah 1/6 ownership of the land, with that property passing to Henry Barton on her death. The land was therefore owned by three people and it was so recorded when they jointly sold the South 1/2 of the Northeast 1/4 of Section 28 to an A. J. Devine for \$6,400 in January of 1911. This was the parcel on which Velma Case's home was eventually built. It is thought that the rest of the property was eventually owned by Henry Barton when he became the sole survivor of the three heirs. He apparently lost the complete farm during the Great Depression in the 1930's, having gone into debt to build a huge barn, at the time being the largest barn in the county.

Alexander's will is also confused in Item 3. He specifies six children, and then names seven. He left out Henry Barton, probably because of Item 2. In addition he failed to mention Edwin Everett. It is not known if this was a purposeful omission or not, but it does not appear that the family thought he was not mentioned on purpose. In the resolution of the real estate issue, Edwin Everett is brought into the proceedings, though he ends up with no proceeds from the action. In fact, it appears that there was no distribution of any residual estate to the family members named in Item 3. It was likely there was no estate to distribute.

Keturah did not follow Alexander in death until 1916. She spent her last 11 years in widowhood, living with her sons Winfield and Henry on the family farm. She died on March 13th, 1916, cause of death being given as arterial degeneration, chronic myocarditis, and apoplectic stroke. Her obituary in the Villisca paper was as follows. The spelling of Keturah's name was incorrect but is quoted as it appears in the paper.

Mrs. Teturah Scott died Monday morning of the week at about 8:30 at the house of her son, H. B. Scott, six miles north of Villisca. Death relieved this lady of suffering from a number of general complications which accompany old age.

Teturah Boggs was born in Monroe County of this state. She was born March 24, 1841 and had she lived till the 24th of this month, would have been 75 years of age. With exception of 7 years spent in Missouri, the deceased had been a resident of Iowa. She was married to Alexander Scott in 1863. There are nine children of that union. They are

Mrs. Frame of Lancaster Tennessee, (Etta Jane), E. W. Scott of this community, W. C. Scott of Hazelton N. Dak., E. E. Scott of Belfield N. Dak., Mrs. R. O. Shelton (Jerusha Ann) and Mrs. Frank A. Hassell (Rhoda Melissa) of Austin Colorado, Mrs. Isia Buchanan of Red Oak, Iowa, Mrs. Louie Findley of this vicinity and H. B. Scott of North of Villisca.

The deceased made her home with the latter at the time of her death. Her husband preceded her in death. Funeral services will be Wednesday afternoon at 2 o'clock at the Arlington Church. Internment will be in the Arlington Cemetery. The funeral services will be conducted by Reverend McCurdy.

DAVID WALLACE SCOTT

David Wallace Scott was the third born son of David R. Scott. His birth date is given in family bible records as 31 August, 1837, though census records indicate erroneously that he was born in 1839 in Putnam County, Indiana. It would appear from the record of David R. Scott's life in Indiana, that David Wallace was actually born in Parke County, Indiana. Indeed, the record of his military service shows that to be the case. He moved to Monroe County, Iowa with the rest of David R.'s family in 1851. He was then 14 years old.

He apparently lived with his father and helped him work the farm until the beginning of the Civil War. In a book titled, "Monroe County, Iowa, an Illustrated History" by Frank Hickenlooper, a local Monroe County historian, we find the following information. David W. Scott enlisted as a Private on August 3, 1861 in Company H of the 1st Iowa Cavalry. He died at St. Louis, Missouri on 6 January, 1864 of chronic diarrhea. His military record has been researched and the following are the highlights.

Part of the record is a Company Descriptive Book. David Wallace is noted to be at the time of entry into service, 24 years of age, 5 foot 11 inches tall, of fair complexion, hazel eyes, dark hair, born in Parke County, Indiana and a farmer by occupation. He was enlisted on June 13, 1861 by a Dan Anderson for a period of service of three years. He held the rank of Private.

During the period of his enlistment, the 1st Iowa Cavalry conducted operations almost exclusively in Missouri and Arkansas. From the muster records it is noted that David provided his own horse and horse equipment. It is presumed that meant his own saddle and other tack. There is no record of when or how much he was paid. He apparently had two or three serious illnesses. In January/February 1862 he is reported to be on 30 days furlough sick, the malady is not noted. Again he is reported as absent, sick, in Springfield, Missouri in November of 1862. On July 1, 1863 he entered the hospital at Arcadia, Missouri. He remained there until he died of chronic diarrhea on January 6, 1864. There is no record that he was ever wounded.

There are several reports by officers of the 1st Iowa that were written during the times that David Wallace Scott was with this unit. In December, 1861 a report reads that: The 1st Iowa, Colonel Warren commanding, aggregates present for duty, 386, is well equipped except in pistols and carbines. They could put in the field the above number of men, of which 200 would have Colt's pistols. The 3rd Iowa is reported to have 655 men who are also armed with sabers and 340 Colt revolvers. All other cavalry units are without firearms! The rest of the report goes on to note the deficiencies in armament and ammunition. It is clear that there had not been a great deal of preparation for war by either side. One year into the war men were still very poorly equipped to engage in serious fighting. In fact, some had no weapons at all. The movie versions of Civil War actions showing each trooper in full uniform, armed with rifle, pistol, and saber is a far cry from reality. Even at the end of the war, when Gen. George Armstrong Custer was given command of the 1st Iowa, he complained bitterly that many troopers of that outfit did not even wear pants. The facts were that they had no pants to wear. Custer was very strongly disliked by the men of this crack cavalry outfit, by the way. They considered him a martinet and very unjust in his discipline. There was even legislative action in the Iowa state government to force his removal from command of the sons of that state. Either he went or the boys came home.

There apparently were few actions in Missouri and Arkansas between regular Confederate Army troops and the Union forces in those states. The actions were more of a guerrilla warfare kind of operation with the Union forces attempting to keep the peace and prevent raiding by small groups of marauders. In March of 1862 the 1st Iowa was involved in four significant actions with what are described as bands of marauders. In one action it is reported that they killed two of the worst of the rebels, a Swykiffer and John Raftre, (both desperate men). It is also reported that there is a "disorderly state of things in Bates County, were a certain scoundrel, Jackman, heads a band of robbers and desperadoes". Also captured during that month was the notorious rebel leader, Colonel Parker, "who has so long been the terror of the northern counties". There was one action with regular troops of General Price's Army during which 19 prisoners were taken along with considerable equipment.

In July of 1862 the 1st Iowa engaged the notorious Quantrill, leader of a very large group of men who history had recorded as being far more of a vicious bandit group than a unit of the Confederate Army carrying out military orders. In this action, Quantrill had 250-300 men with an almost equal number of Union cavalry engaging him. The battle was indecisive however, less than 25 men were killed on either side. Quantrill continued his raiding, his most notable action being the burning of Lawrence, Kansas in August of 1863, during which his men killed about 150 people. Quantrill himself was killed later during a raid he was conducting in Kentucky.

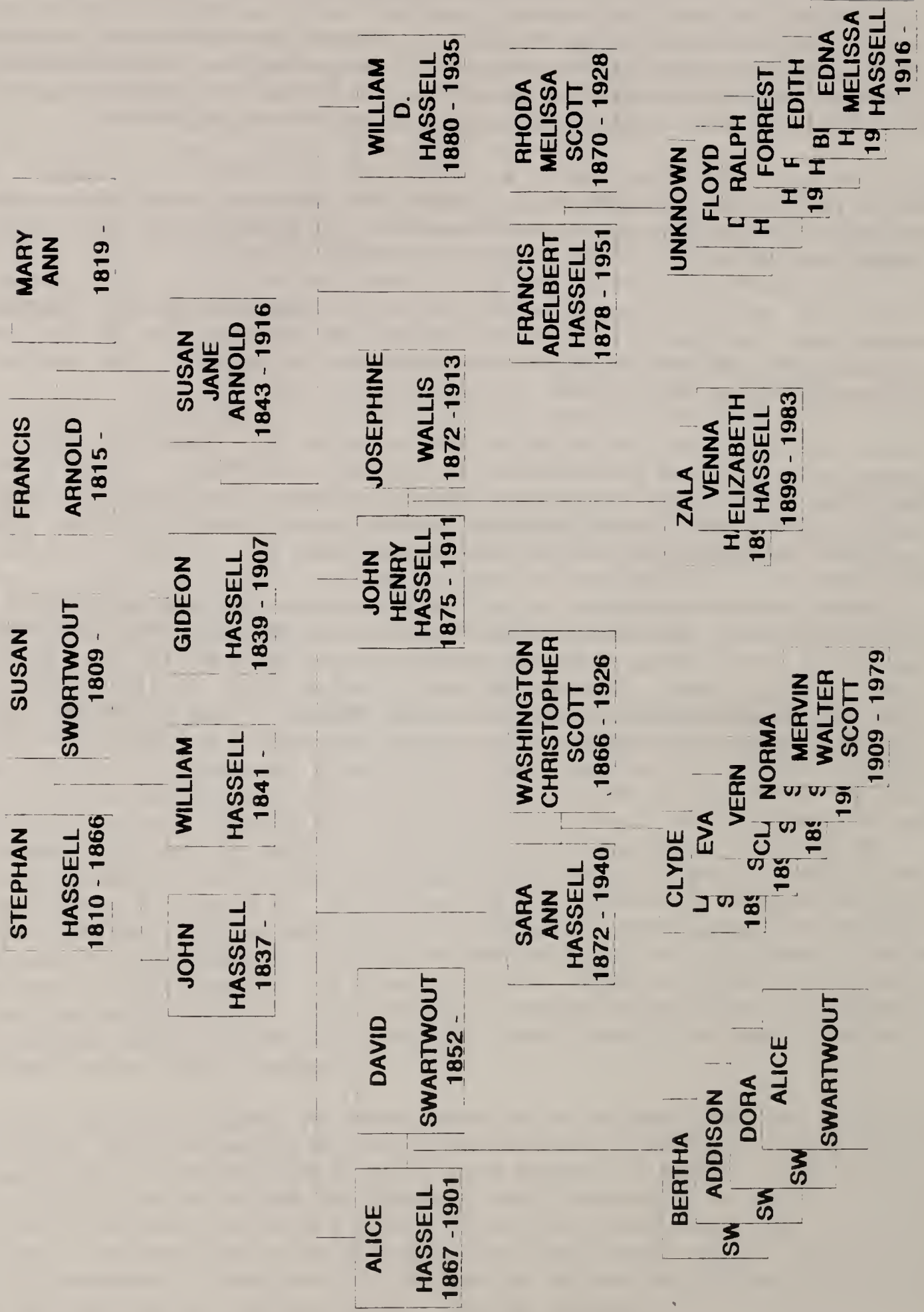
During November of 1862, the 1st Iowa made an expedition deep into Arkansas. In less than five days they traveled over 250 miles destroying a saltpeter works for making powder, an arsenal, and many weapons, capturing 60 Confederate soldiers and bringing back over 100 good horses. In December of that year the Union Army moved into Arkansas itself and operated there for a time, later returning to Missouri.

In May of 1863, the 1st Iowa saw heavy action against regular Confederate troops led by a General Marmaduke who had entered Missouri and attempted to deny the Union the use of the Mississippi River. His efforts were repulsed and he was thrown into retreat. The 1st Iowa played a significant role in this action. This was probably the last action in which David Wallace Scott took part.

In either 1862 or 1863, David Wallace sent his mother a Valentine Card. This card was found in a bible which was probably the family bible of James Moore Scott, David Wallace's older brother. The bible is now owned by the George Robert Scott family of Casper, Wyoming. On the front of the card is a multi-colored heart suspended by a chain. Within the heart it reads: "Dear Mother, Remember Me, David W. Scott, Soldier Boy." On the back is inscribed: "From your Boy, David W. Scott, Army of the Frontier".

David Wallace was admitted to hospital on July 1st, 1863. He was apparently ill with some form of diarrhea and was in the hospital for six months before he died. Un-sanitary water was a likely cause of various forms of dysentery and there was little in the way of effective medical treatment. That he survived for six months after being admitted is probably unusual. He preceded his father in death by 15 days, dying on 6 January, 1864. He is buried in the Jefferson Barracks National Cemetery in St. Louis, Missouri. His grave is numbered 7729 in Section 6. He was a common soldier who died a common soldier's death. It was such men as he who preserved the union.

THE HASSELL FAMILY



THE HASSELL FAMILY

The Hassell family became related to the Scott family with the marriage of two of Alexander Scott's children to two of Gideon Hassell's children. Washington Christopher Scott married Sarah Ann Hassell in 1895 and Frances Adelbert Hassell married Rhoda Melissa Scott in 1898. The following is a history of the Hassell family beginning with Stephan Hassell to the extent that it is currently known.

There has been some confusion as to the origin of the Hassell family name among the descendants of Stephan Hassell. Some thought the name to be German, though it is almost certain that Stephan was an Englishman. In addition, research on this family line reveals that in addition to the German and English origins, there are a large number of Hassells in the Midwest who originated in Norway. Our only reference to the origin of the name states that the name applied to "one who came from or lived near Hazel or a place that hazel trees grew". Whatever the case, English, German, or Norwegian, the name is relatively uncommon.

The first known recorded information on the Stephan Hassell family is the 1840 Federal Census for Greenville, Greene County, New York. The census lists the Stephan Hassell family household, which consisted of Stephan Hassell age 30 to 40, a female age 30 to 40, and two male children under the age of five. There is no other information in this census. In 1850 the Stephan Hassell household is found in the same location as 1840 and lists Stephan, age 40, his wife Sarah, age 41, and three sons, John, Gideon, and William, ages 13, 11, and 9 respectively. Stephan was therefore born about 1810 while Sarah was born in about 1809. Stephan's occupation is listed as blacksmith and he has real estate valued at \$300.00, this probably being his blacksmith shop. There is in addition, a hired man, also listed as a blacksmith, living in the Hassell household. Stephan had been born in England, but all others in the household had been born in New York.

It is not known if Stephan came to America with his parents or alone as a young man. The Index to the 1820 Federal Census lists no Hassell family in New York State in that year. The 1830 Federal Census lists no Hassell family in Greene County in that year. If Stephan Hassell, alone or with his parents, came straight to Greene County from England, it must have been after 1830. His oldest son was 13 in 1850 and born in New York, so Stephan's marriage probably took place in New York in about 1836 or 7. Stephan therefore probably arrived in America between the years of 1830 and 1836. The Index to the Immigration Records for the Port of New York have been examined for that period and no Hassell family is listed.

Stephan Hassell married Sarah Sworthduunat (probably Swartout or Swartwout), probably in Greenville in about 1836, though no record of their marriage has been located. Nothing is currently known of Sarah's ancestry. All of their children, three sons, were born in Greenville. John was born in about 1837, Gideon in 1839 and William in 1841. All three grew to manhood there.

It appears that Stephan Hassell remained in the Greenville area from his arrival in that area until he died. The records of the United Methodist Church of Greenville and Norton Hill, New York, which begin in 1862, contains an entry which states that Stephan Hassell "died in the Lord" on 21 April, 1866 and that he was a member of that church. It appears however, that some time after 1850, Stephan moved across the county line to the town of Westerlo in Albany County where his son Gideon is known to have lived after the Civil War, since Stephan has not been found in the 1860 census in Greenville. This census is mostly unreadable however, so he could have been in either place.

Gideon Hassell was born in October of 1839. This date is given on the 1900 Minnesota Federal Census for Norman County, Spring Creek Township. The year 1839 also appears on his gravestone but not the month. His death certificate specifies the date of his birth to be 12 October, 1839. The 1900 census states that he was born in New York State, that his father was born in England, and his mother was born in New York. Gideon's death certificate states that his father's name was Stephan Hassell, born in England. His mother's name is given as Susan Sworthduunat, the spelling of that name being in doubt, and that she was born in the United States. These documents together leave no doubt of the direct lineage of Gideon Hassell from Stephan Hassell.

The Hassell family has not been located in the 1860 New York Federal Census, but Gideon Hassell is recorded as having enlisted in the Union Army on 28 August, 1862 at Greenville, New York. He joined the Union Army at the age of 23 as a private for a period of three years. The Civil War had begun over a year earlier.

Gideon's Company Descriptive Book describes him as being 5 foot, 8 inches tall, with a florid complexion, that is, rosy or ruddy. His eyes are hazel, his hair is brown, that he was born in Greenville, New York and his occupation is laborer. He reported for duty in New York City on 17 November, 1862 along with about 700 other men from Ulster and Green County, New York. Together they formed the 156th New York Volunteer Infantry Regiment with seven companies. Three additional companies of men from Staten Island were added bringing the Regiment to full compliment.

On December 4th, 1862 the Regiment boarded the steamer M. Sanford and put to sea, its destination New Orleans, Louisiana. The steamer ran onto a reef in the Florida Keys and the Sanford was destroyed. The Regiment suffered no casualties but lost all of their provisions and armament. A gunboat rescued them and took them to Key West, and from there by another steamer they managed to reach New Orleans on Christmas Day. The Regiment encamped at Carrollton, about 8 miles above New Orleans, and stayed there through the winter. Control of the Mississippi River was a major objective of both sides and at this stage of the war, the North held the lower and upper reaches of the river while the South held the central portion with strong points at Port Hudson and Vicksburg.

In April a campaign was initiated to take control of Louisiana to the west of the Mississippi and the 156th N.Y. had its baptism of fire at Fort Bisland. Four men were killed and several wounded, while taking 84 rebels prisoner. The Regiment remained in central Louisiana until the first of June when it moved to the banks of the Mississippi River and crossed it where the river becomes the border between Louisiana and Mississippi. On the 14th of June the 156th joined the assault on the fortifications at Port Hudson. The Port surrendered on 9 July, 1863, four days after the fall of Vicksburg. The Regiment then moved down river to Baton Rouge and remained there until the spring of 1864, their duty being essentially an occupying force along the lower Mississippi River, which was now completely controlled by the North.

The Regiment was part of a second expedition into western Louisiana toward the Red River which was, over-all, something of a disaster, though the 156th's directed involvement was limited to a few skirmishes with Texas Cavalry units. They returned to the Baton Rouge area.

On the 1st of August, 1864 the Regiment again boarded a transport ship and set to sea, destination, Washington D.C. The whole of the 19th Corps, to which it belonged had been sent to the assistance of General Sheridan in clearing the Shanandoah Valley of Confederate troops under the command of General Early, C.S.A.

One of the other units of the 19th Corps was the 114th N.Y. Infantry, a regiment also formed of men from the Ulster and Green County area, and which had been with the 156th throughout the war. What follows are excerpts from the history of that Regiment dealing with the Battle of Winchester on 19 September, 1864.

...."A glaring and blood-red sun arose over the Blue Ridge, and ushered in the fatal day of the 19th of September. Oh! how many a healthy and cheerful young man never saw the decline of that fiery orb! What horrid scenes of carnage and death were witnessed, before yonder burning sun had hid himself behind the western mountains!

....the roar of cannon along the front proved that the cavalry had fallen upon the enemy, and convinced the men that a battle was imminent....

....all the while the sounds of battle kept increasing as the troops were hurried at a sharp pace forward, down a steep declivity, through the clear stream of the Opequan, and into a deep gorge where flowed the turbulent waters of Abraham Creek. Here they came upon the sickening indications of battle. A large hospital tent overflowing with a gory mass of mangled and suffering humanity. Along either side of the pike, cavalymen with horses standing aside to let the infantrymen pass.

What splendid soldiers these cavalymen were! After fighting all forenoon, there they stood, quietly holding their horses' bridles by the wayside, as cool and collected as though they had been doing nothing uncommon, while patiently awaiting their next orders.

"Are there Johnnies ahead?" "Oh yes, plenty of them, and they are gritty this morning. They mean to fight today." "Have you had much of a fight?" "Yes, we've had a close twist, but we couldn't budge 'em and we had to wait for you fellows to come up..."

....the troops came out of the ravine upon a high rolling country, covered with farms, which stretched out before them two miles to Winchester. Several strips of woods intervened between the army and the town. The 19th Corps moved a half mile to the right of the road and placed in position behind a belt of forest. The Second Division was disposed as the advance line and our first Division formed several hundred yards in its rear as reserve and support....

....across the fields came the faint notes of a distant bugle. The strains were warbled forth from hundreds of brazen throats, and instantly the immense army silently and majestically commenced to move slowly forward. In front of the Regiment the Second Division was seen to disappear into the forest....

....a few shots were heard a short distance ahead and immediately the solemn wood roared and echoed with the crash of a thousand muskets. Then yells and shrieks, the hissing noise of missiles, the heavy deep bass of artillery, the humming of fragments of shells....so suddenly did the battle open than many were struck down before they had time to realize their danger....

....the line continued to move forward and they came out into the open sunshine. Before them was a broad undulating field, and there, upon the opposite edge, along the border of a forest was a long line of rebels in full view....

....the Second Division was routed and was pouring back across the field upon our lines. The rebels, seeing the new threat, shifted their fire onto the 114th, now standing in the open, unable to return fire for fear of hitting the retreating men of the Second Division. Still the Regiment moved forward. In an instant of time scores of our men were bleeding on the ground and in our tracks were the bodies of our comrades....

....Col. Lee rode up and down before the men, making himself heard above the din of the conflict, strengthening and cheering the men on by his own example. In a moment he was shot from his saddle. Major Curtis assumed command. His horse died under him, so he led them on foot....

....five hundred feet in front of the trees the troops of the 114th dropped flat into the grass, all alone and exposed. While they lay there alone and bleeding the remainder of the brigade was maneuvering under cover of the woods and finally opened fire from the edge of it behind the 114th. The men of the 114th loaded their pieces while lying on their backs, rolled over to fire, and back again to reload. The rebels, veterans of Stonewall Jackson's command, fired low so the grass and earth in front of the Regiment was cut and torn up by a perfect sheet of lead. Their bullets sought the hiding places of the men.....blood was everywhere, on everything, on the bushes, in puddles on the ground....

....for an hour the 114th held its ground, and punished the rebels so severely they could not take advantage of the rout of the Second Division and turn the right flank of Sheridan's Army. At last the rebel line retired to the cover of the woods behind them, and all that was left of the Regiment sprang to their feet and under heavy fire, in a steady line moved back to the forest. Here they were united with the 116th and the 156th, but their labors were not ended....

....ordered the three Regiments to charge across the field where the 114th had so recently lain in the grass, and with a defiant yell, rushed forward onto that contested field. They kept steadily on their course, the color-bearer was shot down, Lt. Breed seized it and carried it before the Regiment. They reached a rail fence and

reclining behind it, delivered murderous fire on the enemy, fully recovered from the first shock of battle and now cool and deliberate and wanting full revenge for the havoc created on their ranks. Lt. Breed died there, another trooper took the colors....

....their ammunition exhausted, they retired to their own line of woods, and the rebels, thinking the field was theirs, themselves came out of their woods to pursue them. The Regiment was quickly re-supplied with ammunition and for two hours, held the tree line as the rebels tried to move across the field. At last, the rebel force again retired out of sight....

....behind them suddenly a line of fresh troops, the Eighth Corps coming to their relief. The hour of Early's doom had come. The Eighth Corps charged across the field and what remained of the 114th, 116th, and 156th watched them disappear into the woods that the rebels so recently held. Our brigade was ordered to follow and finally we crossed un-impeded the blood-stained field, and entered the opposite forest....

Three men out of every five of the 114th did not cross that field the last time with the survivors of the brigade. Nor did Gideon Hassell of the 156th. There is a Casualty Sheet in his record that in typical Army fashion states merely that Gideon was wounded in action on 19 September, 1864 at Winchester. Nor was the nature of his wound(s) specified. He is next reported by his company as absent, sick, at Satterlee U.S.A. General Hospital, Philadelphia, Pennsylvania. It is also noted that he owes the Suttler \$5.00. A Suttler was a camp follower or peddler who provided provisions etc. to the soldiers. There is no record that Gideon ever paid this debt. Gideon's wounds were no doubt severe since he remained hospitalized for almost 8 months. He was discharged from the Army at Satterlee General Hospital by order of the War Department on 17 May, 1865. He apparently fully recovered from his wounds. Though he is known to have been a member of the GAR in later years, it was not known by any of this generation of his descendants until recently that he ever served in the Civil War, let alone nearly lost his life in it.

Gideon was mustered out at Philadelphia, Pennsylvania and he likely returned to the Greenville, New York area. The records of the United Methodist Church in Greenville reveal that he married Jane Arnold on 22 October, 1865. The church record states that he was then from the town of Westerlo in Albany County, about 10 miles north of Greenville. His new wife, Jane Arnold, whose full name from later records was Susan Jane Arnold, was recorded in the church records as being from Oneonta, Otsego County, New York. This city is 50-60 miles west of the Greenville area. It is not clear how Jane and Gideon would come to know each other, or why they would be married in the groom's church rather than the bride's. There is an Arnold family headed by a James Arnold living in Westerlo in 1830. James Arnold may have been Jane Arnold's grandfather. The Hassell and Arnold families may therefore have known each other for many years prior to Gideon and Jane's marriage.

Not a great deal is known of the Arnold family. The only information currently known is located in the 1850 Delaware County and 1865 Otsego County, New York Census which reveals that Jane's father was named Francis Arnold, born in 1815 or 1816 in Albany County, New York. Her mother was named Mary Ann, born in 1819 or 1820 in Otsego County, New York. The oldest child of seven was a son named Harvey, born in 1839 or 1840 in Delaware County, New York. This would indicate that Francis Arnold and Mary Ann were married in that county in about the year 1838. Susan Jane was the next born, born in 1842, also in Delaware County, as were the next four children. The last child, Alice, was born in Otsego County in 1863. Francis and his family therefore relocated from Delaware County to Otsego County at or near the beginning of the Civil War. The only other information in these census is that Francis Arnold was a farmer.

Gideon and Jane's first child, whom they named Alice, was born in New York according to census data, presumably in Westerlo, on 17 October, 1867. Their next known child, Sarah Ann, again according to census data, was born in Iowa in 1872. The Gideon Hassell family therefore migrated to Iowa between these two dates. So far, no Hassell family has been found anywhere in the 1870 census.

In 1880 the Hassell family is found in the Federal Census for Bennezzette Township of Butler County, Iowa. We find two Hassell families living next to each other there. Sarah Hassell is now 71 and she is widowed. She is living in Gideon Hassell's household. Gideon is listed with his wife, Jane S., along with a daughter, Alice, who is 12 years old, Sarah Ann who is 7, John Henry age 5, and Francis, age 1. All but Alice had been born in Iowa.

The second family is that of William Hassell, Gideon's younger brother. His wife is named Marget E. and they have three children, a son named Francis, age 8, and two daughters, Marthia E. and Ida May, ages 5 and 1 respectively. William and Marget's marriage probably took place in New York since Marget was born there as were her parents. However, all of their children were born in Iowa, the oldest in 1872, suggesting that the marriage took place in about 1871. This would suggest that the Hassell families migrated to Iowa in 1871 or 1872. No Hassells can be found in the 1870 Iowa Census, which supports that conclusion.

There is no further information on Stephan's oldest son John, except that he is recorded as joining the United Methodist Church in Greenville, New York on 13 March, 1864, and he apparently stayed in that area.

A Christmas card, sent to Edna (Hassell) Cranor from Cora (Turner) Scott sometime in the 1950s, adds some interesting information regarding the Hassell family. She states in her card: "The Hassells were New York people. An Uncle John came out once to visit them. He was Gideon Hassell's wife's brother, but I don't recall his last name or town. There were two Hassells, Bill and Gideon. Gideon was the forefather of your (Edna Hassell's) branch. Bill came to Oregon or Washington either 65 or 70 years ago. Bill's wife's maiden name was Swartwout. Gideon's wife was a New York woman. Her children were John, William, Sarah, and Alice. My girl friend married John Hassell. Her maiden name was Josie Wallis. Bill never married, Sarah married my brother-in-law, W. C. Scott."

Cora was probably in error in her discussion of the visiting Uncle John. He was likely Gideon's and William's brother John who visited them from New York. Unfortunately she gave no date. Cora was a close friend of the Gideon and William Hassell families in Iowa, and she may be correct in stating that William went to Oregon or Washington. In another letter she states that one of William's daughters named Francis married a man by the name of Cyrus Fuller, and this family also migrated to the Pacific Northwest. This William Hassell family line has not so far been located after 1895 when they were still in Iowa. There definitely was a Swartwout connection to the Hassell family, and William's wife was probably named that. In naming Gideon's children Cora left out Francis Hassell, no doubt because she was writing her card to one of Frank's daughters. The last "Bill" mentioned would have been Gideon's youngest son.

The 1885 Iowa Census locates the same two Hassell families still together in Butler County. William's wife is called Emma in this census, so her name was probably Marget Emma. Francis is called Frankie, Marthia E. is now Ella so her name was probably Marthia Ella. Ida is still Ida and another son has been born, he is 4 and is called Georgie. Sarah Hassell, Stephan's wife, is still living but is now listed in the William Hassell household. Gideon Hassell and Jane are listed, but the oldest daughter Alice is not. She would have been 17 or 18 at the time of this census and so she could have either died or married during this five year period. Sadie, or Sarah, is listed along with John and Francis. In addition another son has been born, he is called Willie and is 4 years old.

A neighboring family in the 1885 census is that of David and Alice Swartwout. He is 33 but she is only 18. It is very likely that Alice Swartwout is the former Alice Hassell. In addition to Alice's age being correct, this assumption is based on the fact that this Swartwout family is associated with the Hassell family in later years in both Iowa and in Minnesota. The David and Alice Swartwout family appears in the 1895 Iowa State Census in Hancock Township of Cerro Gordo County near the Hassell family with children Bertha, Addison, and Dora. There is a Bertha and an Addison Swartwout living with Gideon Hassell in 1905 in Minnesota and are 19 and 16 years old at the time. They are of the right ages to be the son and daughter of Alice and David Swartwout and therefore Gideon's grandchildren.

Another conjecture related to the Swartwout name is that this may be the correct spelling of Stephan Hassell's wife Sarah's maiden name. If this is the case, then both David Swartwout and Marget Emma Swartwout may have been related in some way to Sarah.

As previously noted, Gideon's wife was named Susan Jane, though her given names are often reversed in official records. There are several references. A land mortgage record in Norman County, Minnesota has her as S. J. Hassell. Her daughter Sarah's marriage record to Washington Christopher Scott records her as Jane. Family records and memories recall that she was called Jennie. Her death certificate reads Susan Jane Hassen. Her given names were probably Susan Jane. Her last name was Arnold, this name being recorded on Sarah's wedding record. There is conflicting information on her birth date. Susan Jane (Arnold) Hassell is recorded in the 1900 census as having been born in New York State in July of 1841 and also that both of her parents were born there. However, in 1905 she is noted as being 62 years of age at the time of that census which would give her birth year as 1843. Her death certificate gives her birth date as 5 July, 1843. She was likely born on the 1843 date. Her death certificate also gives a New York birth place.

As noted above, Gideon and Susan Jane were married in New York on 22 October, 1865, and their first child Alice was born in 1867 while their second child Sarah was born in 1872. There therefore could have been an additional child born after Alice, but there is currently no known record of another birth. The known children, in order of their births, were as follows. Alice was born in 1867, probably in Greenville, Green County, New York. Sarah Ann Hassell was born 29 August, 1872, in Greene, Butler County, Iowa. John Hassell was born on 9 January of 1875 in Iowa, probably Butler County. Francis was born on 1 November, 1878 in Butler County, Iowa. William was born on 21 November, 1880, also in Butler County, Iowa. Since there are in some cases three and four year gaps between the births of these known children, there may have been other children born to Gideon and Susan that did not survive.

The Hassell families are located in Ell Township, Hancock County, Iowa in the 1895 Iowa State Census. It is not known when the family moved from Butler County, but if it is assumed that the Hassell families and the David Swartwout family went to Hancock County together, it would appear that the move was made after the birth of Bertha Swartwout in 1887 in Butler County and the birth of Addison Swartwout in Hancock County in 1890. If William migrated to the Pacific Northwest as Cora (Turner) Scott avers, he would have done so after 1895. The Hassell families had certainly migrated to Hancock County by 1892 since Sarah Ann Hassell married Washington Christopher Scott on 17 February, 1892 in Merserve, Iowa, a small town in the very southwest corner of Cerro Gordo County. She was 20 years old and Washington Scott was 26. Washington Scott, along with his brother Edwin E. Scott, was farming on rented land in Union Township of Cerro Gordo County. Ell Township of Hancock County and Union Township of Cerro Gordo County lie next to each other across the county line making the Scott and Hassell families near neighbors.

John Hassell, Gideon's oldest son, married Josephine Wallis on 25 December, 1895. This marriage took place in Clear Lake, Iowa in Cerro Gordo County. Cora (Turner) Scott who was Washington Scott's wife, wrote in a letter many years later, that she and Josephine, or Josie as she was called, were very good friends and in that letter states that Josie had married John Hassell.

In the year of 1895, members of the Scott and Hassell families made plans to relocate in Minnesota. It is not known what the motivation was, except that the soil in the Red River Valley in western Minnesota was formed at the bottom of an ancient glacier formed lake and was extremely fertile, flat, and easy to cultivate. This land would have no doubt been attractive to any farmer of the time. In addition, later records seem to indicate that a man named Frank H. Barnard was involved in this decision. This man was later known to have extensive land holdings in Minnesota and North Dakota. He was also of the Clear Lake, Iowa area according to later land records, and could have been a financier or recruiter of farmers to take up land in Minnesota and North Dakota. Whatever the case, the Norman County, Minnesota land records reveal that in 1895, Gideon Hassell, Washington C. Scott, and Edwin Everett Scott all bought land in Norman County. These purchases were all with a mortgage. The plan apparently was for each of these families to relocate as it became feasible to do so. Records show that Gideon was the first to move.

It appears that Gideon Hassell moved to Minnesota in the Spring of 1897. The 1905 Minnesota State census lists the time of residence in that state. Gideon Hassell in June of 1905 declared that he had been a resident of Spring Creek Township for 8 years and 2 months at that time. This would indicate that he left Iowa and moved to Minnesota

in April of 1897. The entry for Frank Hassell and his wife Rhoda also lists them as being in the state for 8 years, so Frank Hassell no doubt came to Minnesota with his father. In fact it appears that all of his children, with perhaps the exception of Alice, arrived in Minnesota in that year.

In the 1900 Federal Census for Norman County, Minnesota, Gideon Hassell's household consists of himself and Jennie, William, and Frank and Rhoda. Rhoda is listed as a daughter-in-law. They have a boarder by the name of Fred C. Nelson. John Hassell is not living in Gideon's household.

In 1901 the previously mentioned Frank H. Barnard purchased Gideon Hassell's farm. The exact nature of this transaction is not clear, since Gideon continued to live on this farm with his family. It is possible that title was passed back to Frank H. Barnard due to lack of payments on the mortgage. Gideon apparently became a renter or lessee of the farm since he continued to work this farm till the time of his death.

Gideon Hassell in the 1905 Minnesota state census is still in Spring Creek Township, his family now reduced to Gideon, Jennie and their son William.

Gideon Hassell died 30 July, 1907, the cause of death on his death certificate being given as heart disease. News of his death appeared in both Norman County Newspapers. The Norman County Index reported on 31 July, 1907 that:

SUDDEN DEATH

Gideon Hassell, aged 68, a farmer of Spring Creek, died suddenly Tuesday afternoon. He had his dinner at his son's farm, after which he left for his place. Upon reaching there he started for the hay field, and shortly after groans were heard by members of his family. Upon investigation Hassell was found unconscious and soon passed away. Dr. Holmes was called but life was extinct. Hassell had heart trouble some years ago and this was probably the cause of his death although he had appeared to be in perfect health lately. The deceased was born in England in 1839 and came to this county about twelve years ago.

The reported place of Gideon's birth is in error. The Norman County Herald reported his death somewhat differently on August 1st.

DROPPED DEAD

Givon Hassell, a well known farmer residing in Lockhart Township, died suddenly yesterday. He had been to the Lockhart creamery with cream and on returning home at about two o'clock he was taken with heart failure and fell dead in the door yard of his own home. He was 68 years of age and a veteran of the Civil War. Besides a wife he leaves four children.

On August 7th the Norman County Herald Reported that:

Mr, and Mrs. Jno Hassell, of North Dakota, are here--called by the death of his brother, Mr. Gideon Hassell.

The funeral of Gideon Hassell occurred from his home on Thursday of last week. Burial was made in Fertile. A large gathering of friends and neighbors testified to the respect felt for him. The Holland student, Mr. Strangerga, conducted the services.

Also in the Norman County Index on 8 August appeared:

CARD OF THANKS

We wish to express our sincere thanks to the many friends who so kindly assisted during the funeral of our beloved husband and father, Gideon Hassell.

Mrs. Jane Hassell and Family

As reported above, Gideon Hassell is buried in the Pleasant Hill Cemetery in Fertile, Minnesota. His gravestone is marked "Gideon Hassell" "1839-1907" It bears the following inscription. "Although he sleeps his memory doth live, and cheering comforts to his mourners give. He followed virtue as his surest guide, lived as a Christian, as a Christian died". There are no other stones associated with his grave, but there are two other persons known to be buried there. One is his wife Jennie and the other his daughter Alice. Though there are no markers or records, the obituaries of both his wife and his oldest daughter note that they are buried in the The Pleasant Hill Cemetery in Fertile. This is a well kept city cemetery but the records are so poorly kept that Gideon's grave is not listed in them, nor are other members of his family. His grave stone was found by on site search.

It appears from the tax records that William took over the Gideon Hassell farm after his father died. William paid the taxes in 1907, 1908, and 1909. We find Mrs. Jane Hassell overwritten with Willie Hassell in the 1909 tax records for some reason. Willie D. Hassell also paid personal property taxes in 1910, 1911, and 1912, but none after that date. However, no Hassell family can be found in Spring Creek Township in the 1910 or 1915 censuses. The disposition of the Gideon Hassell farm and where the Hassells went at this time are unknown. It is assumed that since there are no real estate taxes paid, the farm was never fully owned by William Hassell and he eventually left it and became a farm laborer as his death certificate indicates.

Jennie Hassell, along with her sons Frank and William, attended John Hassell's funeral in Renville, Minnesota in October of 1911. The obituary of John Hassell states that his mother attended the funeral and that she was then residing in Fertile, Minnesota. Fertile is in Polk County which lies to the north of Norman County.

The above notwithstanding, according to her death certificate, Susan Jane Hassell died in Lockhart Township in Norman County on 1 June, 1916, cause of death being given as acute diarrhea and euteritis and old age. It is not clear why she does not appear in the 1910 or 1915 census, since she apparently did not move from Lockhart Township after Gideon's death. The death record does not give a place of burial. The Norman County Herald reports the following on 31 May of 1916.

Mrs. Scott of Hasselton, N.D. arrived Friday morning to spend some time with her mother Mrs. Hassell, who is very ill.

The Mrs. Scott referred to is Sarah, Jennie's daughter and wife of Washington Christopher Scott. They lived in Hazelton ND, the corruption to Hasselton being somewhat amusing. On 14 June the same paper reported that:

Mrs. Hassell died Thursday morning and was buried at the Fertile Cemetery Friday, Rev. Symons, of Ada, conducting the funeral services. The bereaved relatives have our heartfelt sympathy.

The latter article indicates that Jennie was buried with Gideon in the same plot in the Pleasant Hill Cemetery in Fertile. There is no stone to mark her grave, nor does her name appear on the stone that marks Gideon's grave.

ALICE HASSELL, Gideon and Jennie Hassell's oldest daughter, was born in 1867 in New York and moved to Iowa with her parents in about 1871. When she was about 18 years of age, about 1885, she married a man named David Swartwout, David being 15 years her senior, having been born in about 1852 in Wisconsin. They lived near her father Gideon, being found as neighbors in the 1885 and 1895 Iowa censuses in Butler and Hancock Counties.

There were three children born of this marriage. Bertha was born in 1887 in Butler County, Addison in 1890 in Hancock County, and Dora was born in 1893 in Hancock County.

It is not known where the family is located in 1900, but in the Norman County Index newspaper of 26 September, 1901, the following appeared.

"Last Saturday morning occurred the death of Mrs. D. Swartwout of heart disease at the home of her parents Mr. and Mrs. Hassell. The funeral was held Sunday at the house and interment was in the Fertile Cemetery. The husband who is left with several small children has the sympathy of the community."

It is not known what David Swartwout did after this time, no subsequent record of him can be found. However in 1905, two of the Swartwout children, Addison and Bertha are living with their grandfather Gideon.

In 1910, the census indicates that Bertha is hired out as a servant in the W. D. Hazel residence in Spring Creek Township while Addison is a hired hand on the Gus Erickson farm in Lockhart Township.

In the 1920 census, Dora Swartwout has married a man named Roger Downing, and has a son named Roger Downing Jr. who was born in 1914. Dora and Roger therefore married about 1913. Living with Dora and Roger are Addison, now 31, a farm hand, and Bertha, now 33, working as a cook on a farm.

No further research has been done on this branch of the Hassell family.

JOHN HENRY HASSELL, Gideon and Jennie Hassell's oldest son, was born in Butler County, Iowa on 9 January, 1875. He is listed with his fathers family in the 1880, 1885 and 1895 censuses in Butler County and Hancock County, Iowa. On 25 December, 1895, John married Josephine Wallis in Union Township of Cerro Gordo County. Since the marriage license was written on the 20th of December, it was a planned Christmas wedding. The Clear Lake Iowa Mirror reported the wedding as follows.

MARRIED

On the 25 inst. at the home of the bride in Union Township, John Hassell, son of Mr. and Mrs. Gideon Hassell of Ell Township, Hancock County, and Josephine Wallis, eldest daughter of Mr. and Mrs. S. W. Wallis.

An arch decorated with evergreens and flowers was arranged in one corner of the room from which depended in the center a bell and horseshoe, under it to music from the organ by Miss Chapin the bridal couple, with their attendance, took position and exchanged their nuptial vows and were pronounced husband and wife. Cordial congratulations were extended, an elaborate repast was served; after which a fine display of useful and ornamental presents was formally presented to the bride and groom in behalf of the forty guests present, and with them the best wishes for a happy and prosperous wedded life. Thus another young couple start to build a home for themselves and the wish of all is for their success.

THE WALLIS FAMILY

Josephine Wallis was the daughter of Stephan W. Wallis. The Wallis family originates in England with Samuel Wallis, who was Stephan. W. Wallis' grandfather. Stephan Wallis was also the name of Stephan W. Wallis' father, he too being born in England. Stephan W. Wallis, was born in Kent, England 17 August, 1848.

What we know of the S. W. Wallis family is derived primarily from the obituaries of S. W. Wallis and that of his wife, Elizabeth Ann (Everest) Wallis. Elizabeth died in May of 1911. Her obituary appeared in the Clear Lake Mirror and is as follows.

CALLED TO OTHER SIDE

After months of suffering Mrs. S. W. Wallis bid her family farewell on Monday evening, May 15th, and entered into the world where suffering and pain is unknown. On November 28th, last, Mrs. Wallis submitted to a surgical operation in the hope of her health might be restored. Everything was done that could possibly be done by skilled physicians and a loving husband and family, but without avail. During the winter she did not seem to gain strength but this spring hopes were entertained for her recovery since she had become considerably stronger and was able to get out of the house on two or three occasions. A little over a week ago a relapse came and since that time to her death she suffered intensely and death surely came as a relief to her.

Elizabeth Ann Everest was born in England December 19, 1850. At 5 years of age she came to America with her parents locating in Kendall County, Illinois. There she grew to womanhood and so on the 4th of July, 1870, was united in marriage to Mr. S. W. Wallis. After spending some years in Illinois, Mr. and Mrs. Wallis moved to Iowa locating on a farm south of Clear Lake in the year 1887. There they continued to reside until 10 years ago when they took up their residence in this city.

To this union six children were born, all of them still living and are as follows: Josephine Hassell, of Renville, Minn., Mrs. Flora Sullivan, Mrs. Anna Mary Garvey and Valentine of this place, and Edward and Harry of Ellendale, N. Dak.

Deceased has been an active member of the local order of W. R. Cs. for many years and will be greatly missed by the other members of the order. She was a woman who was held in high esteem by her neighbors and friends; she had a kind and loving disposition that won her many friends.

Her husband was also a native of England-both being born and reared in the same locality and spent their earliest childhood together: hence they have been life companions. The loss to the husband and father is a keen one, indeed.

Funeral will be held from the Methodist Church on Thursday at 2:30 o'clock conducted by Rev. Stafford. Interment in the Clear Lake Cemetery. The Mirror extends sympathy to the bereaved husband and family in their sore affliction.

Elizabeth's obituary clearly establishes the date of arrival of both the Everest and Wallis families in America as 1855 and that they settled in Kendall County, Illinois. This county is in the northeast part of that state not too far from Chicago. It was in Chicago, on 27 February, 1865, that Stephan Wallis joined the Union Army. However, it states in an Adjutant General's Report that his residence was Waukegan, Illinois, this place being north of Chicago on the shore of Lake Michigan. It is therefore not known at this time exactly where Stephan lived when he joined the Union Army.

Stephan Wallis apparently waited until he was over 18 before he joined. The unit was the 153rd Illinois Volunteer Infantry. On his Company Muster and Descriptive Roll he is described as an 18 year old farmer, enlisting for a period of one year. His eyes are hazel, his hair light, his complexion fair, height is 5 feet 3 and 3/4 inches.

The history of the Illinois 153rd Infantry was very short. It was organized at Camp Fry, Illinois and mustered into service on 27 February, 1865. On 4 March, 1865 the Regiment was moved to Tullahoma, Tennessee which lies in the south central part of that state. Their assignment was to guard the Nashville and Chattanooga Railroad. There was a three company campaign into northern Alabama in the later part of March with no significant results and no casualties. Stephan Wallis may or may not have been involved in this action. On July 1st the regiment was moved to Memphis Tennessee, with no significant mission. The unit was mustered out of service on 15 September, 1865, moved to Springfield on the 24th, and the men dispersed to their homes from there.

As Elizabeth's obituary states, she and Stephan were married in 1870 in Illinois. That marriage record and other facts relating to their life in Illinois is currently being researched. They moved to Clear Lake, Iowa in 1887. The family is found in the 1895 Iowa State census in Union Township of Cerro Gordo County which is south and a bit west of Clear Lake. As noted in the obituary they later moved into Clear Lake itself and it was there that Elizabeth died in 1911.

The remainder of Stephan W. Wallis's life is reported in his obituary which appeared after his death on 14 February, 1919. It is as follows.

STEPHAN W. WALLIS CALLED BY DEATH

On Friday, February 14th, Stephan W. Wallis, one of Clear Lake's most respected citizens, and a veteran of the Civil War, answered the last role call, after a sickness of about two weeks.

Stephan W. Wallis was born on August 17, 1848, at Kent, England, immigrating to America at the age of eleven years, settling at Newark, Ill., where he enlisted when quite young, in the Civil War, a member of Co. F, 153rd Illinois Volunteer Infantry.

On July 4th, 1870 he was united in marriage to Elizabeth Ann Everest residing in Illinois until 1887, when they came to Iowa, settling on a farm north of Clear Lake, where they remained until 1901, moving to Clear Lake. Mrs. Wallis died May 18, 1911.

On April 29, 1912 he was married the second time to Mrs. Ella A. Barrows of Millington, Illinois. His health failing, they moved to California in 1915, returning to Clear Lake last fall.

Funeral services were held Sunday afternoon from the M. E. Church conducted by Rev. Jory.

Surviving him are his wife, three sons, Valentine M. Wallis of Clear Lake, Edward A. and Harry C., both of Ellendale, North Dakota; two daughters, Flora Sullivan of McGregor, N.D.; Anna Mary Garvey of Monticello, Minnesota; two grand daughters, Zala and Venna Hassell, son and daughter of Mrs. Josie Hassell (deceased daughter) all of whom were here to attend the funeral.

Returning now to John Henry and Josephine (Wallis) Hassell, it is not known where John and Josie lived after their wedding in 1895 in Iowa. They may have lived with either of their parents, or John may have started his own household at that time.

In the 1900 Minnesota Census, John is listed as head of his own household in Spring Creek Township of Norman County. John's wife Josie is listed, and he has two children. The first is a son who was born in July of 1898. The name is not clear on the record, it appears to be spelled Calaglenn. The actual name was Zala Glenn. A daughter is also listed, she being 8 months old and born in October of 1899. Her name was Venna Elizabeth. Both of these children were born in Minnesota, and their births are recorded in Norman County vital records. The 1900 census states that John and Josie had been married for four years which checks with their marriage date of 25 December, 1895.

John Hassell did not stay in the Ada, Minnesota area very long. We have found recorded in the mortgage records of Norman County of March 1902, satisfaction of a mortgage by John Hassell on the Southwest 1/4 of Section 6 of Spring Creek Township. The farm that John was working was purchased by Frank H. Barnard, and John apparently became his employee. It appears that the Norman County land transaction completed his preparation to move to the Ellendale, North Dakota area in that year to take over management of a farm owned by Frank H. Barnard and located south of the town of Guelph, North Dakota. Ellendale is the county seat of Dickey County, North Dakota which lies on the North and South Dakota border about 100 miles west of the Minnesota border. John's grand daughter, Mrs. Bonnie Beeson of Wahpeton, North Dakota has several of John and her father Zala's personal affects, one of which is an account ledger originally kept by John Hassell. He opens that ledger in the year 1902 in Ellendale.

The land that John move to was purchased by Frank H. Barnard from the North Western Land Co. in 1902 and John began to manage some sort of ranching and farming operation for Frank Barnard. There are many references in the ledger to the buying and selling of horses, so it probably was a horse farm. There were several references to sales of animals and other products to the Axtell farm, apparently a customer who lived to the east of the land John was on. In addition to the horses, there were hog sales and some machinery sales in 1907 which indicate that John was preparing to move, though it does not appear that he left the Ellendale area at that time. Among John and Zala's personal affects is a post card dated 9 August, 1908 addressed to Josie in Guelph, North Dakota.

The John Hassell family moved to Renville, Minnesota in the fall of 1909. John had entered into a partnership, again with Frank H. Barnard, now of Aberdeen, South Dakota, to operate the Barnard Farm located on the southern edge of the town of Renville. John was again the manager of the operation, and again it appears that horse

ranching was the primary focus of the farm. John had been involved in this venture for only two years when died. His obituary, which appeared on the front page of the Renville Star Farmer newspaper on 20 October, 1911, is quoted below.

DEATH OF J. H. HASSELL

PROMINENT FARMER DIES AFTER AN ILLNESS OF ABOUT TWO MONTHS

Death was caused by cancer of the stomach, at the age of 36 years. John Hassell died Friday October 13th, 1911 on the old Barnard farm south of this city, he having had charge of the farm for the past two years in partnership with F. H. Barnard of Aberdeen, S. D.

While Mr. Hassell had only lived in this community a short time he had made hosts of friends who mourn his untimely death. He was a man whose genial, cheerful and charitable disposition endeared him to every acquaintance and his sterling manhood and honor bound every acquaintance to him with bonds of love which made of each a sincere friend, nor were his friends restricted to grown people, all the children found in him a true friend and protector and loved him. To all who knew him he was honest, rugged, lovable Johnnie Hassell. (He was) The idol of his esteemed and beloved wife and his bright boy and girl who have the sincere sympathy of the community in their sad bereavement.

The funeral was held from the M. E. Church, on Monday Oct. 16, Rev E. A. Cooke, officiating. The altar and casket was nicely decorated with flowers. The internment was in Fairview Cemetery. The Pallbearers were L. E. Day, Otto Abrams, Lester Smith, Chris Bottge and Clarence and C. J. Carlson.

Those present at the funeral from abroad were: S. W. Wallis, Mrs. Flora Sullivan and Mrs. F. E. Garvey of Clear Lake, Iowa, Edward Wallis of Ellendale, N. D., mother, sisters and brothers of Mrs. Hassell; and mother and two brothers Frank and Will, of the deceased of Fertile, Minn.; Mr. and Mrs. Ed Habel and John and Nelson Habel of Hector.

Mrs. Flora Sullivan and Mrs. F. E. Garvey were sisters of Josie, and S. W. Wallis was her father rather than mother as reported. John's mother Jennie Hassell and his two brothers Frank and William attended as representatives of the Hassell family. The Habels are thought to have some family connection but it is currently unknown.

The obituary states that John Hassell was buried in the Fairview Cemetery in Renville. However, a search of that cemetery and the available City of Renville records by one of John's granddaughters did not confirm this. There is evidence that a plot was purchased by the Hassell family, but there is no record that John was buried in it. A search of the cemetery itself revealed that there was no marker on the plot in question. John Hassell's daughter Venna is remembered by her son as having purchased and sent to Clear Lake, Iowa two tombstones to mark the graves of her parents. A search of the Clear Lake Cemetery finds that there is a single stone marking the grave of both John and Josephine Hassell, and the records of the Clear Lake Cemetery record that John Hassell is buried in the grave next to Josephine. This appears to be in error. In 1993, Betty Fashant, one of John and Josephine's grand daughters requested that the funeral service in Renville investigate the Hassell plot to determine if the plot had been used. Their investigation, reported to Betty Fashant in a letter, revealed that a grave had at one time been dug in the Hassell plot and that a grave box or casket currently occupy the site. It is therefore almost certain that John Hassell had indeed been buried in the plot in Renville and still lies there.

Though it was perhaps intended, John's body was never moved to Clear Lake, and his children, very young when both John and Josie died, thought that the body had in fact been moved. Venna therefore bought a single grave stone for both her parents and had it sent to Clear Lake, thinking they both were buried there. John, however, still lies in the Renville Cemetery in Minnesota. His grand daughter, Betty Fashant, has placed a stone on that grave to mark John Hassell's last resting place.

Josie and her children remained in Renville after John's death, though it is not clear how the family managed after John died. The Renville Star Farmer newspaper occasionally reported items of interest on the Hassell family after John's death. S. W. Wallis is noted as returning to Iowa on 3 November, 1911 and Venna is noted as being in the seventh grade and on the honor roll in the newspaper in December of 1912. In January of 1913 Josie had a note of thanks put in the paper as follows. TO MY FRIENDS I wish to take this way to thank my many friends, who so kindly remembered me at Christmas time, also the Royal Neighbors. Words cannot express how I appreciate your kindness and help. Then on February 21st 1913 the newspaper reported that Josie and two children left Saturday morning for her old home in Illinois. Her actual destination was Clear Lake, Iowa.

It is not known where Josie lived in Clear Lake. Both her father, S. W. Wallis and her brother, Valentine Wallis were living there at the time and she and her children could have lived with either one. It is remembered by members of the family that she and her children lived with her father. It is possible that Zala did not stay in Iowa with his mother but went instead to live with his uncle Harry Wallis who lived in Ellendale, North Dakota, because, as it is remembered, he did not get along with his new grandmother. That Zala was in North Dakota is surmised from Josie's obituary. Josie died shortly after returning to Clear Lake on 12 May, 1913. Her obituary appeared in a Clear Lake Iowa newspaper on 13 May, 1913. It reads as follows:

DEATH OF MRS. HASSELL

On Tuesday the Death Angel beckoned to a weary and patient soul to cross the Death Valley and enter the realms of eternal bliss, and partake of the joys of everlasting life evermore in the Eternal City. The light faded from the eyes of Mrs. Josephine Hassell and the fetters of sickness and pain that had bound her for eighteen months were broken. The deceased had just passed the meridian of life, forty one years. She was the daughter of S. W. Wallis of this city. She was born at Grand Prairie, Ill. Seventeen years ago last December, she was united in marriage to J. H. Hassell, who departed this life October 1, 1911. Two children, a son and daughter, mourn her loss, besides her father, S. W. Wallis, three brothers and two sisters and other friends.

The funeral was held today at 1 o'clock from the home of her brother, V. Wallis, conducted by Rev. Plank of Lakeside Church.

A brother, Harry Wallis, and Zala Hassell, a son of the deceased came Tuesday morning from Ellendale, N. D. to pay the last sad respects to her memory.

The Renville Star Farmer also noted Josie's passing with the following article appearing on 16 May, 1913. Mrs. Hassell, who went to Clear Lake, Iowa about the middle of the winter died at that place Monday. The poor lady's trials have been many coupled with the fact that she lost her husband two years ago. She fell a victim of Bright's disease and all that medical skill could do were unavailing.

Josie's grave has been located in the Clear Lake Cemetery in the plot of her father S. W. Wallis and her mother Elizabeth. Her brother Valentine and his wife are also buried nearby. A single stone marks both Josie and John's grave, this stone having been provided by her daughter Venna some years after Josie's death. As previously noted, John Henry Hassell is actually buried in Renville, Minnesota.

Among the family memorabilia is an autograph book belonging to Josie in which she had asked family and friends:

"To my Friends,

I hope indeed that everyone
Will fill a page as I have done,
And take the trouble and the time
To write their thoughts in prose or rhyme,
So that I can, what e're befall,
The names of all my friends recall."

Cora Alice (Turner) Scott on 22 March, 1896 wrote;

"Dear Joe,

In your album there are written,
Various thoughts from different pens
Causing you to keep in memory,
Those regarded as your friends.
In this token of my friendship,
I leave for you to think of me,
When these cherished pages you're turning,
And per chance these lines to see.

Your old time chum.....Cora."

Francis Hassell, her brother-in-law, wrote on 20 March, 1896;

"Dear Sister,

What's the use of always fretting
At the trials we may find.
They are all along our path,
Travel on and never mind.

Francis Hassell."

ZALA HASSELL, John and Josie Hassell's son, was born 15 July 1898. He is recorded with his parents in the 1900 Minnesota Census in Norman County. His father died in 1911 in Renville, Minnesota and his mother in 1913 in Clear Lake Iowa. He was only 14 when both his parents were gone. It is not clear where Zala lived when his mother died. It was reported in the Renville paper that Josie's children went to Iowa with their mother in early 1913. However, when Josie died in May of that year, her obituary states that Zala came to the funeral from Ellendale, North Dakota with his uncle, Harry Wallis.

Della Plowman, a daughter of Zala, of Hutchinson, Minnesota has in her possession several post cards addressed to Zala over the years. The postmarks and addresses track his movements after his mother's death. It appears that he did live in Ellendale, North Dakota in 1913 with his uncle H. C. Wallis when his mother died. He had apparently gone there when his mother left Renville in early 1913 to go to Clear Lake. In 1914 Zala had several post cards addressed to him in Clear Lake in care of both his uncle Valentine Wallis and grandfather, S. W. Wallis. He was probably living with his grandfather. Zala's children recall that he had told them that he had run away from home when he was young. It is presumed that this occurred in 1915 when he lived with his grandfather, who had remarried after his wife had died. The senior Wallis' decided to move to California, but Zala did not want to go along since he did not like or get along with his new grandmother. It is clear from the post cards, that he ran away to Renville, Minnesota. He was about 16 when he ran away.

Zala was 17 years old when he enlisted in the Army, his children recalling that he had lied about his age to get in. The reason for his enlistment appeared in the Renville Star Farmer newspaper on 29 June, 1916.

COMPANY H GOES TO FORT SNELLING

MILITIA LEFT OLIVIA MONDAY IN SPECIAL COACH--MAY SEE SERVICE IN MEXICO

The people of the United States are receiving a rude awakening as to their unpreparedness in case of war with Mexico. The country was brought face to face with a crisis when the militia of the different states was called out last week to mobilize and prepare for service on the border or in Mexico. The small force sent in to capture the bandit Villa were fired on by the constituted authorities by order of Carranza. Company H of Olivia were drilling all week that they might be in shape to take their place in the regiment when they arrived at Fort Snelling. Saturday afternoon they received orders to entrain for the fort Monday morning. Many of the friends of the boys from here went down to bid them good bye Sunday.

Recruiting was going on all week in order to bring the company up to full war strength. In this way a large number of new men have been added to the roster of the company from the different towns surrounding. While some may look upon their enlistment as a chance for an outing at Uncle Sam's expense, it is looked upon as serious business by those who give it serious thought.

Our best wishes go with the boys and that victory will perch upon their banner. The whole Mexican situation has been a festering sore for a long time, and we should all be pleased to see a peaceable and honest government established in that benighted country.

Zala was one of those new recruits and is listed among them in an accompanying article. This article states in part;

The boys show commendable spirit in enlisting when troops are as badly needed at this time whether there is fighting or not since the present crisis has opened our eyes to the unpreparedness of our country in case of war. Before the train arrived the enlisted men led by the band and a number of little girls carrying flowers marched through the streets to the depot where the people packed the platform and grounds to see the boys off and bid them God Speed. It was eighteen years ago a like scene was enacted at the depot when the soldiers left to take part in the Spanish-American War. The ten enlisted men were not all of Renville, but enlisted here.

Zala, according to one of his daughters, was probably one of the boys who thought this whole experience was going to be "an outing at Uncle Sam's expense". If so, it appears that he was right. Zala apparently enjoyed all the travel and excitement young men experience in preparing for war without ever having to experience the terrible consequences his training had prepared him for. His unit, along with National Guard troops from Minnesota, Iowa, Nebraska and North and South Dakota, were sent to the southwest part of the country, but it is not yet known if they were involved in the Mexican border troubles with Poncho Villa. They were in that part of the country for nearly a year before the war in Europe changed their mission.

On 15 July, 1917 all the National Guard troops mentioned above were called into federal service to form the 34th Division of the U.S. Army. Zala became a member of the 125th Field Artillery, 59th Artillery Brigade, 34th Division. The Division patch or insignia was designed as a black "olla", (a wide mouthed Mexican pot), encircling a red buffalo skull, these two symbols effectively tying together the desert southwest experience of the last year with the great plains heritage from which the men came.

The Division went into training at Camp Cody in Deming, New Mexico. On 2 July, 1918 the Artillery Brigade was sent to Fort Sill, Oklahoma for training, in September rejoined the Division in New York, and by October 9th, found themselves in Liverpool, England. They are shortly in France and by 11 October, are in training again. However, on October 17, the unit is ordered skeletonized and its units are to become replacements in other Divisions. On November 13th, the 59th Artillery Brigade is organized as Corps Artillery and destined for VIII Corps, and moves to the Artillery Training Center at Clermont-Ferrand. However, the war had ended on 11 November, and the unit apparently never saw action. On 24 December, 1918 the 125th Artillery sailed for home. On the 22nd of January, 1919, Zala Hassell was discharged from the Army.

Zala apparently enjoyed his service life. His daughters recall that he told them that if they were sons, he would encourage them to join. Always a good story teller, he often told his daughters of the time in France that he got a French farmer drunk on his own wine, stole the key to the farmers wine cellar, stole wine from the cellar, took it back to camp and threw a party for the officers and senior non-coms. Zala himself was a Sergeant, then and now the backbone of the Army. The key to the wine cellar is among the family artifacts.

After the war, Zala resumed his life in the Renville, Minnesota. Zala settled in Renville because he had enlisted there and knew that there was a job waiting for him in the Smith hardware store when he got out of service. He had enlisted with one of the Smith sons, Mally Smith, and he and Zala had served together and become close friends in France. Before he was married he lived with the Smith family. Zala was also an amateur musician being able to play the violin, piano and banjo, which he played in a local dance band. In later years it is known that the Smith sons and Zala treated each other as brothers.

On 1 November, 1922 Zala married Marvel Olson, the marriage taking place in Renville. From this union were born four daughters and a son, the son dying at birth and not named. The daughters were Della Harriet, born 13 June, 1925, Uva Josephine, born 29 November, 1926, Betty Lou, born 19 June, 1928, and Bonnie Lee, born 26 November, 1945. In 1944 Zala became the post master after having been a substitute mail carrier for many years in the town of Renville. He held this job until he retired in the early 1960's. Marvel died in August of 1964. She is buried in the Fairview Cemetery in Renville in her family plot.

In October of 1973 Zala remarried. His new wife was named Inez Aalderks. They were married in Renville where she currently lives. Zala passed away in January of 1978 while in a nursing home in Olivia, Minnesota. He is buried with Marvel and their infant son in the Olson family plot in Fairview Cemetery in Renville.

VENNA HASSELL was born 15 October, 1899 in Spring Creek Township, Norman County, Minnesota. She appears with her family in the 1900 Minnesota Census and lived with her parents until they died. Her father died in 1911 in Renville, Minnesota and her mother in 1913 in Clear Lake Iowa. She was only 13 when both her parents were gone. It is thought that she lived with her mother on her uncle Valentine's farm until her mother died in 1913. Venna may have lived with either her Uncle Valentine or her grandfather S. W. Wallis. In 1915 S. W. Wallis left Clear Lake and went to Long Beach, California and apparently took Venna with him and his new wife. There is correspondence in John and Zala's personal affects that show that Venna was in California in the years 1915 and 1916 but it is not known how long she stayed there, what school she was attending, or if she obtained a degree. In 1918 S. W. Wallis returned to Clear Lake, Iowa because of failing health and it is assumed that Venna came back to Iowa with him. S. W. Wallis died in 1919, and Venna at that time probably went back to Renville to live with her brother Zala.

In the 1920 Federal Census for Renville County, Minnesota we find that Venna is living with her brother Zala in the Sam Smith household and is teaching school. A letter from the Winona State University in Winona, Minnesota states that she attended Normal School from June of 1920 through June of 1921. It is more likely that she attended summer sessions in June of 1920 and June of 1921. She was thereby certified to teach in Minnesota. Correspondence shows that she was teaching school in Bird Island, Minnesota in April of 1921.

On 1 April, 1922 Venna married Joseph Murray, whose nieces and nephews were members of her classes. Joseph and Venna subsequently move to St. Paul where Joseph became a street car conductor in that city. They had two children, Delores and Joseph Jr., born in September of 1923 and 11 February, 1927 respectively. Venna died 3 May, 1983 and is buried in the Lakewood Cemetery in Minneapolis, Minnesota. She had lived in the Twin Cities through all her married life. Her daughter Delores also died in December of 1983.

FRANK HASSELL. Frank Hassell was born on 1 November, 1878 in Butler County, Iowa. He appears with his father's family in the 1880 Federal Census and the 1885 and 1895 Iowa State Censuses. He was not married to Rhoda Melissa Scott before he came to Minnesota. They obtained a wedding license on 22 November, 1898 in Norman County, Minnesota and they were married there on the 28th of November, 1898. It appears that Rhoda had come to Minnesota with her brother Washington Christopher Scott at about the same time that the Gideon Hassell family migrated.

Rhoda and Frank no doubt knew each other while both families lived in Iowa, and it is clear that the families planned to make the move north together. When Rhoda had left her father's home in southern Iowa to live with her brothers in northern Iowa is not known.

The 1900 Federal Census lists Frank and Rhoda living in the Gideon Hassell household but in the 1905 Minnesota State Census, Frank and Rhoda Hassell are in their own household in Lockhart Township, the next township to the west of Spring Creek. Frank declares that he has lived on that property for four years so it appears that he moved to his own farm in 1901. Frank and Rhoda also have one son listed, Floyd D., age 3. This checks with family records which list Floyd Darwin's birth as 3 March, 1902. According to Edna Cranor, Frank and Rhoda's youngest child, there had been a previous birth. However, the child died in infancy and there is no record as to sex, time of birth, name, or time of death. Personal Property Tax records show that Frank Hassell is paying those taxes in Lockhart Township, School District 86, beginning in 1901. In 1907 he begins paying real estate taxes on the Northwest 1/4 of Section 24 of Lockhart Township, which coincides with School District 86. He therefore probably bought the land in 1901 and did not pay real estate taxes until 1907 when he paid off the mortgage and title passed to him.

In the 1910 Federal Census for Minnesota we find Frank Hassell with Rhoda in Lockhart Township. Two more sons have been born, Ralph L. and Forrest R., aged 2 months and 16 months respectively. Ralph Leon was born 9 June 1907, and Forrest Rebert, 5 December, 1909.

Family records show that Edith Blanche Hassell, Frank and Rhoda's first daughter and fifth child, was born in the town of Lockhart in Norman County, Minnesota on 22 April, 1911. Edna (Hassell) Cranor, Frank and Rhoda's last child and daughter, states that Frank and Rhoda left Minnesota with their family in 1912. They went to Colorado where Edna was born in the town of Austin, Delta County, Colorado on 27 September, 1916. Edna Cranor's information on the time of departure from Minnesota to Colorado correlates with the Real Estate and Personal Property Tax records which show that 1912 was the last year in which Frank Hassell paid either tax in Lockhart Township of Norman County, Minnesota.

The move to Colorado according to Frank and Rhoda's descendants, had to do with hard times in the Red River Valley of which Norman County is a part. There had been two years of drought and there had been considerable problems with prairie fires. Rhoda's sister Jerusha Ann had married a Frank Shelton and was living in Delta County, Colorado. They told Frank and Rhoda of an opportunity to move to Delta County and acquire cheap land from the Denver and Rio Grande Western Railroad to raise fruit and other crops so the railroad could increase its revenue. They took that opportunity.

Colorado's Delta County is on the western slope of the Colorado Rockies, a dramatic change in environment from the Red River Valley of the North on the Minnesota and North Dakota border. The land in the Red River Valley was once the bed of a lake formed by melting glaciers in geologic times and is amazingly flat. The Red River flows north to eventually empty into Hudson Bay north of Canada and it meanders almost aimlessly through this area since there is almost no "downhill". There are no hills or rises in sight in any direction, the highest points that can be seen are trees and man made objects such as power lines and water towers or highway overpasses. The newly plowed fields are as flat as pool tables, many fields being entire sections with few being less than a quarter section, none with the slightest rise in them. If Frank and Rhoda Hassell were seeking change when they went to Colorado, they certainly found it in the area drained by the Gunnison River in western Colorado. The only flatness in this area is either accidental or man made, with mountains to the east rising to over 14,000 feet in some of the most beautiful rugged scenery in the world. Many of Frank and Rhoda's descendants still make their homes in this area or other parts of Colorado while others have migrated to the San Francisco Bay area.

Frank and Rhoda lived out their lives in Delta County, Colorado, Rhoda passing away first on 6 June, 1928. She died of cancer. Frank lived until 31 December, 1951. They are both buried in the Mound Cemetery in Cory, Colorado. The following is Frank's obituary.

Funeral services for Frank Hassell, 540 Palmer St., Delta Colorado, will be held Friday at 2:00 P.M. at the Delta Mortuary with Rev. H. C. Knudson officiating. Burial will be in the Cory Cemetery.

Frank A. Hassell was born on 1 Nov, 1878 in Butler County, Iowa and died 31 December, 1951 at 7:00 P.M. at the Delta Memorial Hospital after an illness of several years.

He had resided in Delta County for 40 years and was a retired farmer. He lived in Austin, Colorado for a number of years and was active in community affairs there. Other survivors are four children, Ralph Hassell, Salida, Colorado, Forrest Hassell, San Carlos, California, Mrs. Edna Cranor, Austin Colorado, two step children, Mrs. Henry Jacoby of Lincoln, Nebraska and Carl Monteen, Delta, Colorado and nine grandchildren. One daughter and his first wife preceded him in death.

The obituary inadvertently left out Floyd Hassell, Frank's first son, who at that time lived in San Diego, California. It also makes clear that Frank remarried some time after Rhoda's death in 1928, but we have no information on the second wife or the step children mentioned in the obituary.

FRANK AND RHODA HASSELL'S CHILDREN

A brief sketch of Frank and Rhoda Hassell's children has been provided by Forrest Hassell, one of those children now living in Stockton, California.

Forrest Hassell remembers his father as a hard working, honest, religious and dependable man. He never welshed on a debt, sometimes going into debt to help others. He loved animals and his were always fed and cared for before he ate. He gave his family the best he could plus a lot of love and understanding. Times were hard but he did not complain, he usually smiled and always had a good joke to tell. He bought his farm when he moved to Colorado and began farming sugar beets. The whole family was involved in the farming operation. Sugar beets did not pay very well so Frank switched to fruit and grain, also raising a few pigs on the side. He developed a reputation for quality peaches, known in his day as far east as Missouri. Indeed, there is still nothing quite as tasty as a tree ripened Colorado peach. He eventually worked his way out of debt from the medical bills incurred in treating Rhoda's cancer. He did not die a wealthy man, unless wealth is measured in memory of his son who calls him the Best Dad a son could have.

FLOYD DARWIN HASSELL was born 3 March, 1902 in Ada Minnesota. He went to Fairview Grammar School and three years of high school in Austin, Colorado. He worked the farm with his father until about 1923 when he went to Mission Beach, California where he helped build a large amusement park on the north side of Mission Bay in San Diego. The large wooden roller coaster built at that time still stands but is not used, though the rest of the park was still functioning in the 1980's. Floyd returned to Austin, Colorado early in 1927 to again work the farm with his father. On 3 February, 1931 he married Mary Ann Buker and moved into a house about a quarter of a mile north of his father's farm and continued to work there for several more years. Mary and Floyd had a son on 21 December, 1931 and they named him Floyd Darwin Jr. Floyd Sr. and his family moved to San Diego in the early 1930's and Floyd worked as a grounds keeper on a golf course there for several years. Daughter Esther Patricia was born on 10 October, 1938. Floyd took a job in an aircraft factory in San Diego during World War II and he continued to work there after the war. He retired from there and he and his wife bought a Recreational Vehicle and began to travel the country. In 1972 Mary died and Floyd continued to travel. He worked as a Forest Service Park Attendant during the summers and lived in his motorhome in San Diego in the winters. Floyd died on 19 September, 1982 in San Diego at the age of 80. His body was cremated.

RALPH LEON HASSELL, Frank and Rhoda's second son, was born in June of 1907 in Ada, Minnesota. He also attended Fairview Grammar School in Austin, Colorado, spent two years at Eckert High School and two years at Delta High School where he graduated. He went on to College at Gunnison, Colorado and graduated in 1929. He went to work for the County Welfare Department and worked there until the beginning of World War II when he entered the Navy. He served on a Review Board but saw no action. Ralph married Helen Alberta Roper on 19 August, 1936. They had no children until after the war when Ronald Lee was born on 3 June, 1947 and Francisco Judeth was born on 4 September, 1950. After the war Ralph went to work for the Colorado State Welfare Department and worked there until he

retired. He was active in church, sang in the choir and occasionally sang solos at church ceremonies. He was a member of the Masonic Lodge and was a Shriner. Ralph died on 17 March, 1989 and is buried in Salida, Colorado. His wife Helen still lives in the Salida area.

FORREST REBERT HASSELL, Frank and Rhoda's third son, was born in Ada Minnesota on 5 December, 1908, and followed the same grammar school and high school educational pattern as his older brother Ralph. Forrest also attended Gunnison College for one semester but had to drop out. His mother's cancer treatments were very expensive and he returned home to help on the farm. Forrest remained with his father and farmed with him until his older brother Frank returned home from California. In 1929 Forrest left Colorado for the Los Angeles, California area taking a job with the Sparklett's Bottling Company, replacing an injured employee. Forrest moved on to San Francisco in December of that year, not liking the city of Los Angeles. In San Francisco he worked at various odd jobs until finally going to work for Hills Brothers Coffee Company, a firm he remained with until he retired on 18 January, 1943. Forrest had began as a warehouseman and in his last position he was in charge of Production and Personnel.

Forrest met Ivy Howker, a Canadian girl of English parents, at the First Presbyterian Church in San Francisco in 1930. They married in St. Peter's Episcopal Church on 22 February, 1934. They started life together in San Francisco where daughter Noreen Vivian was born on 17 October, 1937. They moved down the Peninsula to San Carlos and bought their first home on 1 January, 1940. Son Frank Arthur was born there on 2 September, 1944. They lived in three different houses in San Carlos during the ensuing years and until retirement in 1972. After retirement, Forrest did handy work for widows and retired people until he and Ivy acquired a pickup and travel trailer and went traveling the western states and doing a great deal of steelhead trout fishing. Deteriorating health made travel no longer possible so Forrest and Ivy settled in Stockton, California. Forrest now stays close to home and does wood working in his garage, working mostly with hardwoods. He maintains his home and yard, his handyman skills, well learned from his early days with his father on the farm, still serving him well at the age of 84.

EDITH BLANCHE HASSELL, Frank and Rhoda's second daughter was born on 22 April, 1911, their last child to be born in Minnesota. She and other members of the family became very ill with diarrhea when she was only two and a half years old and she died of that ailment on 12 September, 1913.

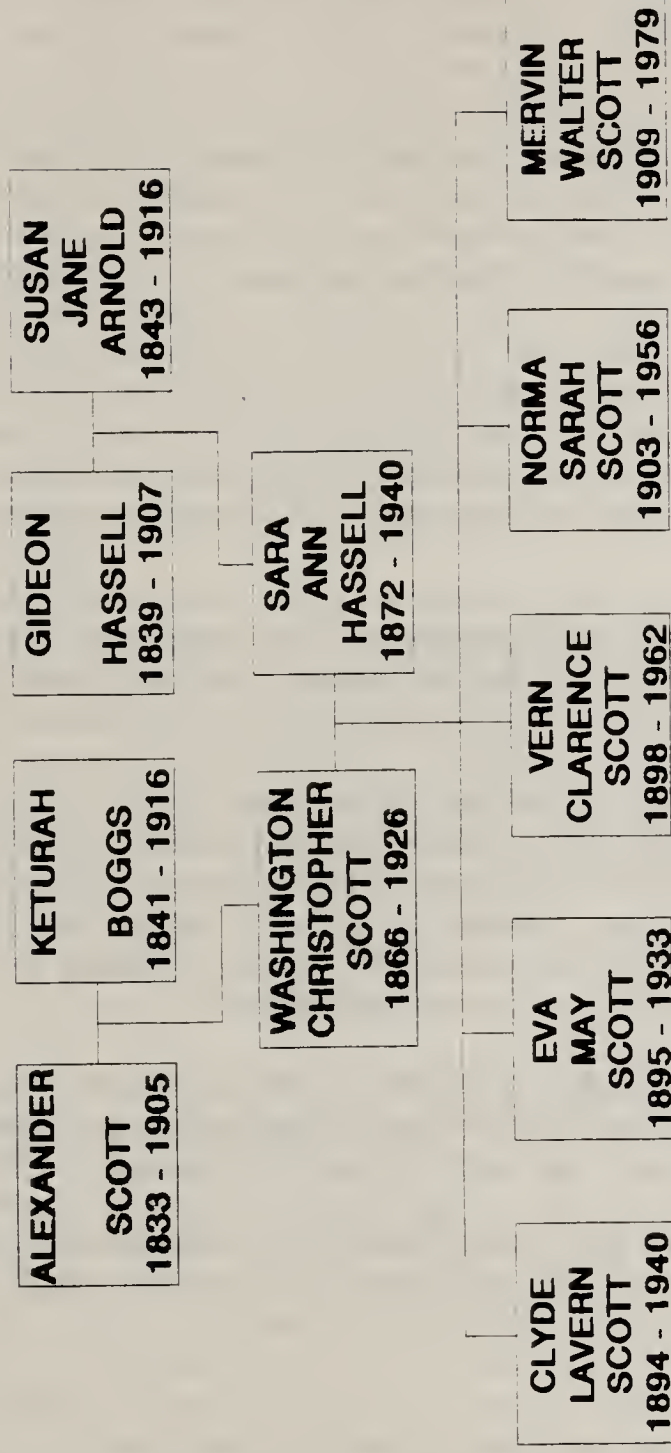
EDNA MELISSA HASSELL, Frank and Rhoda's last child, was born in Austin, Colorado on 27 September, 1916. She followed her brothers through the same grammar and high schools in Austin and on graduation from high school, went to Dental Technician's School in Denver. Her mother Rhoda died in 1928 after a long illness, her death coming when Edna was only 12. Edna, though but a child at the time, is remembered as being of considerable help to her family during those trying years of her mother's illness and the Great Depression that followed. Edna married Sherman Cranor on 27 December, 1941. Together they had five children: Ralph Sherman was born on 14 December, 1942. Fern Ann was born on 25 June, 1946. Bruce Russell was born on 16 September, 1947. Roy James was born on 9 July, 1950. Harley Mark was born 26 July, 1953.

Edna and Sherman developed a fishing and hunting resort high in the Colorado Rockies at Taylor's Park on the Taylor Reservoir. The park is surrounded by mountains towering to over 14,000 feet. The park elevation is 9,600 feet. The cabins and the Cranor home are built of huge whole timbers from the high mountain forest and were built mostly by hand by Sherman and his sons. In addition to the resort, beef cattle are raised for their own use and sale. Sherman suffered a severe stroke in the late 1980's and is now an invalid in a nursing home. The resort is now being managed by their sons while Edna lives there in the summer months and moves down to a milder climate during the harsh Colorado Rockies winters. This remarkable lady, now 77 years old, living in her high mountain cabin, weathered and toughened by her hard life of physical labor, successful rearing of four sons and a daughter, and creation of a successful business, surely has in her the pioneering blood and spirit of her ancestors. During a phone conversation between the author and Edna some years back, she suddenly broke off the conversation to take care of a pressing problem. It seems a coyote had dispatched a new born calf recently and while talking on the phone, she saw the coyote returning to take another. She would call back after she dispatched him with a high powered rifle. Later she would report that she missed him, but there is no doubt if he persisted, that tough little lady would have a coyote pelt before he got another of her calves.

WILLIAM HASSELL, the youngest son of Gideon and Jennie Hassell, apparently remained in the Norman and Polk County area for the rest of his life. All indications are that he never married. William Hassell is located in the 1920 Federal Census in Polk County, Minnesota. He is listed as a farm laborer and does not have a family.

William D. Hassell died at the age of 54 on 28 September, 1935. His birth is given as 21 November, 1880. He is identified as a farm laborer and cause of death was chronic glomerulo nephritis and myocarditis. His father is given as Gideon Hassell and his mother as Jennie Arnold, both born in New York. William was buried in the county cemetery located at Wild Rice Cemetery, four miles east of Ada in Norman County. There is no marker. Since he is buried in the county cemetery, he may have been living at the county poor farm which is nearby at the time of his death. This would also account for his not being buried with his father in the Pleasant Hill Cemetery in Fertile.

FAMILY OF WASHINGTON CHRISTOPHER SCOTT



WASHINGTON CHRISTOPHER SCOTT

Washington Christopher Scott was the third born of the marriage of Alexander Scott and Keturah Boggs. He was born on 2 November, 1866 in Mercer County, Missouri. The earliest record we have of Washington Christopher is in the 1870 census which locates his father Alexander and his family in Madison Township of Mercer County, Missouri. This county is located just south of the Iowa border in about the middle of the state. Also listed in the census record is his older half-brother, Theodore, an older sister Etta Jane, his older brother Erastus Winfield, and his younger brother, Edwin Everett. Also born in Missouri after this census were his younger sisters Rhoda and Rosa who were twins, Jerusha, and James David.

In about 1874 Washington Christopher's family left Missouri and returned to Monroe County in Iowa where his father had lived prior to his move to Missouri. Washington's younger brother Henry Barton was born there in January of 1877. A younger sister, Isia Catherine, was born in Marion County in January of 1879 where his father is thought to have run a hotel. By the time of the 1880 census, his father had moved to western Iowa to return to farming. Alexander farmed in various locations in Cass and Montgomery Counties in that part of the state. Washington, at age 13, is recorded with his father in the 1880 census in Frankfort Township of Montgomery County. Alexander's household then consisted of a large family group of 13 people. All his children except Louie Elizabeth have been born and in addition, his son Theodore from his first marriage is still alive. His mother-in-law, Jerusha Lower is also living with the family. In the 1885 Iowa state census Alexander is found in Cass County. Washington Christopher's grandmother Jerusha Lower has left the family to live with relatives in Monroe County. Washington's youngest sister Louie Elizabeth has now been born, and his older half-brother Theodore has since died.

Washington is known to have had some education during his youth, though he probably achieved no more than an 8th grade education, if he was able to attend school to that level. He is listed in the 1880 census as having attended school that year. He, along with his brothers, was more than likely committed to helping his father with his farming enterprise, and no doubt continued to do so until he left to establish his own life.

It is not certain when Washington Christopher did that, but it was no doubt before his father and his older brother Winfield purchased the farm north of Villisca. Alexander bought this farm in January of 1892. About two weeks after that purchase by his father, Washington Christopher married Sarah Ann Hassell, the wedding taking place in Meservey, Iowa on 17 January, 1892. Meservey is located in the southwest corner of Cerro Gordo County, about 20 miles due south of Clear Lake in north central Iowa. Sarah Ann Hassell was the daughter of Gideon Hassell and Jane Arnold, their story being outlined in the previous chapter.

Washington Christopher is not known to have purchased any land in northern Iowa. He and his brother Edwin Everett are recorded in 1894 as renting a property in Union Township of Cerro Gordo County. Together they are working 260 acres, a sizeable amount of land. The 1895 Iowa state census records the Scott household as consisting of Washington Christopher, his wife Sarah Ann, and their first born son, Clyde Lavern. Clyde had been born on 2 January, 1894. Also listed are Edwin Everett Scott and Cora Turner. Both Edwin and Washington are listed as heads of household and both as farmers. Edwin and Cora were married on 10 March, 1895, but for some reason the census taker used her maiden name.

On 5 September, 1895 Eva May Scott was born to Washington and Sarah, probably on or near the same property they were renting. Vern Clarence was born about two and half years later on 9 February, 1898, still in Cerro Gordo County. Sarah's obituary, quoted later in this section, states that in this same year of 1898, Washington and Sarah migrated from Iowa to Minnesota. Washington's brother Edwin remained in Iowa for a time.

It is not known why Washington and his brother Edwin decided to go their separate ways, but there does not appear to have been a split between them. In fact, there is some evidence that Edwin had originally intend to follow his brother to Minnesota. Cora states some 50 years later in a personal correspondence to Edna Cranor, a niece, that she had worked as a school teacher to help finance the move to Minnesota by the Washington Scott and Gideon Hassell families, but she and her husband never made it there. In about 1903 Edwin and Cora moved to North Dakota about 100 miles from where Washington Christopher lived, and after further movements, we find them once again in close proximity in North Dakota, though they never lived on or worked the same farm together again.

There is little question that Washington and Sarah's move to Minnesota was connected to the move there by the Hassell family. The Hassells had moved there in 1897 and Washington followed in 1898. They settled near Ada, Minnesota in the Red River Valley of the North, which is now very flat land that used to be the bottom of an ancient lake formed during the last ice age. The Red River Valley is a very fertile area now extensively farmed in sugar beets, corn, and other crops. The Hassells settled in Spring Creek Township of Norman County, while Washington Christopher and Sarah bought land in the Lockhart Township.

We find Washington and his family in the 1900 census in Lockhart Township of Norman County, Minnesota. Lockhart Township borders Spring Creek Township to the west, so he established himself within 10 miles of the Hassell family. The land Washington was on in Lockhart Township is about 15 miles north of the present town of Ada, Minnesota and would have placed him about five miles south of Beltrami, Minnesota. Beltrami was apparently the location of the post office that served them, though it was across the county line in Polk County. The Washington Christopher Scott household consisted of he and Sarah and the three above mentioned children, Clyde, Eva, and Vern. Washington is recorded as being a farmer and that his farm is mortgaged.

Washington may have attempted to buy this land as the census indicates, but there is no record that he did. He did not pay any real estate taxes during the nine years that he lived on this property, though he did pay personal property tax and school taxes during that time. It is possible that he had bought the land with a mortgage and the mortgage was held by the previous owner and never recorded. Washington was not able to pay off the mortgage so the land would have reverted to the original owner when he left. On the other hand, he may have been renting the property and the census data is in error.

The property was visited in 1990, its location provided by a Mrs. George Christiansen (Birdie). She was a neighbor and friend of the Scott's and she had shown the farm to Margorie Stene, one of Washington and Sarah's grand daughters who now lives in Ada. Birdie was a very close friend of Eva Scott and attended school with Clyde, Eva, and Vern in School District No. 72. The school building still stands in its original location in the northwest corner of the Northeast 1/4 of Section 11 of Lockhart Township. Birdie also identified that quarter section as being the Scott farm. The farm site is now occupied, though probably none of the original buildings remain. The land is now owned by Clifford Christiansen, one of Birdie Christiansen's three children.

In July of 1903, Sarah bore Washington their fourth child, Norma Sarah. This birth is recorded as having taken place in Norman County, no doubt on the farm discussed above.

When Washington's father Alexander died in 1905, Alexander's obituary states that Washington was from Deltramin, Minnesota. This spelling is no doubt a corruption of Beltrami. The obituary also says that Washington attended the funeral so he probably traveled to Villisca and returned by train.

The 1905 Minnesota state census records Washington Christopher with his family in Lockhart Township of Norman County. His family now consists of himself, Sarah, and children Clyde, Eva, Vern and Norma. The only other data this census provides is that he had lived on this property for six years, which only roughly correlates with his arrival in 1898. It is not thought that he lived in any other location in Minnesota since the tax records are consistent with only one location.

Washington and his family remained on the above mentioned farm until 1907 when, according to Sarah's obituary, they moved to North Dakota. However, Washington is credited with paying property tax in Lockhart Township in 1908. Since he filed for homestead on land in North Dakota in 1907, it appears that he went to North Dakota in 1907 to find and file on the homestead, but he probably didn't move his family there until 1908.

On October, 14, 1907 Washington Christopher Scott filed for a Homestead Patent on 178.23 acres of land in Emmons County, North Dakota. The fee paid was \$16.44. The land consisted of the East Half of the Northwest 1/4 and the West Half of the Northeast 1/4 of Section 4 of Township 135N, Range 77W. He proved the homestead and filed for a Patent on the land on October 9, 1912. The Patent and the deed were issued 27 December, 1912. Washington Christopher Scott finally owned his own farm.

To own his own land was the likely reason that Washington Christopher and Sarah left the fertile soil of the Red River Valley in Minnesota to go to the North Dakota prairie. The land in the Red River Valley was no doubt expensive for the time, and in the nine years Washington and Sarah had been there, they had not been able to get far enough ahead to buy their own place. North Dakota offered a new start at a low price. They also may have moved in coordination with Edwin Everett Scott who purchased 160 acres of land only six miles to the west of the land on which Washington filed. The purchases were made at about the same time. The brothers were once again in close proximity.

The 1910 Federal Census locates the Washington Christopher Scott family in Emmons County of North Dakota on his homestead farm. The census was taken on the 4th day of May of 1910 and lists their previously mentioned children along with Washington and Sarah. Their last child, Mervin Walter, was born later in that year on 9 November, 1910 in Hazelton, a small farm community about five miles to the southeast of Washington and Sarah's farm.

In the 1915 North Dakota state census, all of Washington and Sarah's children are still living at home. In March of 1917, that all changed. A double wedding occurred when their oldest son Clyde married Ethel Sites and their oldest daughter Eva married George Sites, the Sites also being brother and sister. On March 15th, the Emmons County Republican reported:

DOUBLE WEDDING OCCURS YESTERDAY

TWO POPULAR YOUNG COUPLES ENTER MATRIMONIAL CONTRACT, QUIET WEDDING

Rev. J. W. Cabbage had his hands full yesterday culminating contracts, the making of which Dan Cupid was responsible. The young folks made partners for life were Mr. Clyde Scott and Miss Ethel Sites and Mr. George Sites and Miss Eva Scott. The ceremony took place at the residence of Rev. J. W. Cabbage at two o'clock yesterday afternoon, March 14th, and was a very quiet affair, only the immediate members of the families being present.

All four of the young folks are well and favorably known throughout this section of the county and have scores of friends who wish them a safe journey over the matrimonial seas.

It is understood that country folks out west of town had a general roundup of forces last evening and wound up with a big double shirivari!

The young couples will settle down to house keeping in the west country. It is reported that Mr. and Mrs. Scott will reside on the Jas. Farrell farm and Mr. and Mrs. Sites will for the present live on the W. C. Scott farm where Mr. Sites will be employed.

George and Ethel Sites were the son and daughter of David George Sites who had come to North Dakota as a bachelor in 1881. He had homesteaded a farm on the Missouri River in Emmons County and was living there with his family when the Scott families arrived in the area. Lester Sites recalls that his father, George Anson Sites and his aunt Ethel were both accomplished fiddle players and because of this skill were in the center of the social swirl, playing for dances and celebrations as the need and mood required. It was no doubt through this activity that the Scott and Sites families grew to know each other and for the romances to bloom.

George and Eva did not stay with Washington and Sarah very long. Their first child was born about a year later on a farm which George and Eva were renting, that farm being about six miles north of Washington and Sarah. The farm that George Sites worked was owned by a Mr. Cordener. Four of the five George and Eva Sites children were born on this farm. Clyde and Ethel soon bought their own farm. They purchased 160 acres of land in Section 19 of the Township to the west of Washington and Sarah in 1919.

Washington and Sarah's son Vern apparently left home around 1920. He married Myrtice McClelland in April of 1922. The following appeared in the Emmons County Free Press on 20 April of that year.

McCLELLAND SCOTT

Vern Clarence Scott and Miss Myrtice Lela McClelland were united in matrimony at the residence of Rev. Rockwell in Linton on Friday evening, April 14th.

The bride is a daughter of Mr. and Mrs. T. G. McClelland of near Zeeland and the groom, a son of W. C. Scott of northwest of Hazelton. Mr. Scott had been teaching in the Zeeland neighborhood for a couple of terms. The young couple will make their home on the farm belonging to the bride's father near Zeeland. The Free Press joins their many friends in wishing them a long and happy married life.

The 1925 North Dakota state census records that in that year the Scott household consists of Washington and Sarah and their two remaining children, Mervin and Norma, ages 14 and 21 respectively.

Not a great deal is known about Washington Christopher's farm and the life he lived while on it, though there are a few surviving photographs which show that his farm was much like any other homestead farm in North Dakota during this period. The principle crops in the area were small grains, corn, and potatoes. There was really no big cash crop in those days since most of the farming was subsistence farming. Almost everything that was grown was for their own consumption or for feed for the hogs and chickens or for the horses that were used to farm the land. There were some sales of grains and animals for profit, especially in later years when farming became more mechanized and larger fields with low yields would be profitable. However, during the years that Washington and Sarah farmed in North Dakota, agricultural technology had not yet advanced to the point where a farmer could work enough land to grow much more than his immediate family needs. Nor was the land and climate suitable for high yield crops. Lester Sites, a grandson of Washington and Sarah, recalls Washington as saying that "North Dakota was good for raising buffalo grass, and they should have left it to the buffalo." It was primarily for this reason that in 1926 Washington and Sarah, along with other members of his family, returned to Minnesota and the Red River Valley.

Lester Sites also recalls that Washington was the "preacher" of the family and the most religious of his generation. The Scott and the Sites families attended the Congregational Church in Hazelton, though Lester remembers that the Sites family were more casual members than Washington and Sarah. Lester also recalls that Vern Scott followed his father's religious tendencies and could be counted on to say the table prayer whenever he visited. Table prayers were not a usual event in the Sites household.

In 1910 Edwin Everett Scott moved his family to western North Dakota. In 1917 he returned to the Missouri River valley to a farm on the west side of the river about 10 miles south of the Sites homestead. The river could be crossed in summer by ferry boat but in the winter the river would freeze and could be crossed by foot or wagon. Edwin's new farm was on the Standing Rock Sioux Indian Reservation and there was a great deal of interaction with the Indian people. Washington's grand daughter Gertie (Sites) Martinez recalls that Indian women acted as mid-wives for her mother Eva May when her younger brother Leon was born. She also recalls that each year there was an Indian Pow Wow in the fall which everyone attended. One memory Gertie has is of walking among the teepees of the Indian encampment and seeing an Indian mother disciplining her child by spanking it using her own braided hair as the means of applying the lesson.

The 1920 Federal Census records Washington Christopher in Emmons County with wife Sarah and children Vern, Norma, and Mervin still living at home. Son-in-law George Anson Sites and daughter Eva May are also listed nearby, now with two small children, Gertie May and Erma. Son Clyde and his wife Ethel are also found in this census, but at this point without children.

In September of 1926, Washington and Sarah left North Dakota to return to the Ada, Minnesota area. Washington's son Clyde Scott and his son-in-law George Sites, along with their families, moved with him. Lester Sites remembers the trip. He traveled in an open touring car driven by his uncle Clyde and suffered a very bad sunburn. His father, George Sites, made the trip on the railroad car which carried all the farm animals of the three families. The railroad permitted the owners of the livestock to ride with the stock to care for their watering and feeding during the several days they were on the train. The train trip took considerably longer than the trip by car,

since the railroad route was not direct. However, it still took two days to make the journey by car, the first night being spent at Jamestown, about half way between Ada and Hazelton. The trip is now made almost casually in four hours on Interstate 94.

All three families settled on farms in the Ada area. Washington and Sarah had made an unusual arrangement, however. They had traded farms with a man named Samuel H. Templeton. It was not a straight farm for farm trade, Mr. Templeton also assumed a \$1,600 mortgage on the farm in Emmons County. Washington received title to the Northeast 1/4 of Section 33 of Pleasant View Township, the property lying about 2 miles north of the town of Ada.

However, Washington Christopher was never to plant a crop in Minnesota. He suffered a fatal heart attack on 19 December of 1926, and was subsequently buried in the Ada Cemetery. The Norman County Herald reported on 24 December, 1926:

DEATH OF A NEW SETTLER

Washington C. Scott died at his home north of Ada Sunday night, the cause of his death being rheumatism. Mr. Scott was born in Missouri Nov. 12th 1866. He purchased the S. H. Templeton farm and moved here from South Dakota about three months ago. Deceased is survived by the widow and seven children.

The number of errors in this notice is ample evidence of the dangers of assuming that information in obituaries is factual.

We find in the Norman County Index newspaper on 13 January, 1927 a notice for hearing on a petition submitted by Sarah for her son Clyde L. Scott to act as administrator of Washington's estate, he having died without writing a will. It seems tragic that this pioneer farmer should die so shortly after having finally achieved his life long quest for ownership of a fertile workable farm. It is even more tragic that neither his wife nor son nor son-in-law was able to retain the farm he had finally come to own. The property was foreclosed in March of 1928, and the Northwestern Trust Co. gained title for the sum of \$5,519.17.

After Washington's death in 1926, Sarah spent some time living with her brother Frank Hassell in Colorado and may have also spent some time living with her son Vern who still lived in North Dakota. She also lived with her son-in-law and daughter, George Anson and Eva May Sites. She became an integral part of that family and played a major role in the rearing of her Sites grand children, especially so after the death of Eva May in 1933. Sarah lived for fourteen years after Washington's death, dying in January of 1940. She was buried along with Washington Christopher in the Ada Cemetery. The following is her obituary as appearing in the Norman County Herald on 19 January, 1940.

MRS. SARAH SCOTT CALLED BY DEATH LAST SATURDAY

Mrs. Sarah Scott passed away at the local hospital last Saturday. Death was caused by heart trouble.

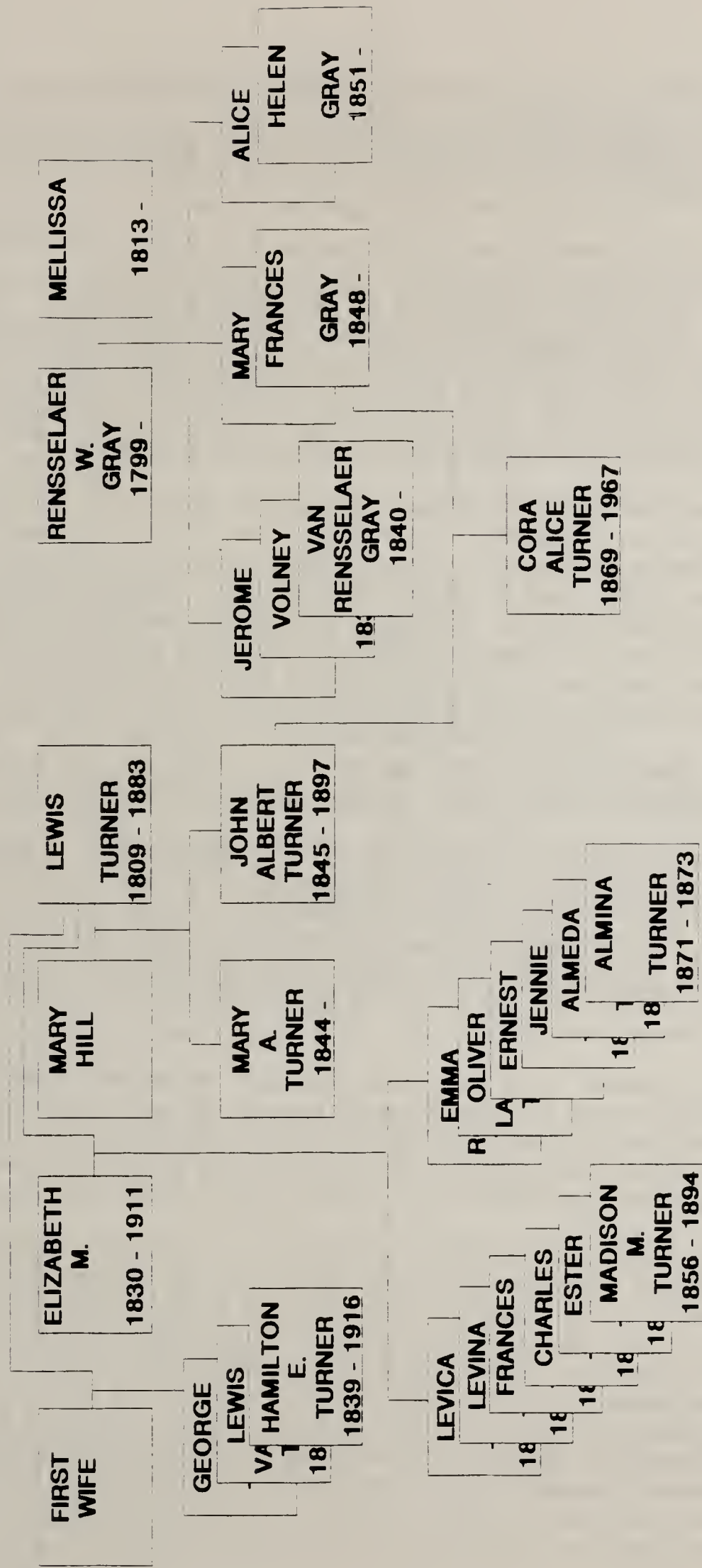
Deceased was born in Greene, Iowa, August 29, 1872. Her maiden name was Sarah Ann Hassell. On February 17, 1892, she was united in marriage to Washington C. Scott, the ceremony taking place at Meservey, Iowa. She remained in Iowa until 1898, at which time the family moved to Beltrami, this state, and remained there until 1907 when they moved to Hazelton, ND. where they resided until 1926. At that time they moved to Ada where she has resided since.

To Mr. and Mrs. Scott were born the following children: Clyde, who resides at Lidgerwood, N. D., Eva deceased, Vern, Wishek, N. D., Norma, Wyndmere, N. D., and Mervin, Portland, Oregon. She is also survived by a brother, Francis Hassell of Austin, Colo.

Mr. Scott passed away here December 19, 1933 (1926) and a daughter, Mrs. George Sites (Eva) died September 4, 1933.

Funeral rites were held Wednesday afternoon at Skaurud's Chapel with Rev. L. C. Jacobson officiating. Burial was in the Ada Cemetery.

THE TURNER AND GRAY FAMILIES



THE TURNER AND GRAY FAMILIES

The Turner family became related to the Alexander Scott family through the marriage of Edwin Everett Scott and Cora Alice Turner on 10 March, 1895. The following is a history of the Turner family, to the extent that their history is currently known.

The earliest record we currently have of the Turner family is an 1840 Federal Census of Crawford County, Pennsylvania which records that Lewis Turner lived there in that year and that his household consisted of himself and a wife of between 20 and 30 years of age and three sons under the age of 5. Lewis is himself between 30 and 40 years of age. Later census records state that Lewis Turner was born in New York state, so at some time earlier he, or he with his parents, migrated from somewhere in New York to Crawford County in Pennsylvania. Crawford County is in the northwest corner of that state, north of Pittsburg and south of Erie County which borders Lake Erie. This county was formed in 1800, but it was still not a heavily populated area during the time that Lewis Turner lived there. The census does not indicate what Lewis Turner did for a living.

Later census and other information indicates that the three sons listed in the 1840 census were George H. Turner, Lewis Vanburen Turner, and Hamilton E. Turner, born in 1836, 1837 and 1839 respectively. Other records reveal that they were all born in Pennsylvania. Lewis also fathered two additional children in the 1840's. These were Mary A. Turner and John A. Turner, born in 1844 and 1845 respectively. There were different mothers for these two sets of children. In later census records, the place of birth of these women differs, and later obituaries indicate that all three of the older brothers were half brothers to John A. It appears then, that Lewis Turner had two wives while living in Pennsylvania, the first dying there in 1839 or shortly thereafter. The second wife also died, though it is not clear where or when her death occurred. She could have died in Pennsylvania or she could have died in route to or in Iowa where the Turner family migrated, probably in 1849. The name of the first wife is unknown. The second wife may have been named Mary Hill. Lewis's third wife was named Elizabeth. Lewis's third marriage, according to Elizabeth Turner's obituary, took place on 25 January, 1850 in Iowa.

There is some evidence that the second wife may have been named Mary Hill. A Reverend Samuel F. Smith, who served various Presbyterian churches in Crawford County from 1827 to 1846, recorded in a personal memorandum book that he married a Mr. Turner to a Miss Mary Hill on 8 October, 1840. October 1840 is ten months after the date of birth of the last child from Lewis Turner's first marriage and about four years before the first known birth of the second marriage. Also, Lewis's daughter by his second marriage was named Mary, a likely naming of the child if the mother was named Mary. However, that Mary Hill was the name of Lewis's second wife must remain for the time being an assumption.

The third wife, Elizabeth, was 20 years younger than Lewis. He was about 40 when they married, and she was around 20, making her only 6 years older than her oldest step son. Her maiden name is not known though she is noted in subsequent census records as having been born in Kentucky. This marriage was a very fruitful one, she bore Lewis 12 additional children, the last in 1871 when Lewis was nearly 62 years old. However, by 1900 she had outlived all but three of them, many, including two sets of twins, dying in infancy or very early childhood.

It is not clear where in Iowa that the Lewis Turner family first settled. Documentation of the 1850 marriage between Lewis Turner and Elizabeth has not yet been found nor have they been found in the 1850 Iowa census. There is a Lewis Turner listed in an 1852 Iowa State census that places him in Franklin Township of Linn County in that year. Linn County is in the east central portion of Iowa and contains the city of Cedar Rapids. It is also near Blackhawk County where Lewis is known to have begun a business shortly after. The census record is inconclusive however, since there are 7 males and 3 females in the household, two of which are identified as voters. Lewis's family at this time would have consisted of 6 males and 2 females, and only one voter. It is possible that another married couple was living with them, and there is some evidence that the second voter might have been an adult brother of Lewis. This brother could have been married and had come to Iowa with Lewis as part of a family migration.

Land deeds from Blackhawk County, where Lewis and Elizabeth are located around 1855, indicate that Lewis sold land in Blackhawk County to his sons in the 1860's at which time the sons are identified as living in Clayton County in two cases and Benton County in another. Benton County is also on the Cedar River and lies between Blackhawk and Linn County. Clayton County on the other hand, is the northeastern most county in Iowa bordering the state of Minnesota and the Mississippi River. It is possible that Lewis at one time lived in either one of these counties but again, no record has been found.

While the early 1850 record of the Turner family history is hazy, it becomes more clear starting in about 1855. In a book titled "The History of Blackhawk County", there is a section describing the early days of La Porte City, now a small town situated at the confluence of the Cedar and Wolf Rivers. This town was surveyed in June of 1855. According to this history, Lewis Turner erected the first grist mill in the County at La Porte City, its construction taking place in either 1855 or 1856. The mill was powered by the water flowing in the Wolf River. Grist mills were important operations in the early days, any grain used for human consumption needs grinding to make it palatable, and the farmers from miles around would come to the grist mill to have their grain ground to flour or corn meal. It appears that Lewis Turner prospered from this operation, buying up considerable land during the late 1850's.

The 1856 Iowa census does not list Lewis Turner in La Porte City or Blackhawk County, though it is certain that he lived there at the time. There is however, a listing for a Henry Turner in that same township. This man is one year younger than Lewis and he and his wife were both born in Pennsylvania, as were their four children, the youngest being only 1 year old. This family therefore had come to Iowa in 1855. Also in that household is a man named Isaac Turner, he is six years younger than Henry. There is no direct evidence that these two men were younger brothers of Lewis Turner but the currently available data suggests that they might have been.

In 1857 Lewis Turner began buying land in Blackhawk County. By 1860, Lewis had apparently done quite well. In the 1860 Census Lewis is listed along with Elizabeth and seven children. They are Lewis Vanburen, Hamilton E., Mary A., John A., Madison M., Rose, and Oliver Lafayette. Lewis is listed as a farmer, but he is also listed as having real estate valued at \$35,000 and a personal estate of \$7,000. This would be considered to be real wealth in those days on the frontier prior to the Civil War. He no doubt achieved his wealth with a combination of endeavors. He had farm land and the grist mill but he also may have had a store of some sort associated with the mill. His sons O. L. and H. E. are both listed in his household in this census as merchandise clerks. Also in the household is a farm laborer by the name of Michael Reardon and another female named Mary French, presumably domestic help. Lewis's oldest son G. H. Turner and his wife Ellen are living in their own home. He is listed as a merchant. So it is quite clear that the Turner family members were not just farmers, they were also merchants, millers and traders, and evidently, doing quite well at it.

Good fortune can be fleeting however. In 1860 Lewis's grist mill burned down. It is not clear that he tried to rebuild it. According to the La Porte City history, a new mill was built some years later down stream from the Turner mill by someone else. The next problem was the Civil War. The war began in 1861 and Lewis's situation began to decline. In 1862 he sold land to all three of his oldest sons. The sale documents create a bit of a mystery. In the sales to his sons Lewis V. and G. H., these sons are identified as being from Clayton County, though the 1860 census quite clearly shows them to be in Blackhawk County. At least two of the sons, G. H. and Hamilton E. also began service in the Union Army in this year. Also in 1862, a piece of land owned by Lewis is sold at a Sheriff's auction to satisfy an unpaid mortgage. In early 1864 another son, John A., joined the Union Army. Also in 1864 Lewis purchased a small plot of land, 12 by 80 rods or approximately 190 by 1280 feet and apparently he struggled on. However, in 1867 Lewis is declared bankrupt. His affairs are taken over by an assignee at this time. It is not known if he recovered from this financial disaster emerging from bankruptcy or not, but in 1868, H. E. Turner, now identified as being of Benton County, sold land to Elizabeth Turner in Blackhawk County. This is where we find the Lewis Turner family in the 1870 census. Lewis's estate is now valued at \$1,500 in real estate and \$900 of personal property. His family consists of Madison, Roselpha, Lafayette, Ernest and Jennie. Mary A. Turner had married in 1862. The name Roselpha is an unusual one. Later evidence indicates that this was her second name, her first being Emma. She is referred to as either Rose or Rosa in almost all references, Rose being the most common.

There are three other families living on the Turner property at the time of the 1870 census. There is a William West with a wife and three children. L. V. Turner is now married with a wife and child, and John A. Turner is there with his wife Frances and their nine month old daughter, Cora. L. V. Turner is identified as a clerk and John as a farmer. L. V. has property valued at \$100, while John's is valued at \$450. G. H. Turner is living in a separate household. His situation has been reduced from merchant to laborer, though he still owns \$1500 worth of real estate. Hamilton E. married in Blackhawk County in this year, but it is not known where he actually lived at this time.

Lewis and his family decided to seek a better opportunity in the year 1870, and they relocated to Sabetha, Kansas. Sabetha lies about 60 miles west of St. Joseph, Missouri. St. Joseph was the beginning of both the Oregon and Santa Fe trails used by the pioneers on their way to Oregon and California. Sabetha was situated about a weeks travel from St. Joseph and became a supply point for the wagon trains along the trails. Lewis established a hardware and provisioning store there in 1871 and began doing business, supplying both the pioneers passing through and the local population. This hardware store continued down through the years, still in operation in 1916 under the proprietorship of Frank Turner, one of Lewis's grandchildren.

Lewis and Elizabeth lived out the remainder of their lives in Sabetha. Elizabeth bore her last children, twin girls Almeda and Almina, in May of 1871. Almina lived to age 2, Almeda to age 6. Almeda and Jennie, Elizabeth's 10th child, age 9, died on the same day in January of 1877, the cause likely being an epidemic of some sort. Madison M. Turner married in 1877. Other marriages have no doubt taken place and most of the older children are no longer living in close proximity to Lewis and Elizabeth.

The 1880 Sabetha, Kansas census finds Lewis and Elizabeth, ages 70 and 50 respectively, living in a household with Rosa and Ernest. There is also a child named Fanny, age 5. It is not clear who this child is. From the 1900 census and Elizabeth's obituary, Elizabeth had borne 12 children, and there is no reference to any of them being called Fanny. All twelve of her children can otherwise be accounted for. It is possible that this was Rosa's child, though Rosa is not thought to have married until sometime later.

There are two other Turner families listed in this census. John Albert is listed as living adjacent to Lewis his father. John's wife is listed as Helen. Cora is the only child listed in the census, though her age is erroneously given as nine years. Cora's grandchildren do not recall her ever mentioning that she had any brothers or sisters so it is probable that John and Helen had no children. John Albert is listed as being a dry goods merchant like his father and so was likely in business with him.

The other Turner family listed, also adjacent to Lewis, is Madison M. Turner, Elizabeth's oldest child and John Albert's half brother. Madison is married to Maggie (Margaret) C. Corwin and their wedding license shows that they were married on 5 September, 1877 in Sabetha, Kansas. They have one son age one year at the time of this census, his name being given as Orland O. Turner. Madison is listed as being a Tinner, probably now meaning tin-smith.

On February 2, 1883 the Seneca Weekly Courier reported under their Sabetha News column that "Lewis Turner has been very low for nearly a week from a disease of the heart and his children have been here since last Thursday, fearing a fatal termination of the case. He died Tuesday night."

The following week the paper reported that: "The funeral services of the late Lewis Turner were held in the Methodist church last Thursday morning, Rev. Biggart preaching the sermon. Mr. Turner was a few weeks past 73 years old, and had been in business in this city over 10 years. He leaves a large family who are all grown - seven sons and two daughters, we believe."

Lewis Turner died on 30 January, 1883 at the age of 73 years. He did not leave a will and his son John A. was appointed Administrator of the estate. The value of his personal property was assessed at \$11,717.02 at this time. The probate records do not include the value of any real estate. All the heirs relinquished claim to the real estate and title was transferred to Elizabeth. The remainder of the estate was divided into nine parts and distributed to Lewis's children then living.

Lewis was buried in the Sabetha Cemetery. A single stone marks his grave and that of his wife Elizabeth. The stone is an obelisk about 6 feet high. Lewis's name is inscribed on one side with Elizabeth's on the opposite face. On a third face is inscribed the names and birth and death dates of eight of their children, most of whom had died and presumably had been buried in Iowa. The stone therefore serves as both a gravestone and a memorial since it is not likely all the children listed are buried there. In fact, one named on this stone, Madison M., is buried with his wife in a separate plot in the same cemetery.

Elizabeth lived until 23 January, 1911 and died at the age of 80. Her obituary is as follows:

Elizabeth Turner was born in Kentucky July 16, 1830 and died at her home in Sabetha, January 23, 1911; aged 80 years, 6 months and 7 days. She was married to Lewis Turner in Iowa, January 25, 1850. This union was blessed with twelve children, only three of whom are left to mourn their mother's death: Emma Rose of Sabetha; Oliver L. and Ernest L. of Kansas City, Mo. Mrs. Turner and her family lived in Iowa until 1870 when they came to Kansas and settled in Sabetha, where she lived until death summoned her into the beyond. Having joined the Methodist Church in Iowa, she brought her membership here and became one of the pioneers as well as a faithful member of the Methodist Church. During her four years suffering that preceded her death, most of which time she was confined to bed, she always hailed with delight the visits of her pastor and nearly always spoke of how she missed the church services. To read the Bible or pray with her seemed to be the greatest favor anyone could render her. She lost her companion on January 30, 1883. Since then her daughter, Rose, has lived with her and was her mother's devoted nurse during her long sickness. A host of friends join her many relatives in mourning her decease. The funeral was conducted in the Methodist Church by her pastor, J. E. Scheer, and the body laid to rest in the Sabetha Cemetery Wednesday, January 25 at 2:30 o'clock.

THE GRAY FAMILY

The Gray family became related to the Turner family through the marriage of Frances Gray to John Albert Turner in 1868 and Helen Gray to John Albert Turner in 1873. The history of the Gray family as far as has been currently researched is as follows.

Rensselaer W. Gray was born in the state of New York, county currently unknown, in about 1800. Who his ancestors were is also currently unknown, but his name implies Dutch heritage. In about the year 1833 he married a woman whose first name was Mellissa. She too was born in New York, but she was much younger than Rensselaer. She was born in about 1813. Her ancestors are also currently unknown. It is presumed that the marriage took place in New York since both were born there. However, in about the year 1833, Rensselaer and Mellissa had a son whom they named Jerome B. Later information reveals that he was born in Tioga County, Pennsylvania. The next son, Volney S., who was born in about the year 1837, was also born in Pennsylvania, but it is not known if his birth also took place in Tioga County. The Gray family therefore migrated to Pennsylvania from New York either shortly before or shortly after Rensselaer and Mellissa were married, probably in the year 1833.

In late 1839 or early 1840, the family again migrated, this time to Iowa. This date is derived from a later Iowa census that recorded how many years they had lived in the State of Iowa. In the 1840 Federal Census we find R. W. Gray listed in Linn county with a wife and four children under the age of ten. In the 1850 census we find that a third son had been born in Iowa in 1840. He was named Van Rensselaer. However, the fourth child listed in the 1840 census was a daughter under the age of 5 who does not appear in the 1850 census. This child must therefore have died between 1840 and 1850 in Iowa.

In 1850 the Rensselaer W. Gray family is found in Jackson County, Iowa. Linn County is two counties to the west of Jackson County, which lies on the Mississippi River in the east central part of the state. This is an eastward movement, though of less than 100 miles, and is noted only because almost all of the movements of our ancestors were to the west. By 1850, three additional daughters had been born. They were Mary, Frances, and Alice, born in about the years of 1844, 1847, and 1849 respectively. All had been born in Iowa.

In the 1856 Iowa State Census, the R. W. Gray family has again moved, this time westward to Pleasant Township, Wright County, Iowa which lies in the north central part of the state. The family now consists of all the above named children plus another daughter, her name being Helen and born in about 1852. This census records that the R. W. Gray family had lived in Iowa for 16 years. They had therefore arrived in Iowa in 1840. It is not known exactly when the Gray family migrated to Wright County, but an affidavit in the Civil War Pension records of Melissa Gray shows clearly that they lived in Wright County in the year 1855.

The 1860 Federal Census for Iowa finds a significant change in the Gray family, though still living in Pleasant Township of Wright County. Melissa is listed as the head of the household, implying that Rensselaer has died. The above mentioned Pension records reveal that his date of death was 2 April, 1859. Jerome B. is now 26 years old and is no doubt functioning as the male head of the family, with his younger brother, Van Rensselaer at age 20 in a supporting role. Volney S. is no longer with the family. He is found in the 1860 Census back in Jackson County as a rent farmer with a new wife of 18 years named Melinda and a four month old son named Milton. Volney therefore married and left home in about 1858.

The Wright County Probate Records have been searched and it appears from a very early incomplete entry that R. W. Gray left some sort of estate. There is an undated note that appears after entries made in 1861 that state that Melissa Callanan is appointed as administrator of the estate of R. W. Gray and that she is also to "appoint appraisers etc.". According to the Pension records the estate consisted of 40 acres of land of which 25 acres were timber and 15 acres were wet prairie land, having a value of about \$400.00. The pension records also reveal that Melissa had re-married in May of 1861, and though the name is not given there, it appears from the Probate Records that his last name was Callanan. The marriage however, was doomed to early failure. Melissa states in the pension records that she received no support or income from this second husband beyond the fall of 1861, and she divorced him in 1864. The Civil War began in 1861, and it affected the Gray family significantly.

On 9 August, 1861, Jerome and Van enlisted together in the Second Regiment, Iowa Volunteer Cavalry, leaving their mother and father-in-law and four sisters on the farm in Wright County. The boys mustered for duty on 9 September, 1861. The new Second Regiment mustered in Davenport, Iowa under command of a Colonel Elliot, a West Point graduate. On 7 December, 1861 the Regiment went into quarters at Benton Barracks at St. Louis, Missouri for outfitting and extensive training. While at Benton Barracks the regiment suffered greatly from sickness and disease and there were a great many deaths. Among those who died was Van Rensselaer Gray, dying of disease in January of 1862, a month before the Regiment took the field, having never had the opportunity to fight the fight he had volunteered for.

Jerome B. Gray is described in his Company Descriptive Book as a man of 27 years, 6 foot 1/4 inch tall, with a light complexion, hazel eyes and brown hair. His birthplace is given as Tioga County, Pennsylvania. His occupation was given as surveyor.

Jerome B. Gray left St. Louis with the Second Regiment on 17 February, 1862, his duty as Bugler of Company F. They proceeded to southern Missouri and four companies engaged the Rebel forces for the first time on the 28th in a light action. The rest of the Regiment saw the following action.

On February 27th began our active pursuit of Jeff Thompson's army towards New Madrid (in the very southeastern tip of Missouri near the Mississippi River), driving in his scouts and bodies of Cavalry, over a country almost impassable, fording sometimes swimming, swamps scarcely penetrable, in snow and rain, capturing prisoners and horses. This duty occupied the regiment until March 12th, when we rejoined Pope's army at New Madrid in time to participate in the attack and bombardment of that place. After it was reduced, from March 12th to April 6th, occupied continuously guarding teams, scouting and picket duty. April 7th, crossed the Mississippi, our advance under Lt. Gustavus Schnitger, being the first troops to Island 10, capturing 200 prisoners. We pursued the retreating enemy toward Tiptonville. We were then ordered back to Camp New Madrid, being absent five days."

On 12 April, 1862 the Regiment was moved up the Mississippi River to the mouth of the Tennessee River (Western tip of Kentucky) by transports and was assigned to the Second Brigade, Army of the Mississippi. Command was shifted to Colonel Hatch. The army struck south into Kentucky, Tennessee and Mississippi. Action occurred almost continually. The following action occurred on 9 May as reported by Col. Hatch.

"....reported at 12 o'clock to General Palmer who ordered me to throw out two companies on the left of the main Farmington Road and hold the balance of the regiment in reserve under the hill, where the crossing of the swamp approaches Farmington. Our infantry who had held the field above us being driven to the brow of the hill, General Paine ordered the regiment to charge the enemy's batteries. Moving column to top of hill, I order Major Coon, with companies H, G, C and part of A, of the Second Battalion, and Major Love's Third Battalion, to charge the battery on our left in echelons of squadrons. Deploying the columns to the right and left, when we had passed our infantry lines we attacked the skirmishers and supports of the enemy, driving them in and killed and wounded some. The battery on our left near the Farmington Road, on account of the ground being impracticable, the battery and supports by a fence; the fire from this was very severe, and though our men could not reach the guns, the enemy's gunners, evidently alarmed at the charge, ceased working their guns. Major Coon's Battalion, led by him, gallantly attacked the battery near the building known as the cotton mill (the center battery). Lt. Reilly, commanding Company F, (Jerome Gray's Company) of the Third Battalion, attacked and carried two guns in battery on our extreme right. The center battery was fairly carried, the gunners driven from their guns without taking them from the field. Finding our horses badly blown, from a long charge over rough ground, and the infantry of the enemy in great force, I, under heavy fire, ordered all companies on my right to retreat to the right and rear, forming on the swamp road, and those on my left to join the regiment on this road. I ordered Major Hepburn to move to the rear, retaining Major Coon with two companies to pick up the dead and wounded. My orders were carried out better than I could have expected. My Chief Bugler's bugle was rendered useless in the charge, four of my orderlies having had their horses killed from under them, and two being shot out of the saddle when transmitting orders." Col. Hatch then goes on to commend specific units and officers for their action noting finally that "There were about 400 men in the charge. Our loss will scarcely exceed fifty killed and wounded, fifty horses killed and fifty rendered un-serviceable from wounds."

Action continued the next day, followed by a lull. Then on the 28th of May the full Regiment under Col. Hatch penetrated into northern Mississippi taking the town of Boonesville. Col. Hatch reported after taking the town that; "I found standing on the track an engine, disabled, 26 cars loaded with 10,000 stand of arms, 1,000 small and side arms, 800,000 rounds of ball cartridge, 100,000 rounds of fixed ammunition for six and eight pound guns, three mounted field pieces, one car of horse equipments and team harness, haversacks, cross belts, cartridge boxes, canteens and knapsacks for 10,000 men; and a large amount of stores. The railroad depot was filled with commissary stores, 3,000 stand of arms, shells of a large size, medical stores and 300 kegs and barrels of powder marked 'Alabama Powder Company'."

All of this material was destroyed, and its loss caused the retreat of the Rebel army. The only casualties to the Second Iowa were one man killed, two wounded, and four captured by the enemy while scouting.

During the month of June, the regiment was almost constantly engaged and on June 24th it moved forward, taking the extreme advance of the army. The Second Iowa was encamped nearest the enemy, one half mile in front of the brigade.

On July 1st, 1862 the Rebels counter-attacked in force. The Second Iowa scouts reported the strength of the Rebel force greater than the Second Iowa and Second Michigan combined, the Second Michigan having camped with them. The officer in command of the two regiments was the commanding officer of the Second Michigan, Colonel Phillip Sheridan, later General Sheridan, one of the Union Heroes of the Civil War.

Sheridan, with less than 800 men in his now woefully under strength two regiments faced 4,000 rebel troops. Instead of retreating, he sent two companies from each regiment with orders to circle the enemy and attack the rebels from the rear. He posted his remaining force in a strong position and awaited the attack. The two regiments were splendidly armed and mounted, had absolute confidence in their leaders, and the result proved that the confidence was not misplaced. The rebel force was met by such heavy fire that it fell back in disorder, and were met by the charge of the force that had circled to their rear. The rebels were driven from the field with heavy loss, though Sheridan's force also suffered heavily.

On July 2nd, the Commanding General of the Army of the Mississippi issued the following general order.

"The General Commanding announces to this Army that on the 1st instant, Colonel P. H. Sheridan, Second Michigan Cavalry, with eleven companies of the Second Michigan and eleven companies of the Second Iowa Cavalry, was attacked near Booneville by eight regiments of rebel cavalry under Chalmers, and after an eight hours fight, defeated and drove them back, leaving their dead and wounded on the field. The coolness, determination, and fearless gallantry displayed by Colonel Sheridan and the officers and men of his command, in this action, deserve the thanks and admiration of the Army..."

The Commanding General of the Cavalry Division added; "...that this commendation was never more nobly earned or better deserved than by the soldiers of this division, and no greener laurels have been won in the great struggle by the hardy sons of the West than those of the Cavalry Division of the Army of the Mississippi."

Not all of the victors were present to hear the commendations. Jerome B. Gray, Bugler, F Company, Second Iowa Cavalry Volunteers was captured in the action. It is not clear whether or not he was wounded, his service record is not quite clear on this point. His Company Muster Roll for July and August, 1862 states in the remarks section that: "Missing since the battle near Boonville, Miss July 1/62. Strong reasons to believe he is a Prisoner of War in C.S. Army."

Jerome had indeed been captured. There is in his service record a summation of what happened to him next by the Adjutant General's Office prepared in 1885, perhaps as an adjunct to a pension application. It reads:

"September 21, 1885. Captured in action at Boonville, Miss. July 1, 1862. Paroled at Aikins Landing Va, October 17, 1862, reported to Camp Parole Md., date not given. Admitted to Convalescent Camp Hospital for Paroled Prisoners Annapolis, Md. October 21, 1862 with dysentery, sent to Camp Benton Mo. November 17, 1862. Admitted to Convalescent General Hospital, Benton Barracks, Mo. November 30, 1862 with chronic diarrhea and transferred to Co. D 5 VRC July 29, 1863, Cause not stated."

The hospital records carry Jerome as a patient through February, 1863. It is not known if he was suffering from wounds as well as the dysentery problems. He apparently recovered some of his physical functions, in February of 1863 he is recorded as being a Ward Master. At one time he is assigned duty as a nurse and also served on the burial detail. The last entry is a notation that he was transferred to the Invalid Corps and was at this point, apparently discharged from the Army. From this notation, it is assumed that Jerome had been wounded severely and would never fully recover from it. The above referenced pension records for Mellissa Gray reveal that Jerome married a nurse who worked in the hospital at Benton Barracks.

The Second Iowa Cavalry continued its exceptional service during the Civil War. It fought under General Grant while he was still in command in the West before Lincoln gave him command of the entire Union Army. It was for a time under the command of General Sherman. The brief history of the Second Iowa Cavalry, from taking the field in February of 1862 until it was disbanded in September of 1865, is twenty pages long. Over that period, 2,053 men served in its ranks of which 44 killed, 173 were wounded, 28 died of wounds, 207 died of disease, 199 discharged due to wounds, disease and other causes, 84 were captured, and 42 were transferred to other units.

Volney S. Gray, perhaps on hearing of his brother's capture on 1 July, 1862, enlisted on 9 August, 1862. He mustered as Second Sergeant on 16 September, 1862 in Company I of the 31st Infantry Iowa Volunteers. This was a new regiment formed that fall and it mustered in on October 13, 1862 at Davenport, Iowa.

Volney's service was almost as brief as his brother Van Rensselaer's had been. The regiment moved down the Mississippi River and fought a brief engagement in Mississippi under the Command of General Sherman. On the 2nd of January, 1863, it was transported by river, and on the 10th of that month marched through swamps and mire to reach Arkansas Post, a place in Arkansas, which they captured. The regiment then was again transported onto the Mississippi and down to Young's Point, Louisiana by January 22nd where it then went into camp. There on the 3rd of February, 1863, Volney S. Gray died of disease on the Steamer "Ohio Belle". Details of his service have been requested and will be added at a later date.

By February, 1863, all of the male members of the Gray family were either dead or disabled. It is not yet known if Jerome Gray returned to his home in Wright County, but Mellissa and the four daughters apparently continued to live there. It was in Wright County that John A. Turner married Frances Gray on 14 September, 1868. However no Gray family can be found in the 1870 Federal Census for Wright County. Frances Gray died sometime after 1870, and John A. Turner returned to Wright County to marry her younger sister Helen Gray on 29 September, 1873. Mellissa Gray applied for a dependent mother's pension on 3 March, 1876 while living in Belmond, Wright County, Iowa. The pension was apparently granted in 1877.

The only subsequent record we have of Mellissa Gray appears in the 1883 List of Civil War Pensioners where she is found listed in Jasper County, Iowa, Post Office address Newburgh, as Mellissa Gray, dependent mother, pension of \$8.00 per month, date of original allowance December, 1877. She would have been about 70 years old in 1883. She has not yet been located in the 1880 Federal Census and her date of death is currently unknown.

JOHN ALBERT TURNER

John Albert Turner was Lewis Turner's son by his second wife. This woman's name is not known, but as noted above, may have been Mary Hill. As previously stated, John was born in Pennsylvania in 1845 and his father migrated to Iowa in about 1849, so John would have been about 5 years old when Lewis married Elizabeth. John apparently spent all of his youth in Blackhawk County in Iowa. It appears from later indications that John was able to attend school and was literate enough to later serve as Administrator of his father's estate and to operate both as a farmer and a merchant.

In 1861 the Civil War began. At this time John was 16 years old. He did not join the Army until 3 February, 1864 when he was 18. He enlisted in the town of Orange in Orange Township of Blackhawk County for a period of three years and reported for duty in Waterloo on the 23rd of February, 1864. His enlistment papers record that he had black eyes, dark hair, a dark complexion, and was 5 feet, 7 inches tall. He joined the Third Battery, Iowa Light Artillery when the unit required new recruits. The ranks of this unit were reduced by the expiration of many three year enlistments of the men who had joined and formed the unit when the war began in 1861. After February of 1864, the 3rd Iowa Battery never engaged the Rebel forces and so John A. Turner never saw action in the Civil War, though the 3rd Iowa Battery had distinguished itself in the Battle of Pea Ridge and other actions prior to John's joining the unit.

This unit was uncommonly fortunate compared to other units in the Civil War. Of the total 290 men who served in the 3rd Iowa Battery, only 3 were killed, just 18 were wounded, with only one of those dying of his wounds, 33 died of disease and only 32 were discharged due to wounds or disease. John Turner was mustered out when the unit was dis-established on 23 October, 1865 at Davenport, Iowa. It is presumed that John returned home to Blackhawk County on his discharge. Subsequent records indicate that he became a member of the Grand Army of the Republic (GAR) but there is no record of him ever applying for or receiving a pension for his Civil War service.

John A. Turner married Frances Gray on 16 September, 1868. John was about 23 and Frances was about 20. The marriage occurred in Wright County, Iowa, which lies some 75 to 100 miles to the west northwest of Blackhawk County. It is not clear how John and Frances came to know each other given the distance between their homes. One supposition is that perhaps Frances came to Cedar Rapids, Iowa to attend Normal School as part of a teaching career and met John during that time. Whatever the case, their marriage produced a daughter, Cora Alice Turner, on 16 November, 1869.

As previously noted, the John Turner family appears in the 1870 census in Blackhawk County on his father Lewis's property with his wife Frances and child Cora, age 9 months. It is thought that the John Turner family moved to Sabetha, Kansas with Lewis Turner late in 1870, though there is no specific evidence that they did. The next verifiable fact is that John Turner married Helen Gray, Frances's younger sister, on 29 September, 1873 in Wright County, Iowa. It is clear that Frances Gray has died but there is no evidence as to where or when that occurred. A possible scenario is that Frances died in childbirth with her second child sometime between 1870 and 1873,

probably in Sabetha, Kansas. John may have called on Helen, Frances's younger sister, to come to Sabetha to help him care for his infant daughter Cora, and he subsequently married her. It is emphasized that this is pure conjecture, and no evidence has currently been found to support any conclusions.

John Turner lived in Sabetha for some time after moving there in 1870. John served as the Administrator of his father's estate from 1883 until it was finally settled in 1886. In 1884 John transferred title to two lots in Sabetha to Helen and also in 1884, Helen is identified as John's wife in proceedings related to Lewis's estate. This is the last reference we have to Helen Turner and nothing more is known of her. She does not appear in John's obituary printed in the Sabetha Herald in 1897. It is quoted as follows.

John A. Turner died at his lodgings in Kansas City, Kansas, Aug 19, 1897 of lead blood poisoning. The body was brought here for burial Saturday, the funeral being held at the GAR hall, conducted by Rev. W. A. Biggart who was assisted by Rev. J. S. Ford, and the remains were laid to rest in the Sabetha Cemetery. Deceased was born in Crawford County, Pennsylvania, June 11, 1845. He leaves a grown daughter living in Iowa. His nephew, J. P. Turner of Fairbury, and his half brothers, H. E. Turner of Vermillion, O. L. Turner of Armourdale, and L. V. Turner and E. L. Turner of this place were here to attend the funeral. John A. Turner was an old soldier, serving in the Third Iowa Battery, and a large number of his old comrades here attended the funeral. He was resident of Sabetha for a good many years but left about ten years ago. For several years past he had been working in a smelter at Kansas City, where he contracted the malady with caused his death.

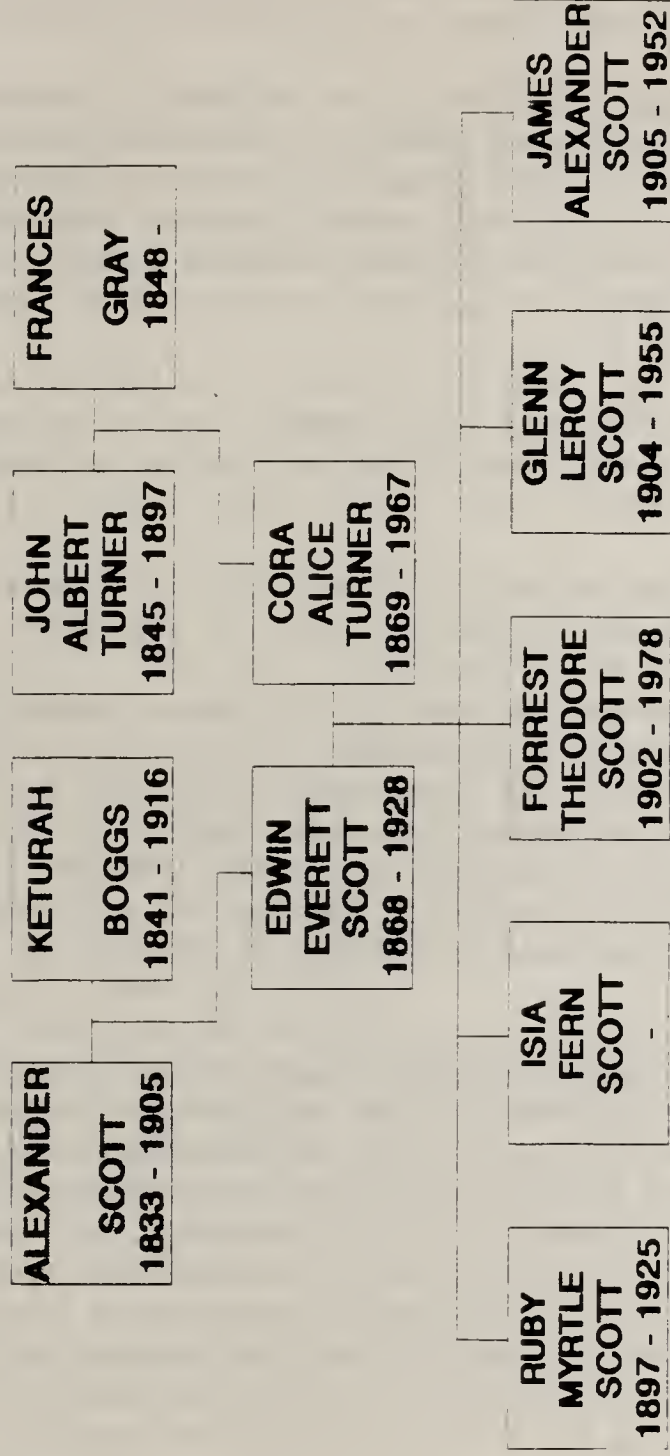
From the foregoing it appears that John left Sabetha around 1887 and went to Kansas City. With his merchant background it is surprising that he worked in a smelter and died of lead poisoning as a result. His wife Helen is not mentioned in the obituary, so it is not known what happened to her. The grown daughter living in Iowa is, of course, Cora Alice Turner.

CORA ALICE TURNER

It was in Sabetha, Kansas that Cora Alice Turner grew to womanhood. While this woman is well remembered, having had a great deal of influence on two following generations, she apparently did not relate much of her early life to anyone now remembering her. The impression of some of her grandchildren is that the early part of Cora's life prior to her marriage to Edwin Everett Scott was not a happy one. This could have derived from her circumstance of having had a step mother, a fact which she did relate to her grandchildren, and also that she was not treated well by her. It is perhaps for this reason that Cora never talked much about her youth.

Cora Turner completed her education through high school in Sabetha. In a series of teachers reports relating to her teaching years in North Dakota, she records that she graduated from high school in 1886. She also records that she took two years of work at the Normal School in Cedar Falls, Iowa in 1891 and 1892 thereby qualifying her to teach. It is not known why she would return to the general area where she was born to go to Normal School. It is not known if she left Sabetha shortly after her graduation from high school or shortly before her entrance into Normal School. She may have gone to Kansas City with her father when he went there around 1887 and stayed there with him for a time. Her family circumstance may have dictated that she leave home as soon as she was reasonably able to do so. In any case, having qualified to teach school and support herself, she was doing just that in Union Township of Cerro Gordo County, Iowa where she met Edwin Everett Scott and whom she subsequently married on 10 March, 1895.

FAMILY OF EDWIN EVERETT SCOTT



EDWIN EVERETT SCOTT

Edwin Everett Scott was the fourth born of the marriage of Alexander Scott and Keturah Boggs. He was born on 28 October, 1868. His birth no doubt took place in his parents home which was situated on one and one quarter acres in the Northeast corner of the Southwest Quarter of the Northwest Quarter of Section 29, Madison Township, Mercer County, Missouri. Edwin Everett is listed in that township and county in the 1870 Federal Census along with his parents, his older sister Etta Jane, his older brothers Erastus Winfield and Washington Christopher, and his older half brother Theodore. His was about 2 years old at the time of this census.

In early 1875 his family left Missouri and returned to Monroe County, Iowa where his father had lived prior to his move to Missouri. The family had expanded in Missouri. Twin sisters, Rhoda and Rosa had been born as had an additional sister, Jerusha Ann. A younger brother, James David, had also been born in Missouri, but he died shortly after their return to Iowa. However, the family continued to grow in Iowa. Henry Barton was born in Monroe County in 1877. Another sister, Isia was born in Marion County in 1879. In 1880 the Federal Census finds the family in Frankfort Township of Montgomery County in western Iowa. Also living with them at that time is Jerusha Lower, Edwin's grandmother.

The 1885 Iowa State Census finds the family in Cass County. Edwin's youngest sister, Louie Elizabeth has now been born and his grandmother Jerusha Lower has left the family to live with relatives in Monroe County. Edwin's half brother Theodore had died in 1880.

By 1892 Edwin's family is located on the last farm that his father Alexander would own, a property about 6 miles north of Willisca, Iowa at Tennville. By this time Edwin was 24 years old.

Edwin is known to have had some education during his youth though he probably did not progress beyond the 8th grade, if he was able to attend schools to that level. The 1880 census indicates that he was going to school in that year and he may have had opportunity to go to school during other years also. It is known that he could read and write since later documents have his quite competent signature and his grandson Edwin King recalls that he frequently read the paper during the evening hours after work in the later years of his life. He, along with his siblings, were no doubt heavily committed to the family farm work and was part of this family enterprise until he left to establish his own life, so schooling was likely not extensive.

It is not certain when he left home, but it was likely in the year of 1893. We find him recorded in a book of Union County Rental Records as renting a property with his brother Washington Christopher in 1894 in Union Township, Cerro Gordo County, Iowa. This is in the area just south of Clear Lake in north central Iowa. Together they are working 260 acres, a sizable amount of ground. His brother Washington had married Sarah Ann Hassell in Meservey, Iowa which is located in the southwest corner of Cerro Gordo County, in February of 1892, the same month that their father Alexander had purchased his land in Montgomery County. Washington had therefore struck out on his own before 1892, and it may be that Edwin Everett had joined his brother in northern Iowa earlier than 1893. There is no record that indicates that either Edwin or Washington had any legal connection with Alexander's farm in Tennville as did their older brother Winfield. However, the newspaper clipping quoted below indicates that Edwin did not come to the Clear Lake area until around 1893 so this is the year it is presumed he left home to seek his own fortune.

On 10 March, 1895 Edwin Everett married Cora Alice Turner. Their license and record of marriage are listed as having taken place in Clear Lake, Iowa with Rueben Ward as the minister. Both are noted as being residents of Union Township with no town being specified. Cora's parents are listed as J. A. Turner and Francis Grey, Edwin's as A. Scott and Catura Boggs. A newspaper reported the event as follows.

SCOTT-TURNER. On Sunday morning, March 10th, at the home of the officiating clergyman in Clear Lake, Edwin E. Scott to Miss Cora Turner. Mr. Scott is one of the wide-awake young farmers of Union Township where he has been working for about two years, coming here from Missouri. Miss Cora has been a successful school teacher in Union Township for several years and the young couple have a host of friends who wish them long life and happiness.

It is not likely that Edwin Everett came to northern Iowa from Missouri as the clipping indicates, though that is entirely possible. He may have struck out on his own much earlier than 1893 and spent some of his late teens and early twenties in Missouri. It may be that Edwin's departure from home at or shortly after the time of his father's purchase of the Tennville property was not pleasing to his father and resulted in Edwin not being mentioned in his father's will, though this is pure speculation. It is more likely that the newspaper is confusing Edwin's birthplace with where he came from. It is probable that Edwin spent about a year with his father and the rest of the family in Tennville, since this article places his arrival in the Clear Lake area to be sometime in 1893.

The 1895 Iowa State Census finds the Scott household in Union Township of Cerro Gordo County consisting of the following named individuals. Washington Christopher is there with his wife Sarah and their first born son, Clyde. Also listed are Edwin E. Scott and Cora Turner, and both indicated as being single. Both Edwin and Washington appear to be listed as heads of households and both as farmers. The census appears to be intended to establish the population as of 1 January, 1895 but actually taken at a later date. This would account for the listing of Cora as Cora Turner instead of as Edwin's wife and their unmarried status, though living in the same household.

Edwin and Cora began their family in November of 1897 when Ruby Myrtle was born. The 1900 census finds this family unit again in Union Township of Cerro Gordo County. However, brother Washington and his family are not listed, they having migrated to Minnesota in 1898. We also find listed as part of Edwin and Cora's household, George Findley and his wife, Louie Elizabeth, Edwin's younger sister. George Findley is listed as a "farm laborer".

Conversations with Louie's children indicate that George and Louie, who were only 19 and 15 years old respectively at the time, had married in early 1900, much to the dismay and disapproval the parents of both of them, and that they had gone to northern Iowa to work for Edwin Everett on his farm. George Findley recalls of hearing that the reason they went up there was that the pay was nearly double that being paid locally, though it is not clear why that should be so. He also tells of his father and Uncle Edwin taking pigs to market. The distance was some 35 miles and the only way to get the pigs there was to drive them. Driving pigs is a real chore compared to driving cattle so this must have been no picnic. Velma Case recalls that her parents had to return to the Villisca area in the fall of 1900 because George had somehow broken his leg and was unable to work. George relates that they returned to Villisca by train and that it was a long trip in those days. It does indicate however, that travel was getting easier around turn of the century, though it would still be nearly thirty years before the automobile was available to the common man and America became really mobile.

The 1900 Federal Census is also instructive in that the information collected that year reveals that both Edwin and Cora can read and write. Edwin, as previously noted, had received some education and Cora had finished high school and two terms of Normal School, and so was well educated for the time. The census also shows that they own the land they are farming but that it is mortgaged. It is not known whether this is same land that Edwin and his brother were renting in the mid 1890's, but an examination of the census lists from 1895 and 1900 show that they had the same neighbors indicating that Edwin had bought the land they were renting. The implication is that the brothers were successful in their joint farming enterprise in northern Iowa, at least in the beginning, but that Washington's 1898 departure to Minnesota and Edwin and Cora's subsequent departure for North Dakota indicate that either their efforts had failed or they perceived greater opportunity to the north in the form of homestead land. It is hard to imagine two successful farmers leaving the good black dirt of Iowa for farming ventures in North Dakota or Minnesota for any other reason.

There are a few photographs of this period in Edwin and Cora's life. One of these is a very small egg shaped photo that has written on the back, "Dad and our hired man-1902". The writing was by Cora some time late in her life so "Dad" was Edwin Everett and he is unmistakable comparing this picture with Edwin and Cora's wedding picture, which is also available. The picture could have been taken at a County Fair. Both Edwin and the hired man are sporting handlebar mustaches and each has a long fat cigar sticking out the side of his mouth. Though they are dressed in suits, one gets the impression they are pretending to be part of the "James Gang" from the look on the hired man's face. The photo has been mounted on a hard paper back which is engraved with the signature of a photographer in Lidgerwood, North Dakota. This is somewhat confusing in that the 1902 date would place Edwin in Iowa, his son Forrest was born there in that year. Further, it is hard to believe that a newcomer to farming in North Dakota

would have a hired man. The likely explanation is that the picture was taken in Iowa in 1902 and it was later cut to the oval shape and mounted on the hardpaper backing from another discarded picture taken in Lidgerwood at some later date.

As noted above, Edwin and Cora's son Forrest Theodore was born in September of 1902 in Iowa. In the 1910 census record, it is noted that Cora had given birth to five children, only four of them living. Therefore Edwin and Cora had lost a child at some point, and it would seem that this birth would have occurred during the four year period between the birth of Ruby in 1897 and Forrest in 1902 while Edwin and Cora lived in Iowa. Indeed, we find later in Edwin's obituary that there was a fifth child, a daughter they had named Isia Fern who had died in infancy. Edwin's children are named in the obituary in order of their birth and Isia Fern appears after Ruby and before Forrest, implying that her birth and death took place between the times of Ruby and Forrest's births. The actual times of her birth, death, and place of burial are not known.

Edwin and Cora's next child, Glenn Leroy, was born in Lidgerwood, North Dakota in April of 1904. Some time between Forrest's birth in 1902 and Glenn's in 1904, Edwin and Cora had migrated to North Dakota. It is not clear why they should do so. Edwin had been in the Union Township area of Cerro Gordo County, Iowa for some 10 years and apparently doing well enough to hire help, and certainly the land in Iowa was some of the best farm land in the country. There was not a significant national economic problem at the time, 1902 was a bit of a down year, though the up years before and after 1902 were not significantly up. Of course locally, any year can be a big down year for a farmer. Drought or high winds or hail could wipe out a farmer with a heavy mortgage, and the farm Edwin was working was mortgaged. We have a letter written on a Christmas card from Cora to Edna Cranor, her niece through Scott marriages with the Hassell family. The letter is not dated but appears to have been written in 1949 or 1950. In the letter Cora states that the Hassell family lived in Minnesota "but I lived in N. Dak. then about 125 miles from them. Ed and I, Ed was my man, were to go to live there too but I taught school in Dak and made the money to get the rest there and we never did go to Minnesota." It appears that the original intent was to relocate in the Red River Valley area of Minnesota along with brother Washington and his in-laws through his marriage to Sadie Hassell. There were at least two Hassell families living there at the time. For some reason, perhaps a teaching position, Edwin and Cora made an interim move to southeast North Dakota before moving on to the Red River Valley.

Edwin and Cora's second son and fourth child, Glenn Leroy was born in Dexter Township, Richland County, North Dakota on 15 April, 1904. The nearest town was Lidgerwood, about 3 miles into the next township to the south. Lidgerwood is located in the southeast corner of the state of North Dakota about 10 miles from the South Dakota border and about 25 miles west of the Minnesota border. Lidgerwood is about 100 miles south of the Ada, Minnesota area where Washington and Sadie had located in 1898.

Edwin and Cora were probably in Lidgerwood for two years. This is surmised from Cora's North Dakota teaching records. We do not have her teaching records for the Lidgerwood area, but there are two years she was known to have taught in North Dakota which presently cannot be accounted for. Lidgerwood is the most likely place taking into account the above referenced letter and the lack of teaching records before the time she taught in western North Dakota. After these two years in Lidgerwood, Edwin and Cora moved farther west rather than into Minnesota as they had apparently previously intended to do. The reason for this change in direction is not known, but again was probably related to homestead land.

Edwin's father Alexander died in January of 1905 in Villisca, Iowa. Alexander's obituary places E. E. Scott in Wilton, North Dakota at that time. Wilton, North Dakota is just north of Bismarck in Burleigh County. This was the birthplace of Edwin and Cora's last child and son, James Alexander, who is recorded as having been born in Chapin Township of Burleigh County, North Dakota on 8 April, 1905.

Chapin was also the name of a little town which lay about a mile east of Wilton and about 20 miles due north of Bismarck. Bismarck is located in the south central part of North Dakota on the Missouri River. The Book of North Dakota Place Names describes Chapin as follows.

"Chapin was a coal miner's settlement one mile east of Wilton in Ecklund Township. Gen. William D. Washburn named the settlement for his son Edward Chapin Washburn. Chapin is a French name meaning chaplain or clergyman. Twelve blocks were platted here to serve the Washburn Lignite Coal Mine No. 1, and development featured an 80 room hotel and a Soo Line Railroad siding. The site dates from 1902, but as the mines became less feasible from an economic standpoint, it was eventually abandoned, and the principal remains of the site are the spoil banks left at the mines."

It is not clear why Edwin and Cora would leave Lidgerwood and farming to go to a coal mining community. One likely reason would be that Edwin had been unsuccessful in locating a suitable place to homestead in eastern North Dakota and could not afford the high quality farm land in the Red River Valley where his brother Washington was farming. He therefore took work in the coal mines or some other business relating to it in the Wilton area until he could save some money and find a suitable farm. It is also possible that Cora had found a teaching job in Wilton or Chapin, though there is no record that she taught there. Edwin did return to farming fairly soon, however.

In August of 1908 Edwin paid \$400.00 cash for 160 acres of land identified as the Northeast Quarter of Section 14 of Township 135N, Range 78W in Emmons County, North Dakota. This land is about 25 miles southeast of Bismarck and about 10 miles west of the town of Hazelton. It is also only six miles west and two miles south of the homestead that his brother Washington Christopher filed on in October of 1907. Rather than Edwin joining Wash in Minnesota, Wash had joined Edwin in North Dakota. The two brothers are once again in close proximity to each other. The purchase document identifies Edwin Everett as residing in Hazelton at the time. It therefore appears that he and Cora had moved with their family to Hazelton sometime prior to this date, or he may have been working the farm before the sale was registered. Edwin Everett's obituary states that he filed on this land in 1907, though the purchase deed is dated 1908. The land was purchased directly from the government under Patent Number 57997 according to the deed issued in July of 1909.

In 1910 Edwin and Cora are listed in the Federal Census in Emmons County on the farm which he had bought in 1908. The farm is noted as carrying a mortgage at this time. The census adds a bit of confusion in that it states that son Glenn Leroy was born in Iowa. This is contrary to other records including his birth certificate and seems to be an error on the part of the census taker. The census also notes that Cora does not have a profession at this time. This implies that she was not teaching school while they lived here as she is known to have done prior to and after this time. Indeed, there are no records showing that she ever taught in Emmons County.

It is not known exactly how long Edwin and Cora stayed on this farm, but Edwin Everett's obituary states that in 1910 they moved to the Dickinson, North Dakota area. It appears that they did not sell the Emmons County farm when they left. At least the land was not recorded as sold until November of 1915 when it was bought by a Karl Grenz. The total sale price is not known, the sale being for one dollar and other valuable considerations, including the assumption of a mortgage of \$2,045.00. It is not clear why they departed the Emmons County area. Edwin was again living close to his brother and he owned the farm which he was working. It must be noted however, that the land in North Dakota, particularly the prairie land he was on, was not good farm land and any adverse event could be disastrous to a subsistence farmer. His brother Washington is remembered as saying that the North Dakota prairie was only good for growing buffalo grass, and they should have left it to the buffalo. It is likely that Edwin and Cora were not doing well on the farm in Emmons County and they left for a better opportunity to farm and perhaps for Cora to help with the family financing through teaching in the Dickinson area.

The Heart River and its tributaries drain the majority of Stark County in western North Dakota, and flows east through the town of South Heart and Dickinson to meet the Missouri River at Mandan, the site of Fort Lincoln. This is the fort from which General George Custer began his campaign against the Sioux. It was along the Heart River that Custer and his 7th Cavalry had passed in 1876 on their way to history on the Little Big Horn in southern Montana. Edwin and Cora were of a stock that made history in a less dramatic fashion, however. Edwin was a "sodbuster" and Cora a "schoolmarm", and their historical impact, along with that of many like them, was far more significant and profound than the bloody meeting between Crazy Horse and Yellow Hair some 40 years earlier. Edwin no doubt farmed in the South Heart area, though it is not clear where, providing sustenance to his family and perhaps others. It is certain that Cora taught school throughout the area, providing education and knowledge to the sons and daughters of the pioneers who claimed this land for the American Civilization.

Dickinson, North Dakota lies about 100 miles due west of Bismarck and is about 70 miles from the Montana border. In the 1915 North Dakota Census we find Edwin and Cora in the un-incorporated town of St. Pius in Stark County, of which Dickinson is the county seat. We also have obtained Edwin's personal property tax records in that county for the nine year period of 1910 through 1918 and Cora's teaching record in Stark County for the same period. Cora's teaching record shows that she taught in the Newport School District east of Dickinson for one year, the next year she taught just two months in the Spring of 1912 in the South Heart School District, which is west of Dickinson, staying there for the next four years until the end of the 1916 school year. In the 1916-17 school year she taught in Belfield which is also west of Dickinson, and in 1917-18 she was back in the Newport School District again. This does not necessarily mean that the family moved several times during that eight year period. Edwin's personal property tax records show that he paid those taxes in School District Number 1 (Newport) in 1910-1917 and School District Number 2 (Belfield) in 1918. The town of St. Pius recorded in the 1915 census lies about 15 miles to the south of South Heart on Antelope Creek. It is not clear why they should have been counted there in 1915, St. Pius is not in either School District where they paid personal property tax or near any of the school districts in which Cora taught. There is no record of Edwin ever paying any real estate taxes, so they apparently never bought property in the Dickinson area.

Edwin's mother, Keturah Scott died in March of 1916 and her obituary from the Villisca, Iowa newspaper notes that Edwin's address is Belfield, North Dakota at that time. The family was also familiar with Dickinson, being friends with a Doctor Bowen and also a Doctor Speer of that town. Edwin King, Edwin and Cora's grandson now living in Dickinson recalls that Doctor Speer, who was Edwin King's personal physician for years, claimed to have been around at the time of his birth in Dickinson in 1915.

Ed King has two postcards relating to this time. One is a picture postcard addressed to Ruby Scott, Zenith, North Dakota. Ed recalls that his grandmother Cora had spoken of the people named on the card, so Cora knew them. The other was again to Miss Ruby Scott, this time in Belfield, North Dakota and is dated in 1914. It was from Ed's father, Warren King, since it has written on it, "Warren to future wife". Ruby married Warren King in Dickinson on 28 December, 1914. Ruby would have been 17 years old at the time of her marriage. A photograph of Ruby taken near that time has been located. She was a beautiful young woman. Edwin King, her first son, was born in Belfield, North Dakota on 27 June, 1915.

Edwin and Cora left the Belfield and Dickinson area in 1918 according to Edwin's obituary, Cora's teaching record, and the personal property tax records. It appears that the newly formed King family went with them. They moved to a site just south of Cannon Ball which is in Sioux County, North Dakota on the Standing Rock Indian Reservation, just inside the northern border of the reservation and on the west bank of the Missouri River. Edwin King's younger brother, Elmer Warren, was born in Cannon Ball in 1918 and his younger sister, Cora Alice, named after her grandmother Cora Alice Scott, was also born there in 1919.

It is probable that Cora's teaching profession had a lot to do with the move. The land onto which Cora and Edwin moved was a 100 acre portion of Section 26 of Township 133N, Range 79W of Sioux County which had been set aside as a parcel of land to support a school on the reservation. Edwin and Cora apparently leased this land, one source noting that such leases could be had for as little as ten cents an acre per year. We have pictures of the school and farm house building taken in about 1922. This building appears to be well constructed and probably was built by the government for Indian school purposes. Indeed, it has a fairly large bell tower and bell on the top, so it is not likely that Edwin and Cora built this building. The school was called the "Number One Day School". There is no record of the lease arrangement in Sioux County or the local Bureau of Indian Affairs offices. It is not known whether or not there had been any previous occupants on this parcel of land but it is thought not. The land that went with the school property was also more desirable than most North Dakota farm land from a subsistence farming point of view. A significant portion of the property was Missouri River bottom land and a stream flowed through it into the Missouri providing plenty of close water and feed for the stock. The combination of school teaching income and relatively good land for farming was the likely reason Edwin and Cora moved to this location.

The main building of the farm was constructed in such a manner that the school and the farmhouse were under the same roof. The home had a kitchen and two bedrooms, a living room, a dining room, a screened back porch facing the river and two front porches, both well shaded. There were two rest rooms (out houses) for boys and girls in the school. There was also an attached garage or storage building. There was a woodshed for the wood stoves and a coal shed for coal burning stoves and the blacksmith shop. There were also two earthen barns for the milk cows and horses, and an ice house or cellar dug into the side of a hill.

The farm site was on the south side of the stream that flowed through the property and the buildings stood on the first terrace above the Missouri River flood plane. The Missouri River channel itself was a considerable distance from the first terrace and there were many trees and open areas in the flood plane. The flood plane was used to raise hay and sizable crops were harvested from this area. Potatoes were grown in a low spot next to the stream and there was a significant vegetable garden. A road followed the river, also on the first terrace above the flood plane and there was a bridge across the stream. On the north side of the stream lived an Indian family with the name of Uses Arrow. Ed King recalls that this family were very good friends and neighbors to the Scotts. The road continued on south of the Scott farm toward other farms and eventually to Fort Yates. Off this road were accesses to the higher lands above the flood plane, and those higher portions of the 100 acre farm were used for grain crops such as oats.

Ed King has provided some information as to how the farm supported the family. There was, of course, the large garden that supplied fresh vegetable for eating and canning. The meat they used was mostly home grown and included pork, beef, and poultry. Ed remembers that Cora was high on milk so there were dairy cows for milk, cream and butter, and also for cash sales. He recalls that they sold cream and that it was his job to run the separator twice a day and to help in the family milking. Cash crops were wheat and flax while corn and oats were raised as feed crops for the animals. In winter they would cut ice from the Missouri River and haul it to the ice house, which was more of an earthen cellar cut into the side of a hill, where the ice was packed with flax straw for insulation. Milk products were kept cool there in the summer and supplied the ice to make the best ice cream Ed King ever tasted. Other perishables were also stored there. In the summer, cured pork and fresh poultry were the primary meat supply augmented with wild game such as prairie chickens and rabbit. In the winter a cow could be butchered and kept in the cold storage shed or kept frozen in the North Dakota weather through most of the winter. Dry goods, flour, sugar, beans, rice, etc. were purchased from a grocery store.

Horse power was the primary means of getting the work done. In the early days almost all the machinery and wagons were built at home, hence the need for the blacksmith shop and the skills to use it. Threshing machines started coming into use about this time and there were tractors becoming available. Ed King recalls that his grandfather was very good at handling and caring for horses and would tolerate no abuse of the animals. It is also his memory that his grandfather was as kind and tolerant of people as he was of the animals and that he had a good heart and was easy going. Another grandson, Edwin Scott, also remembers his grandfather as a kindly and gentle man. He recalls that his grandfather was made a member of the Sioux Nation by the Indians who lived nearby because they held Edwin Everett in such high regard. It is not known that Edwin had done anything unusual or extraordinary for the Indians, so it may have been his kind and friendly nature that earned their respect and the honor they bestowed on him.

Other grandsons recall a story related by Cora that had to do with the Indians. It seems an old Indian would, from time to time, silently appear on the porch of the house and sit down there. He never knocked or spoke. When Cora saw him, she would fill a plate with beans which she kept in a pot on the cook stove most of the time, and give them to the Indian. He would eat and silently leave without a word. She said they called him "Injun Joe". This is the source of the Injun Joe name one of her grandsons, Clayton Leroy Scott, had hung on him by his brothers and sister when he was a boy growing up in the Black Hill of South Dakota. Clayton would get up in the morning, eat, and without saying a word, go fishing alone until late in the day, sometimes even after supper, when he would show up, again to eat, and never telling anyone where he had been fishing. He seemed the silent Indian, only showing up to eat. He therefore became "Injun Joe".

Guns were a necessary and omni-present tool of the frontier, and some of the guns that were present on the farm still exist and the fate of others is known. There was a very large gauge double barreled shotgun that was probably Edwin Everett's gun. The barrels were made of tightly wound wire and heated to weld the wire together and it had two open hammers on the back. It was very heavy and almost too large to be useful in shooting small game. Ed King recalls one occasion when he was about 7 years old when he was home alone. He decided to shoot some noisy crows and took the shotgun down from where it hung above the door and took it outside, loaded it, aimed it at the crows and fired. The recoil knocked him to the ground, not seriously hurting him, or the crows, but scaring the daylights out of he and them. He never again touched that shotgun and never told anyone he had ever laid hands on it. The gun is thought to have been given away by a family member in later years to an acquaintance for use in decorating a wall of his den as a then useless and interesting antique. The name of the recipient cannot be recalled.

Another weapon was a 45-70 rifle. This gun is now in the possession of Edwin King, he having obtained it from his sister Cora when her husband, Henry Keniston died in 1992. Henry had received it from Cora Scott, probably in the 1940's. Henry was a gun enthusiast and had kept the rifle in top condition over the years. The gun is presently being preserved by the King family.

Edwin King also has a 22 Calibre Winchester rifle given to him by Jim Scott, his uncle and Edwin and Cora's youngest son, while he lived on the farm on the Indian Reservation. This would have been in 1929 or 1930. Jim Scott traded one of his horses to an Indian for the rifle. Ed King recalls that the horse looked real good but was a poor worker and so not worth much on a working farm. The Indian was not a farmer, but wanted a good looking horse, so Jim made the trade when the Indian offered it, and like most good trades, they both thought they made a good deal. Ed King used the rifle extensively in his youth. He made considerable spending money collecting bounty on magpies that he shot with it. There was a 15 cent bounty on magpies since they were aggressive scavengers taking chicken eggs and also, on occasion, killing livestock by feeding on open wounds in the animals backs caused by other parasites.

Ed King recalls that Cora was the disciplinarian of the family, much more so than Edwin. He recalls that Cora's discipline was firm but it was also fair. He does not remember ever being spanked by Edwin and does not recall that anyone else ever was either. He remembers a pleasant household, and in particular, his grandfather's use of tobacco. Grandpa enjoyed his corn cob pipe. In the evening after supper and chores he would fill it with Tuxedo Tobacco and smoke in the living room reading a newspaper where Gram would join him after the dishes to crochet. Grandpa only smoked in the winter however. In the summer when there was much more work to be done he would put away the pipe and switch to Climax Chewing Tobacco. It was probably this use of tobacco that cause a cancer to develop on his lip.

Ed King remembers his grandfather as being a man of medium build about 5'10" or 5'11" tall. He also remembers that his grandfather usually wore a large mustache and pictures of Edwin during this period verify that he did. He apparently shaved it off on occasion as there are also pictures of Edwin when he is clean shaven. His dress was typical of the "sodbuster" farmer, he usually wore sturdy shoes but no hat, much as we might like to think of him in a 10 gallon Stetson and western boots. His wedding picture shows that he was indeed a handsome man in his youth. Later pictures show that 40 years of farming did not wear too badly on him.

Cora on the other hand, was not what you would call a good looker. She was relatively tall for a woman and slender built, but even in her wedding picture she does not appear to be the girl that would be a likely match for the handsome Edwin Everett. Her most distinguishing feature was her nose. She brought to the Scott line a new set of dominant genes relating to that appendage, and while it came to be called a Scott nose, it was in fact from the Turner lineage that many of us inherited our substantial facial feature. In the early days she had dark hair, but most of us remember her in her later years after it had turned almost pure white. It was really quite beautiful. As she aged further into her 90's her hair seemed to slightly yellow like fine old linen. She was amazingly healthy throughout her entire life and had tremendous energy. She never slowed down until near the end of her life which spanned nearly a full century.

One of the few pictures we have of Edwin Everett is a photograph of Edwin, Cora, and the three King children. On the reverse side of the photo is written: "Taken in March, 1929 just after Dad came home from cancer sanitarium." This was written by Cora but she wrote the wrong date when she annotated the picture some years later, Edwin died in October of 1928. The photo was no doubt taken in March of 1928. The cancer referred to was the lip cancer caused from Edwin's use of tobacco. There is a shadow on that part of his face in this photo so it is not certain that there is any outwardly physical evidence of the cancer. However, Edwin King remembers that his grandfather had a hole in his lip and that at the sanatorium they had put radium in the cancer to kill it. Sometime later a sliver of bone came out through the hole. Radium treatment was experimental in those days, being the forerunner of present day radiation treatment, so a significant overdose was likely. Edwin's cancer is one of only two cancers known to have occurred in his family line. The other was a cancer of the larynx suffered by his son James in his later years, also probably caused by the heavy use of tobacco. In the photograph, Edwin otherwise seems to be in good health for his nearly 60 years. He is showing a "very high forehead", not fully bald but certainly having much less hair than shown in his wedding picture.

The Scott family was not particularly oriented to church. There was a Congregationalist Church some distance away where a Reverend Tibbits and his son Percy tended primarily to the Indian community. Both of these gentlemen were themselves Indians. Ed King recalls that Gram was of the opinion that churches were not all that necessary to pray, and that as long as you prayed and were sincere, you could use a fence post for a church. They did go to church occasionally, primarily on important Christian holidays like Easter and Christmas. The Indians and the Whites went to church together and used the same church facilities. In her later life, Gram never became a church member, and spoke very little of her faith, though it is clear that she followed Christian teachings throughout her life.

While Gram was no doubt the family disciplinarian, she was greatly admired, loved and respected by the King children. She was very purposeful about children being educated in the three R's, she of course, spent a great deal of time actively teaching both white and Indian children of the area. She was destined to play a larger role in the King children's lives than grandmother and teacher however.

It is interesting to note that almost nothing of the farm site that supported the Scott family on the banks of the Missouri now exists. A visit to the site in the Spring of 1990 reveals that none of the buildings survive and it is difficult to locate even the foundations on which the house stood. The cool storage root cellar is about the only clearly identifiable mark on the landscape. The U.S. Army Corps of Engineers erected a dam on the Missouri just north of Pierre, South Dakota and the waters from the lake formed by that dam cover the entire flood plane when the lake is full. The creek bed and place where the bridge stood are littered with drift wood washed there by the lake, and other than the faint outline of the road leading south and the depression left where the root cellar had been, there is nothing to indicate that the farm ever existed. The Army Corps of Engineers probably had cleared the site of any buildings and the bridge. Even the stones of the foundation of the main house were scattered when they cleared the land for the lake, so time alone was not solely responsible for this land reverting to a completely undeveloped state. However, so little is left that it appears to have never been occupied, and it is hard to imagine how a living was ever wrested from this now barren place.

We have obtained Cora's Teachers Reports from the Sioux County Superintendent of Schools for the years 1923 when they began keeping records, until 1933 when she left the district. The records show that she taught at 3 different schools in the Cannon Ball area. Ed King recalls that he began school at the Number One Day School with Cora as his teacher in 1922, we have a picture of him and his classmates taken that year in front of the school and the house. Two years later Cora is teaching in Cannonball itself, and continues to do so until 1930 when she begins teaching in Fort Yates. Ed King recalls that the man who replaced Gram in the Number One Day School was named Mr. Lamb, and he may have boarded with the Scott's, though most of the time he boarded with the Henderson boys who were Ed King's classmates and the only other white children in the school.

Warren and Ruby King initially settled on a farm five or six miles further south from the Scott farm along the river. The farm was owned by a Mr. Ward who lived on the other side of the Missouri River. By 1922, Warren King had acquired, or was renting a piece of land between the Ward farm and the Scott farm and had built a log home on it and move there from the Ward farm.

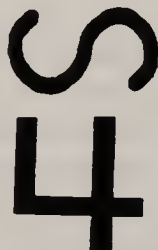
As noted above, Ed King and his brother and sister went to school at the Scott farm. It was a significantly long daily trip between their farm and the Scott farm by foot or wagon so Ruby's children would live with Edwin and Cora during the school year and then go home for the summer. They also frequently went home at other times of the year when the weather permitted, using saddle horses as means of transportation.

The Sites family had been homesteading their farm on the East side of the Missouri River since about 1893. The Sites farm was about 2 miles south of Fort Rice on the east bank of the river while the Scott farm was about 17 miles south of Fort Rice on the west bank. Edwin's older brother Washington Christopher was homesteading the farm he had filed on in 1907, this farm being about 6 or 7 miles northeast of the Sites farm. Family photographs reveal that there was a good deal of social interaction among these families during this period.

Glenn Leroy Scott, Edwin and Cora's second son, married Mabel Claire Sites on 7 April, 1924 in Bismarck, North Dakota. It appears that Glenn had left home to work in Bismarck prior to this time and that while he probably had known Mabel before she too had left home for work in Bismarck, they probably cemented their relationship while they were in that city. At the time of their marriage, Glenn was 19 and Mabel was nearly 23.

After the Kings left the Ward farm, it was occupied by a Smith family. Sarah Ellen Smith of that family later became the wife of Forrest Theodore Scott, Edwin and Cora's oldest son. According to a biography of Levi Henderson found in the Heritage Center in Bismarck North Dakota, (the Henderson's were one of three white families living in the area and friends of the Scotts), the marriage between Forrest and Ellen was the first between whites to take place in that township and that the marriage occurred in 1925.

In April of 1924, Edwin Everett registered a livestock brand with the North Dakota State Department of Agriculture. The brand was designed as a Lazy "S", that is the "S" is lying on its side, with a figure Four beneath it. It was therefore the Lazy S Four Brand. It would appear as shown here.



The brand is still registered as a legal brand in the State of North Dakota. Edwin Everett signed the document and it was witnessed by Mrs. E. E. Scott and Mrs. Glenn Scott. The brand was to be burned into the left hip of cattle and horses as a means of establishing ownership of the animals so branded.

The design of the brand would seem to have been derived from the "S" in Scott and the four males of the family, Edwin Everett, Forrest, Glenn, and Jim.

It is not known whether or not Edwin registered the brand for his own or for collective purposes, but there are family stories about an attempt to establish a cattle ranching operation. In the 1925 North Dakota State Census, Glenn and Mabel are listed with Forrest and Ellen in Sioux County. The cattle brand had been registered only 11 days after Glenn and Mabel's marriage. Both families are noted as being in the same household and occupying a farm somewhere south of the Scott farm in the area of the Kings and Smiths. Allen Scott, son of Forrest and Ellen, recalls that his father spoke of a cattle brand that the Scotts used at that time. He called it as the Lazy S Bar Four, but there is no Bar in the actual registration.

The collective ranching venture was not successful however, perhaps since the principals involved were not very compatible. Cora told of a major disagreement involved butchering of stock. Forrest would butcher prime stock for his own use instead of the poorer grades and others objected since that practice prevented upgrading of the herd. In addition, the personal friendships among the family members did not develop. It is recalled that Mabel and

Ellen did not get along, and after a year or so, Glenn and Mabel left the enterprise and returned to Bismarck. Forrest appears to have continued in the cattle business until he left North Dakota and went to Washington State some years later.

In 1925 the world of Edwin and Cora began to run into a series of unhappy events. In the fall of 1925 a diphtheria epidemic swept through the country. So many people died in North Dakota that many deaths were not recorded. During that epidemic, Edwin and Cora lost their daughter Ruby. Her death is not officially recorded in the North Dakota state archives. Her grave is clearly marked in the Big Lake Church Cemetery which lies on the bluff overlooking the Missouri River about a mile north of the Scott farm. Her obituary appeared in the Sioux County Pioneer newspaper on 22 October, 1925 and is quoted as follows.

Ruby Myrtle Scott was born Nov. 8, 1897 at Clear Lake, Iowa. She came to North Dakota with her parents where she grew to womanhood. She was married to Warren W. King, December 28, 1914. To this union were born three children, Edwin, Elmer and Cora. She contracted diphtheria, and after two weeks of illness passed away at her home on October 17, 1925. She was a loving mother and daughter and all who knew her mourn for her. Funeral services were conducted by Rev. T. A. Tibbits at the grave among a large gathering of friends. The county generally sympathizes with the bereaved family.

The following card of thanks also appears in that paper.

We wish to extend our heartfelt thanks to the many friends who gave us aid and comfort in our late bereavement and for the many beautiful flowers and those that extended their kindly sympathy in our deep sorrow. W.W. King and family, E.E. Scott, Mrs. E.E. Scott, Forrest Scott, Glenn Scott, James Scott.

Forrest and Ellen's infant child died in that same year of 1925, probably in the same epidemic. The Levi Henderson biography cites this death as being the first white death in the township. It is also known that Glenn Scott had diphtheria during this epidemic, but he survived without apparent ill affect.

The King children came to live with Edwin and Cora after their mother's death, the temporary school/live-in arrangement becoming permanent. Warren King, their father, struck out alone to rebuild his life. The oldest King child was Edwin, about 10 at this time, and Cora, who was called Sis, was the youngest, about 6. Thus Edwin and Cora became parents all over again and started raising their second batch of youngsters. It was from after this time that Edwin King recalled many of the events previously related in this chapter.

In 1926 Edwin and Cora's son James, who was still living at home with his parents, was in a serious accident. He broke both an arm and a leg and suffered other injuries while helping to move a threshing machine from one farm to another during the harvesting season. The machine turned over on a steep hill while James was riding it and it rolled over James. The nearest doctor was in Mandan, nearly 60 miles away, and it took him a long time to reach the farm to treat Jim. Ed King recalls that he arrived in the middle of the night. Jim survived this accident but his arm was never fully straight and he walked with a slight limp after that.

In the early part of 1928 Edwin developed the lip cancer discussed above and spent some time in the cancer sanatorium to treat it, apparently coming home in March of 1928. Also in 1928 Forrest and Ellen lost their second child to an infant death. The dates of this child's birth and death are not precisely known.

And then on 2 October, 1928, another accident occurred. Edwin Everett was killed by his favorite team of horses. Ed King relates the event as follows. Edwin was driving a wagon home in the evening after a day of field work when the team was spooked, probably by an automobile passing down the road. Horses had not yet gotten used to these noisy machines and even Edwin's gentle team lost their composure when they encountered one. Ed recalls that he was bringing in the milk cows for the evening milking and had just corralled them when Grampa's team ran into the yard without the wagon or Grampa. Ed backtracked along the road till he found his grandfather. He was lying in the road dead. It is thought that when the team ran away, the wagon hit an obstruction that broke the wagon free from the harness. Edwin held onto the reins and was pulled forward out of the wagon, struck the ground, and let go of

the reins. The wagon rolled over him, a wheel striking him in the head and killing him instantly. Edwin recalls that the wagon, though heavily built, was in pieces all over the road with the farming tools and a lunch basket that was in the wagon.

Edwin Everett's funeral was held in the Scott home and he was buried in the Big Lake Church Cemetery in Sioux County, North Dakota, overlooking the Missouri River and next to his daughter Ruby who had been buried there in 1925. Photographs of part of the funeral exist, but none of the people participating can be identified by people now living. Cora does not appear in the pictures. Reverend Tibbits officiated at the ceremony.

The following newspaper accounts appeared in the Sioux County Pioneer on 4 October and 11 October, 1928 respectively.

KILLED IN RUNAWAY

E.E. SCOTT OF CANNON BALL THROWN FROM WAGON

About two o'clock Tuesday afternoon E. E. Scott, a prominent rancher of the vicinity of Cannon Ball was thrown from his wagon by a runaway team and instantly killed. He had been out in the field drilling that day and having completed his work, hitched on to his wagon and started back home. In some way, no one will ever know just how, the horses became frightened and ran away. The wagon was dragged over the deep cuts and cross roads at terrific speed, throwing him out.

Late that afternoon his little grandson found him lying, face downward, a deep wound across his forehead where the wagon wheel had passed, crushing the skull, quite dead. The little boy rolled his grandfather over until his face turned upward, then returned and reported the tragedy to his parents.

Mr. Scott was an old time resident of this county and leaves a large number of friends who are shocked to learn of his death. He was buried in the graveyard at Cannon Ball today.

Edwin Everett's obituary appeared the following week.

Edwin Everett Scott was born on October 28th, 1886 in northern Missouri. When but a small boy he with his parents moved to southern Iowa near Red Oak where he grew to manhood. Mr. Scott was one of a family of ten children.

In the year of 1893 he located near Clear Lake, Iowa at which place he was united in marriage with Miss Cora Turner. From this union there were born five children, Ruby Myrtle who died in 1925, Isia Fern who died in infancy, Forrest Theodore, Glenn Leroy, and James Alexander.

In 1907 he filed on a homestead near Hazelton, N.D. where he lived until 1910, when he moved to Dickinson, N.D. where he remained until 1918, when he moved to Cannon Ball where he lived up to the time of his death, October 2, 1928. At that time he was fifty-nine years eleven months and four days of age.

Beside immediate family left to mourn this great loss, he left two brothers and four sisters. Mr. Winfield Scott and Mrs. Jane Frame of Manchester, Tenn., Mrs. Anna Shelton of Austin, Colo., Mr. Barton Scott and Louie Findley of Villisca, Iowa, and Mrs. Isia Buchanan of Red Oak, Iowa.

Mr. Scott was a man who was highly esteemed in the community in which he lived. He always believed in and worked to improve conditions in his country and as a man and neighbor will be very much missed.

We wish to express our deepest thanks for the great assistance given us, and the sympathy extended to us by our many friends and our neighbors during our great bereavement. We wish to thank them for the many beautiful flowers. Mrs. Cora Scott, Mr. and Mrs. Forrest Scott, Mr. and Mrs. Glenn Scott and James A. Scott.

A visit to the Big Lake Church Cemetery in 1990 finds that this cemetery is apparently not being cared for, though it is still being used by the Indian community. Almost all the stones are marked with Indian names. Reverend Tibbits and his son, also a minister, are buried there, both being Indians. The cemetery is overgrown with weeds and there has been considerable vandalism with stones being overturned and broken. This is unfortunate. The site is high on a bluff overlooking the Missouri River giving a panoramic view of the river and the great vastness (and general emptiness) of the North Dakota plains. It is the sort of place that almost forces thoughts of the hardships, courage, strength and will of the pioneers like Edwin and Cora who originally settled this hard land and forced it to give them sustenance. However, continued deterioration of the site seems assured. It is inevitable that all monuments to all men erected to remember his being and his works will eventually be erased from earth. Only in God's Book of Life is the recording permanent.

Edwin's death left Cora with a farm, a school teaching position, three King children, and one 23 year old son to help out. From Cora's teaching records, it appears that she and Jim and the King children remained on the school property until at least May of 1930. The record shows that in the fall of that year, she began teaching in Fort Yates. Cora taught at two school in the Fort Yates area, her last year being completed in May of 1933 at the Primary Substation north of Fort Yates. Edwin King recalls that he went to his first year of high school in Fort Yates in the years 1930-31. During a visit to Fort Yates in 1990 Edwin King located the home in which Cora and her family lived during their stay there. Part of the original house is still being used and is constructed of logs with mortar between them, appearing much like the log homes of 50 to 100 years earlier.

Ed King recalls that in 1930 he and Jim and Cora made a trip to Iowa to visit with Edwin Everett's brother Henry Barton. He also remembers that they went further south since he recalls that he was too young to drive though he was doing so during parts of the trip. He recalls vividly that he was stopped by a traffic patrolman in St. Joseph, Missouri, who explained that he stopped all cars from North Dakota since he himself was from Williston and he wanted to talk to folks from back home! Though he can recall no other details of the trip, it appears that Cora was paying a visit to Turner relatives in or near Sabetha, Kansas, Sabetha being only a few miles west of St. Joseph. There is no other indication at this time that Cora had any relations with her family after her marriage to Edwin Everett in 1895.

Cora and Jim had moved to Fort Yates since Jim had bid on and won a contract to move mail between Cannon Ball and Fort Yates for the Postal Service. There would have been almost no time to care for the farm and there were no other men, other than the young King boys to run the place. With good steady income from Jim's postal route and Cora's teaching, a move to town and an easier life for all was no doubt attractive. Jim purchased a small truck for the mail route and together with Cora, they supported the King children for a time. Cora and Jim formed a mother and son team, depending on each other a great deal. They would in fact live with or near each other throughout all of Jim's life.

In 1931, the King children moved to Dickinson, North Dakota to live once more with their father. Cora and Jim stayed on in Fort Yates, continuing to haul mail and teach school. Then on September 8, 1933, the following headlines appeared in the Sioux County Pioneer-Arrow.

2 DIE, 2 ARE HURT CAR ACCIDENT VICTIMS
DAVID DUNN AND JOE BRAVE KILLED INSTANTLY;
JIM SCOTT IN HOSPITAL

With the startling suddenness of a war time tragedy this community was shocked Saturday night when the news of the smash-up on the Cannon Ball road spread through town and the agency. This wreck was the most damaging and distressful that ever happened here.

Snuffing out the lives of two popular young men and the probable maiming for life of another besides the wrecking of a Ford truck and the damaging of the coupe owned by Chas. Dunn, all happened in a moment.

The truck, owned and driven by Jas. Scott was coming down the highway behind the coupe driven by "Bud" Gipp. In the truck with Scott were Clayton McCormick and David Dunn while in the box behind the cab were Joseph Brave and Ambrose Dog Eagle. Moses Brave and Louis Gipp were also in the coupe.

When the truck attempted to pass the other car, it hit the left hind fender. The cars were coming down the long hill about two miles north of Battle Creek, and were traveling at a furious rate of speed. When the truck touched the coupe, the later shot off the highway and ran several hundred feet along the outside of the line posts until it stopped head on against a bank. The truck turned to the left and ran off the grade. It turned over several times and landed facing north. David Dunn, age 22 years, was killed instantly, his neck being broken. He was thrown from the cab and found hanging over a wire fence. Jos. Brave, age 20, lived a short time. His side was crushed and his arms and legs broken in several places, the truck having landed on him. Dog Eagle escaped with minor injuries, as did Clayton McCormick. Jim Scott suffered a fractured skull, a deep cut in the head, and was rushed to Mobridge Hospital. At this writing he has a chance of living but may lose the sight of one eye.

The bodies of the unfortunate boys were brought to the agency where a coroner's jury decided that death was due to an automobile accident. Most of the agency people were up all night tending all possible aid to the grief-stricken parents and relatives. The bodies were taken to their homes where they remained until Monday morning when a long procession of cars and men on horseback followed the truck bearing the dead to the Catholic Church. At the head of the procession Ted Luger rode leading David's favorite horse. Here services were held by Rev. Fr. Bernard and interment was made in a common grave in the cemetery. Pall bearers were young cowboy friends of the boys-young riders who had worked with Joseph and David in rodeos throughout this part of the country. All had been to a rodeo at Linton Saturday afternoon and were coming home when the accident happened. The funeral was largely attended, the procession extending from the cemetery to the church and from three to six persons walking abreast. The deep sympathy of the entire reservation country goes out to the stricken parents and their relatives.

Two weeks later, the following item appeared in the same paper.

Jas. Scott, who was seriously injured when his truck was wrecked north of town some time ago, was brought home last Sunday from the hospital at Mobridge. He must remain in bed for some time or until the skull fracture is completely healed. That he is recovering so well is indeed miraculous.

While Jim survived this disaster without serious physical effects, he did have a drooping left eyelid from then on and his head was noticeably scarred. Other effects were significant however. Jim lost his mail route along with the truck. His role in the accident was obviously of primary responsibility and there is every likelihood that all involved had been drinking heavily. At one time it was feared that he may be sent to jail for causing the death of the two Indians, and no doubt he had used up his welcome in the Indian community. This event no doubt precipitated Jim and Cora's departure from North Dakota, Cora did not return to teaching in the fall of 1933. It is not known for certain when they left, but Jim and Cora decided to head west.

Their tracks for the next few years are not very clear. Ed King recalls that they stopped in Dickinson for a farewell visit as they headed west to Spokane, Washington. They stayed in Washington for some period of time but subsequently moved to California. We don't know what Cora and Jim did in California or if they stayed in one place. The only known point we have during this period is provided by a letter which Cora received from the Los Angeles Museum. This letter is dated 14 March, 1938 and is addressed to Cora Scott, 3307 South Grand Ave., Los Angeles, Calif. The post mark is 21 March, 1938. However, the letter has been forwarded to Box B44, Beaverton, Oregon, & M. Ronen. It is apparent that Jim and Cora lived in Los Angeles for a time and that in early 1938, they moved to Oregon.

The letter from the museum is in appreciation for the gift of "a smooth bore, muzzle loading, percussion cap gun. Marked 'Danzig, 1838.' Ramrod missing." The full discription of the item obtained from the museum in 1992 reads as follows.

Smooth bore, muzzle loading, percussion cap gun. Marked Danzig 1838: Ramrod missing. German (converted flintlock) muzzle loading rifle, model 1838. Total length 52.5 inches, barrel 41.25 inches, calibre .75 inch bore. Crown, Danzig and date of 1838 are on lockplate: letters F.W.-D and Crown on left side of barrel. Trimmings are of brass and a crown and number 17 are on all of them. Bayonet stud underneath the muzzle. Ramrod missing, gun in need of repair.

The origin or significance of this gun is not known. From its size and bore, it must have been a heavy weapon to haul around. It is likely that the weapon had been in the family for some years and that Cora for some reason had decided to give it to the museum. Perhaps she did so because the gun had some significance to her, such as being carried in the Civil War by her father, or the gun belonged to her husband Edwin Everett. It might have also been a gun owned by the David R. Scott or John Turner family line for a long time, and was therefore not a saleable item.

Cora and Jim, from the addresses on the letter from the museum, apparently moved to Beaverton, Oregon in 1938 but in 1942, they were living in Gladstone, Oregon, a suburb of Portland. It was here that Jim married Sara Adeline Olsson in September of 1942.

Cora was living with Jim and "Sally" in Gladstone in 1943 when Cora's daughter-in-law, Mabel Claire (Sites) Scott arrived in Portland with her children. Cora's son and Mabel's husband Glenn was not with his family at that time, he was working in war related construction projects in Nebraska and Idaho, and he had essentially deserted his family. His fatherless family moved into a large housing project called Vanport that had been constructed to house the large influx of people who came to Portland to work in the shipyards and other war related industries there. It is recalled that Cora did not like Sally, referring to her as a bar room hussy. My own memory of Sally is that Gram's assessment was not far from the truth. Perhaps for that reason, along with the fact that Mabel would be working full time in the Willamette Iron and Steel Shipyard and needed help with her four children, ages 10 through 15, that Cora once again became involved in raising a family. She moved into Mabel's home as a full time family member.

Cora Alice (Turner) Scott was now 76 years old, and is remembered as being one tough old bird. In spite of her years she was physically strong and mentally quick and more than a match for four healthy youngsters. She was one tough cribbage player and hard to beat, as she was at other card and board games she played with us. She was strongly matriarchal as a natural result of her teaching background and life history. She was apparently used to being in control of her own life and the lives of others since Edwin Everett's death in 1928, and perhaps before. The ages of Mabel's children, and their family history being an experience of general tolerance by the mother and absence by the father, had generated an independence of action and thinking among them. The going was not all that easy for any of us.

I recall a confrontation over cooked carrots at the dinner table one evening when my mother was not at home. I did not like cooked carrots and refused to eat them, stating in no uncertain terms that this 13 year old wasn't going to eat that crap. Gram informed me in similar no uncertain terms, that "crap" was what went down the toilet. I asserted that was correct, and that was why I wasn't going to eat those carrots. I'm sure that no one had ever told her so clearly that her cooking was fit only for flushing. This sort of thing did not go down well with Gram, though as I recall, I didn't eat the carrots, but did get straightened out a bit by my mother after being informed of the incident. But Gram did gain a degree of control, and she earned our respect and love, if not our complete obedience. In retrospect it is also clear that she had a very positive influence on this group of grandchildren. Perhaps because of this success, or because of Gram's tendency to take charge, or maybe the fact that a mother-in-law in the house is a genetic cause of resentment, there was a somewhat strained relationship between Cora and her daughter-in-law. They were always civil to each other and handled the situation well, but the relationship was never too close.

Cora's son Glenn returned to his family in 1944 and he too went to work in the shipyard. Cora stayed with Glenn's family until after the war, and when her son Jim and Sally were divorced in 1946, she left Glenn's family and returned to live with Jim.

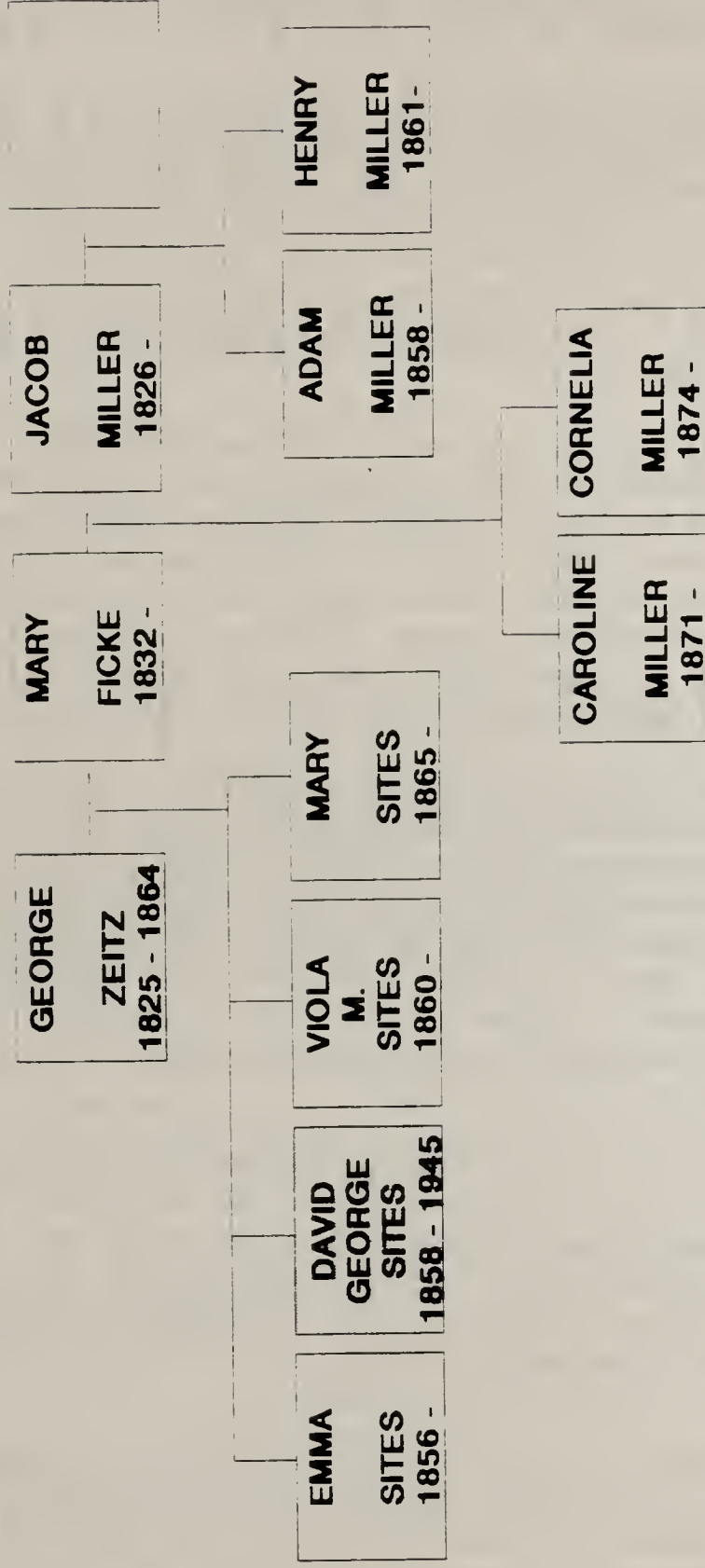
During these years of the middle and late 1940's, there were frequent gatherings of the relatives. It was inevitable that during these, one of the worst characteristics of Cora and her sons would surface. She and they loved to argue. All three were very competitive, sure of their ground, and too thin skinned. That Glenn and Jim both drank too much was also a contributing factor. To me it seemed that they found the argument to be the point, because I could never understand the importance of the points they argued. It would be worth a shouting match to decide whether or not the 4th of July, 1937 fell on a Tuesday or a Friday. To this day I cannot understand why they even cared about some of the things they warred about.

In 1952 Cora's son James Alexander died of advanced tuberculosis and cancer of the larynx. Cora buried him in the Rose City Cemetery in Portland in one of two lots which she purchased at the time. The second was no doubt intended to be her own. Her son Glenn, divorced from Mabel in 1950, lived with Cora and Jim for a while before Jim died. In December of 1952 Glenn entered a TB hospital in The Dalles, Oregon, and in 1955 he also died of that disease. Cora buried him in the second lot in the Rose City Cemetery.

From that time on, Cora lived by herself and took care of herself until she finally passed away at the age of 97 on 5 May, 1967. She had outlived all her children except Forrest who did not die until 1978. Cora's death came from a stroke after she had fallen and broken a hip. She fell while attempting to stand on a kitchen chair in her apartment to swat a cockroach on the ceiling with a newspaper. I doubt that anyone else of 97 years would have noticed or cared about a cockroach on the ceiling, let alone take aggressive steps to exterminate the distasteful bug. Like I said, she was a tough old bird.

Cora's daughter-in-law Mabel purchased a lot in the Columbia Pioneer Cemetery in Portland for Cora and she was buried there on 15 May, 1967. Mabel could not afford a permanent marker at the time, so the grave remained un-marked until 1985 at which time her grandson, Edwin Elmer Scott, located the grave and purchased a stone to mark the resting place of this remarkable woman.

FAMILY OF GEORGE ZEITZ (SITES)



GEORGE ZEITZ (SITES)

The Sites family became related to the Scott family through the marriages of three of David George Sites' children to two children of Washington Christopher Scott and one child of Edwin Everett Scott. These marriages took place in Hazelton and Bismarck, North Dakota in 1917 and 1924. The following is the history of the Sites family to the extent that it has currently been researched. It begins with George Zeitz in 1825 in Hanover, Germany.

It is not known who George Zeitz' parents were and the exact date of his birth is not known. His birth year of 1825 is derived from his Civil War enlistment record. This record states that he was thirty eight years and seven months old on January 20, 1864. He was therefore born in June of 1825. The 1860 Federal Census for Missouri provides conflicting data in that his age in that census is given as 25 making his birth year 1835. It is more likely that the census entry is in error than the enlistment record, and so the 1825 birth year is accepted. The 1860 census also tells us that George's wife was named Mary, that she was also born in Hanover, Germany, and that her age at the time of the census was 28. She was therefore born around 1832. Later discussed marriage records reveal that Mary's maiden name was Ficke.

It is not yet known when George Zeitz and Mary Ficke immigrated to the United States. It is fairly certain that they did not come to this country together, since their marriage took place in Cincinnati, Ohio on 24 September, 1854. This is documented, along with other pertinent data, in the National Archives records relating to pensions for their children as a result of George's death in the Civil War. The marriage took place in an un-named Lutheran Church in Storrs Township, Hamilton County, Ohio. This township is part of the city of Cincinnati. The wedding was performed by a C. H. Mann who was pastor of the church, but the name of the church was not recorded. The original record was written in German and translated to English by the Justice of the Peace indicating that the church served a predominantly German immigrant population in the area at that time.

The 1850 Federal Census for Hamilton County, Ohio contains a possible entry for George Zeitz. There is a George Zeitz listed as a laborer under the household of a brewer, who is listed there along with his family and what appears to be the working crew of the brewery. This record seems to be that of George Zeitz if a couple of assumptions are made. First, a brewery would require several skilled carpenters to make barrels and repair beer wagons, and George could have been apprenticed to the only carpenter listed. Later census and Civil War records reveal that George was a carpenter. Second, the age for George given in the census is off by a couple of years but census records are notorious for errors of this kind. If this record is indeed that of the George Zeitz of our lineage, then he would have come to the United States prior to 1850, though there is no indication as to how much before 1850 that might have been.

There are two immigration records for Maria Ficke which may be the immigration record of Mary (Ficke) Zeitz. The first is for a Maria Ficke, age 19, arriving in Baltimore in 1851. She is traveling alone but her destination is given as Baltimore. Her final destination could have been Ohio however, and the age is correct. She may have been coming to the United States to marry George Zeitz since he had known her or her family in Hanover and had sent for her when he was able to support a family, as would be the case if he was working in the brewery as a carpenter. However, an 1854 marriage date does not support this conjecture. If this is the immigration record for Mary Ficke, then she arrived on 20 September, 1851 on the Aeoluz out of Bremen.

The second possible immigration record is for a Maria Ficke arriving in New York from Bremen on 22 April, 1854. She is part of the Franz Ficke family and her age is given as 17. This age is off by a couple of years but the family is bound for Ohio, and so could have gone directly to Cincinnati and became part of the German community there and where she met and married George Zeitz some five months later. While neither record is conclusive, the later seems more likely than the former. However, neither could be correct. Further research may resolve these issues.

George and Mary stayed in Cincinnati for a time after they were married. In the above mentioned pension documentation, Mary gives the birth of their oldest surviving daughter Emma as being 6 September, 1856 and her birthplace as Cincinnati, Ohio. She gives the birthdate of 6 October, 1858 for their son David George and his birthplace as Knox County, Missouri. The Zeitz family therefore migrated to Knox County sometime between September of 1856 and October of 1858. No doubt cheap land was the primary motivation for their migration to Missouri.

The 1860 Missouri Federal Census is our next record of the Zeitz family, though the name is now spelled Sites. This spelling is no doubt an anglicized version of the original name. Affidavits in the pension records specifically note that the then known George Sites had originally spelled his name Zeitz. The spelling change apparently took place on the move to Missouri and was probably related to the fact that "Sites" with the "S" on both ends was easier to pronounce than "Zeitz" with the "Z" on either end. This is, of course, pure conjecture.

The 1860 Missouri census records the family as shown below. The listing is for Knox and Leclade Counties, Missouri with the post office being listed as Labelle, Benton Township.

NAME	AGE	SEX	PROFESSION	PLACE OF BIRTH
George Sites	25	M	Carpenter	Hanover, Germany
Mary Sites	28	F		Hanover, Germany
Emily Sites	3	F		Ohio
David Sites	1	M		Missouri

Their third surviving child, Viola M., was born on 2 December, 1860, and therefore not included in this census. In addition, from the 1870 census records, we find that George and Mary had another child, Mary. Mary was 5 in 1870 and was therefore born about 1865. George never knew this child, Civil War records show that he died in December of 1864. For some reason, Mary is not mentioned in the above referenced pension records. It is clear from the evidence that Mary was indeed George Sites' daughter. Her mother did not re-marry until 1869 and the child is identified as Mary Sites in the census records both in 1870 and 1880. In the latter, she is noted as being the step child of the head of the household. The reason for the omission of Mary's name from the pension records is not clear, perhaps there was a provision that only children living at the time of death of the soldier were eligible for pension benefits.

We know from later records that George Sites had acquired four parcels of land in Knox County by 1864. It is not known if he farmed any of these holdings. It is likely that he did, even though he is listed as a carpenter in the 1860 census. Most families grew a great deal of their own food in those days and George and Mary were probably no exception, especially since they did not live in a town.

The Civil War erupted in 1861 and Missouri was torn between the North and the South. The northeast portion of that state sided with the North and military units were formed from the men of that area. George Sites did not join the Army in the first enlistment, in general most units were formed in 1861 and the men volunteered for three years of duty. There was therefore a large turnover in the units in 1864 when the original enlistments expired and large numbers of replacements were required. George was one of the volunteers in this second group, enlisting as a Private in the 3rd Regiment of the Missouri Volunteer Cavalry on 20 January, 1864. He was assigned to Company B. He was 38 years and seven months of age. His enlistment papers describe him as being 5 feet, 10 1/2 inches tall, having light hair and a light complexion and grey eyes. He is noted as being a carpenter and he enlisted in Hannibal, Missouri.

The record of his unit is not yet available. However, George Sites died of typhoid fever while in the hospital at the Cavalry Depot, Department of Arkansas, Duvall's Bluff, Arkansas. The date of death was 6 December, 1864. Duvall's Bluff is not listed as a place name in a standard atlas of Arkansas. It is presumed that this was a field hospital and the cemetery in which he was buried is somewhat remote. There are no doubt records of this site however, and George was buried in grave 18 of that cemetery.

George Sites' estate inventory was filed on 31 August, 1865. He owned four parcels of land, three parcels of 60, 15, and 40 acres and a plot of five acres, \$45.00 worth of bricks, a cow and calf, and personal affects. A Public Administrator by the name of P. B. Linville was named administrator of the estate and all affairs were settled in November of 1867. It is presumed that Mary was the full beneficiary, though that is not stated anywhere in the records.

The following marriage record was filed in the Lewis County records on 25 November, 1869.

November 16th, 1869. "This is to certify that I have, on this day solemnized in the bonds of holy matrimony in the German Methodist Episcopal Church in Canton, Mo. Mr. Jacob Miller of Canton Mo. to Mrs. Mary Sites of Knox County..." The pastor was named Henry Voshall.

Jacob Miller was also a veteran of the Civil War but we presently know little else about him except as noted in subsequent census and other records. He is identified in the 1870 Lewis County census as being 44 years old, a farmer, was born in Prussia and therefore of German parents, and he could neither read nor write. He is obviously a widower. He has two sons, Adam, age 12 and Henry, age 9. Also present in the household are Mary, Mary's children, Emma, age 14, David, age 12, Viola, age 10, and Mary, age 5.

In 1876 Emma Sites, George and Mary's oldest daughter, married Sirean Suverly. They were married in La Grange, Missouri on 22 October. The Suverly family was apparently a close neighbor and well known to the Sites/Miller households. The elder Suverly was named John, his wife's name was Harriet. They both signed affidavits in the pension documents referenced above as having known the Sites family since their arrival in Missouri.

The Jacob Miller family is recorded in the 1880 Lewis County census. Jacob Miller is again identified as a farmer, place of birth is Bavaria, with both parents born in Bavaria. He is now 54. Mary is 48 and two new daughters are identified. They are Caroline, age 9 and Cornelia, age 6. David at age 21 is identified as a stepson and Mary at 15 is a stepdaughter. Emma is not listed since she has married Sirean Suverly in 1876. Viola is not listed. She would have been about 20 and could have either died or married. Henry Miller, Jacob's son by his first marriage, is listed at age 17 but his other son Adam is not listed. Since Adam would have been 22, he is probably married and has his own household. A new person is also introduced into the family group. Her name is Caroline, she is 83 years old, and identified as "mother" under the column titled "Relation to Head of Household". It is interesting that she was born in Hanover, as were her parents. The birthplace does not match the information given for Jacob, but it does match the information given for Mary Sites. Hanover is in the Lower Saxony district of Germany in the north part of the country. Bavaria is a southern district. It is therefore possible that Caroline was Mary's mother, and not Jacob's.

In 1889 Jacob Miller wrote his last will and testament. In it he leaves his estate to Mary Miller unless she predeces him in death, in which case he names: John Adam Miller, Henry Miller, Caroline Miller, and Cornelia Miller as his children to receive his estate. There are other provisions not of interest to this genealogy record, but it is interesting to note that none of Mary's children by her marriage to George Sites are mentioned. Jacob names Mary Miller, his wife, as executrix.

There is no 1890 Federal Census record since it was destroyed by fire. However, in 1890 the state of Missouri took a "State Census of Civil War Veterans and Widows" in which both Jacob Miller and Mary Sites appear. This census reveals that Jacob Miller served as a Private from August of 1861 to April of 1866, a period of 4 years and 9 months. He has incurred chronic diarrhea and asthma. There are no notations regarding Mary Miller, except that she is listed with the middle initial of "E". We have no other reference that might indicate what her middle name might have been.

In 1892 Jacob Miller modified his will slightly. On the 15th of May, 1895, the will was filed for probate. There is no mention of the date on which Jacob Miller died, but his death no doubt occurred in the Spring of 1895. The record shows that Mary Miller became executrix of the estate and that the final settlement did not come until May of 1898. This may or may not indicate that Mary Miller lived until after that time, though there is currently no known record of her death. She has not been located in the 1900 census.

The provisions of the will seem to indicate that the home farm become the property of the two daughters, Cornelia and Caroline. If that is what finally happened, then it is assumed that Mary Miller lived out her life there with the family of one or both of these daughters, and that she and Jacob are buried on or near that farm.

THE OSTRANDER FAMILY

The title of this chapter is somewhat misleading. The chapter deals with one part of our Dutch ethnicity, that derived from the marriage of Morris Barnes and Gertjen Charity Proper who became the grand mother of Cora Abigale Bates, who became the wife of David George Sites. The family line is not "straight", that is, it does not follow a single surname back to our eastern shores. The predominant family name along this path is Ostrander, and that name leads to original arrivals on our shores. It is for this reason that Ostrander was chosen as the title for this chapter.

In an attempt to assist the reader is visualizing the trace of our Dutch heritage back through ten generations, the author has used the Personal Ancestral File computer program developed by the Mormon church to generate "Pedigree" charts showing the ancestral lines under discussion. They appear on the following two pages. The first chart is focused on the author and displays the five generations preceding him. Cora Abigale Bates, the source of our Dutch heritage, appears in the lower left hand corner of the chart. The second chart is focused on Gertjen Charity Proper, one of Cora Abigale Bates' great grandmothers. Gertjen Charity Proper's husband was Morris Barnes, who was probably English and it was in this marriage that these Dutch and English lines were joined. If they did not join in this marriage, then certainly they were joined in the marriage of their daughter Elizabeth Barnes to Nehemiah Bates.

The information on the Dutch branch of our family tree is derived from non-original sources. That is, it is the product of other genealogy researcher's efforts. The sources are the Mormon Church's International Genealogical Index (IGI) and the individuals who provided that information to the Mormon Library. The primary contributor was Betty Vance of Longmont, Colorado. We have not examined the original documentation at this time, but the source has provided references which perhaps will be examined in our efforts in the future. There are three major sources referenced. They are:

- a. A book titled "Ostrander, 'From the East Bank'" by the Ostrander Family Association.
- b. The records of the Old Dutch Church, in Kingston, Ulster County, New York.
- c. An unidentified Ostrander Family Bible in the possession of Arthur Dale Ostrander of 1218 North J Street, Tacoma, Washington.

These references appear to be of sufficient quality and validity to accept the information derived from them and therefore to include this information in our own genealogical history as meeting our criteria for "preponderance of evidence". Each of the family lines on Gertjen Charity Proper's Pedigree chart is discussed as follows.

TRAPHAGEN. There is almost no amplifying information on Johannes Traphagen. He was born in about 1611 in Leunichor, France while his only known son, William Janszen Traphagen, was born in about 1637 in Lemgo, Luebeck, Germany. The noted birthplaces seem unlikely for a Dutch family but perhaps can be explained by Dutch history from the late 1500's through 1650. During this period the Dutch were engaged in gaining their freedom from the rule of Spain. Phillip II of Spain had inherited the Low Countries, (Netherlands) in 1555 and being strongly Catholic, oppressed the for the most part Protestant Netherlanders. The Dutch rebelled repeatedly, finally achieving independence from Spain in 1648. In the process of throwing off Spanish rule, the Dutch had become the world's leading sea power of the time. It was sea power that won their independence, while they were never overly successful in land warfare. It was during this unsettled period that Johannes and William Traphagen were born. The vagaries of war in and around their homeland could easily account for their births in nearby countries. It is also possible, likely probable, that different areas of the Lowlands of Northern Europe changed hands between France, Germany, and the Netherlands over these turbulent years, much as it did throughout the later history of northern Europe.

Chart no. 1

Phone:

Chart no. 1

Phone:

In 1602 the Dutch established the Dutch East India Company which established large colonial holdings in the Far East. In 1621 they established the Dutch West India Company to trade in the New World. In 1624 they colonized New Netherlands, which consisted of parts of present day New York, New Jersey, Connecticut, and Delaware. In 1624 they bought Manhattan Island from the Indians for about \$24.00 and named the city that was building on it, New Amsterdam, which later became New York City. The Dutch traders also founded trading posts at the present day sites of Albany, New York, Hartford, Connecticut and Trenton, New Jersey.

The Dutch governors assigned to administer their colonies in New Netherlands were harsh to their own people and hard to get along with for the Indians and other colonies. By the 1650's a fierce trading rivalry had developed with the English. In 1664 the English sent a fleet to take New Amsterdam, and most of the Dutch settlers refused to fight. Governor Peter Stuyvesant was forced to surrender and New Netherlands became an English colony. The city of New Amsterdam was re-named New York.

It is not known if Johannes Traphagen migrated to the New World, but it is certain that his son William did. He is recorded as having married Joostje Willems Nooltruyck in Kingston, Ulster County, New York on 6 February, 1661. Kingston is on the Hudson River about 75 miles up river from New York City. From this union was born at least one child, a daughter named Rebecca Traphagen. Her birth took place in Bushwick, Long Island, New York, a place not found on current AAA road atlases. Rebecca returned to Kingston at some point, however, since it was there that she married Pieter Ostrander Pieterzen on 16 January, 1679.

Kingston seems to be where most of our Dutch ancestors lived, and indeed, much of the information regarding them appears to come from the records of the "Old Dutch Church" located in that city.

PELS. The Pels family was also of Kingston, New York. All of the children of Evert Pels and his wife Jannetje Sijmens were christened there in the Old Dutch Church. It is not known when Evert and Jannetje were married or where, but Clara Pels, their first born, was christened in Kingston in 1651. Their second child, Maria, was christened there in 1655. Maria married Arie, or Ary Heymansse Roosa, probably in about 1775. This couple had nine children, all christened in the Old Dutch Church in Kingston. Their seventh born, Marytjen Roosa, was born around 1690 and christened on 8 September, 1706. There are differences in the dates reported by different sources as to Marytjen's birthday and christening dates. There is no disagreement, however, relating to who her parents were, or who she married. She wed Jacob Ostrander in the Old Dutch Church in Kingston on 11 November, 1726.

PIETERZEN/OSTRANDER. Pieter Pieterzen was born about 1624 in Amsterdam, Netherlands. His wife Tryntje was also born there in about 1628. We do not have a record of their wedding date but their first born son, also named Pieter Pieterzen, was born there in 1650. Their marriage therefore occurred prior to that date. Pieter and Tryntje had three children, all born in Amsterdam, Netherlands, the last birth being about 1656. A note provided with the Family Group Record on Pieter Pieterzen states that "Pieter Pieterzen was a Dutch Army Cadet, arrived in Kieuw Amsterdam with his wife Tryntje and children aboard the ship De Bonte Koe, in mid June 1660." "Kieuw" apparently means "new" in English. The English translation of the ship name "De Bonte Koe" is "The Spotted Cow". It is likely that Pieter was more senior than a "Cadet" in the Dutch Army on his arrival in the New World. He would have been about 36 years old and married with a family at that time, hardly the age to be starting an Army career. Whatever his rank, he was no doubt assigned to a billet in or around Kingston, New York.

It is very likely that the younger Pieter Pieterzen met Rebecca Traphagen (see TRAPHAGEN family above) in Kingston where she was born, and he probably married her there too, though there is no record that such was the case. Their children, of which they had thirteen, were all born and christened there in the Old Dutch Church. Many of these children were also married there. The youngest of their children was born in 1680, his name being given as Pieter Ostrander Pieterzen. Ostrander apparently means a person from the east or perhaps eastern side. There are several place names on current Netherlands maps that use variations on the "ost" word which probably means "east". This insertion was no doubt meant to distinguish this particular family from other Pieterzen families. Why it was chosen is obscure. Kingston lies on the west bank of the Hudson, so perhaps it had something to do with where the Pieterzen family originated in the Netherlands. Whatever the case, Ostrander was eventually adopted as the family surname. Thus the Pieterzen family of Netherlands became the Ostrander family of New York. The change occurred around 1700.

Jacob Ostrander Pieterzen, Pieter Ostrander Pieterzen's youngest child, was christened on 13 January, 1706 in the Old Dutch Church in Kingston. He was likely born in late 1705. On 11 November, 1726, Jacob Ostrander married Maritje Roosa (see PELS family above) in the Old Dutch Church in Kingston. From this union, 10 children were born, the first on 10 September, 1727. The ninth child of this union was named Mareitje or Maritje Ostrander. Again there are differences between sources as to dates, but again no differences as to parentage. Maritje Ostrander became the wife of Peter Proper.

PROPER. Maritje Ostrander is recorded in the Mormon IGI as to having married Peter Proper on 5 September, 1758. This marriage took place in Germantown, Columbia County, New York. Germantown is further up the Hudson River from Kingston about twenty miles, and is on the eastern side of the river. There is no information on where or when Peter Proper was born or anything about his family.

There were seven children born to Peter and Maritje beginning in 1760. Peter was also probably Dutch since all his children were given dutch names. However, he and his family did not stay in Columbia County. The third, fourth and fifth children were born in Rensselaer Co, further up the river on the east bank. The sixth and seventh children were born in Dutchess County, New York. The last of these was Gertjen Charity Proper who was born in 1786 in Rhinebeck Flats, Dutchess County. The present town of Rhinebeck lies across the Hudson River from Kingston. Dutchess County lies between the Hudson River and the state of Connecticut.

Gertjen Charity Proper was the last of this line of our Dutch ancestors. She married Morris Barnes, no doubt an Englishman, in about the year 1805 since their first child was born in June of 1806. The place of their marriage is not known. The children of this marriage were given English names, Elizabeth, James, Maria and Stephan among them. All of them were born in Clinton Township of Dutchess County, New York, the last being born there in 1818. Elizabeth Barnes married Nehemiah Bates.

The question of our Dutch ancestor's participation in the Revolutionary War has not yet been researched, but such a search will no doubt be in vain. Peter Proper is the only male of this line whose age is even possible, he being estimated to be 35 years old or older at the beginning of the War, assuming he was at least 20 when he married in 1758. The current assumption is, therefore, that no member of this family line served in the Revolutionary War.

THE BATES FAMILY

The story of the arrival of our English ancestors on the shores of Massachusetts Bay in 1630 is considerably different from what I would have thought it to be, given what I had learned of early American History in standard school textbooks. In 1620, the Puritans had landed at Plymouth Rock in their pointed hats and buckle shoes, having been chased from the shores of England because of their religious beliefs. The Indians taught them how to plant corn, they shot turkeys, had a big Thanksgiving dinner with the Indians, and everyone lived happily in a free land ever after. While there are elements of truth in all of that, it is hardly an accurate picture of what really generated the migration of many Englishmen to the New World, nor what happened later. Puritanism was certainly part of it, but hardly the driving force. Many of those who came were not Puritans but were, like the Dutch, bent on profit. What follows is a different, and I think more accurate view of our early English history.

Puritanism did play a role in the early English settlements in America, but it needs to be explained in the context of what was occurring in England in the early 1600's regarding religion. The Reformation had occurred and the English were in the process of throwing off the church of Rome. Sometimes. Queen Mary was Catholic and Queen Elizabeth was Protestant and they delighted in killing off each other's heretics. There was, through it all, an established State Church, its nature being dictated by the "Monarch of the Hour" so to speak. In the end, the Church evolved to the Church of England or the Anglican Church, but in-so-far as the Church structure and the people in it were concerned, not much changed. It was still a government controlled and directed Church of the State, and it retained the trappings of Bishops, Archbishops, Ecclesiastics etc. of the Roman Church which it replaced. Bureaucracies were hard to kill even in those days. The name had changed but not much else. However, Martin Luther and the new printing process had made the Bible readable by the common man, and though he may have got a lot of it wrong on occasion, he did figure out that the "Church" had been less than straight with him over the years. As a result there were all sorts of "radical" ideas to challenge the status quo.

The Puritan was an English Protestant who believed primarily in a simple religion, a simple manner of life and a simple church organization. They wanted to be done with the elaborate church hierarchies, vestments and ceremonies, some even to the point of doing away with statues, stained glass windows in churches, and even religious music. They held that all clergymen were of equal rank, and there should be no control over a congregational pastor by a bishop or other church official. Not all Puritans were agreed on the degree of simplicity desired or required, and therefore were prone to disagreement among themselves. That fact notwithstanding, their ideas were very displeasing to the Church of England, and to the Monarchy itself, since they had challenged the church and therefore the government's legitimacy, if not in secular law, at least in religious affairs. The real drivers of these ideas were the educated low level clergy, and it was they, not their followers, who were harassed and persecuted by both the church and secular authorities. They were the educated rabble rousers of the day, establishing clandestine congregations etc., and while many of the emigrants to the New World came from this generally discontented group, it was not religious unrest that led them from their ancestral homes. Religion certainly motivated some, but there were other powerful economic and social forces operating.

The majority of the English people were of the yeoman class. For generations they were the tenants of the nobility and landed gentry. They lived to support indefinitely the upper classes of the social structure set over them by the English Monarchy. They lived in social and economic, if not legal slavery, whereby landlords drained the earnings of their tenants, whose lives were spent in working for their masters and who died as poor as they began. Only in rare instances could a tenant become a free man and hope to gain monetary and social freedom. And, in the early 1600's, there sat on the throne Charles the First, who had extreme views of the "Royal Prerogative". He was of the opinion that he owned all of England and could do with it as he pleased. He was extravagant in the spending of his subjects' money, which he took with ever increasing taxes. Even the landed gentry who didn't normally pay taxes but collected them from the tenants, began to feel the pinch.

The Yeoman began to hear of a great continent across the Atlantic where 100 acres would be given to every settler, a King's ransom, meaning wealth almost beyond their comprehension. They would still be under the English rule, but it was an incredible opportunity for those who had the courage to cross an uncharted ocean, face a savage race of Indians, and deal with wild beasts and trackless forests. It was part of the local clergy that told the Yeoman all

this. They encouraged the hope of greater opportunity in a new land, primarily so they could carry on their independent ideas of religion beyond the reach of Bishop and King. They thereby brought on themselves the disciplinary machinery of the Church. One such clergyman was Reverend John White, of Dorsetshire.

Reverend White was involved with every English attempt to place settlers in the New World from 1623 until he helped organize his last great venture in 1629, the Massachusetts Bay Company. He enlisted scores of prominent men as stockholders including Knights and Earls. Late in joining the company was John Winthrop, the Squire of Groton Manor, who had lost favor with King Charles and was persuaded to take leadership of the Company in the summer of 1629. His decision was based purely on material rather than spiritual grounds. His writings clearly show that it was his balance sheet that led him to flee from England to the New World. John Winthrop however, proved to be the organizer and leader capable of making the project a success. His name has become attached to the fleet which was the first fruit of the Massachusetts Bay Company that resulted in Puritan settlement in New England, the Winthrop Fleet of 1630.

John Winthrop was chosen Governor of the Company on 15 October, 1629. It is not clear how the venture was advertised and settlers were recruited, probably by word of mouth. Sixteen different counties of England were home to the known people who made the voyage, and if all could be traced, there would no doubt have been more counties represented. The promoters had more volunteers than they had places for, and they were thereby able to select from them the artisans and skilled people necessary to make the new colony self sufficient. They totaled about 700 souls: men, women and children.

The ships numbered eleven, all being ordinary freighters of the period. All except one was chartered. One was purchased outright for use in the venture with the view of selling it later to recover the cost. There were no passenger ships designed as such available, since there had not been prior to this time the need for sea transport of a large number of people. Even though one of the ships was the Mayflower which landed at Plymouth Rock 10 years earlier, it had not been converted to carry passengers. Some rudimentary modifications were made to accommodate some of the needs of the women on board, but in general, most of the passengers made the trip in the cargo holds of these vessels. It is estimated that the crews that sailed the ships numbered no more than 400, so there was an average of 100 people per ship. However, some ships carried only live stock or dry goods, and only seven carried passengers. The physical size of these ships was almost unbelievably small. While the dimensions of each are not known precisely, it is calculated that the whole fleet could be floated in a body of water the size of a football field! It is hard to imagine crowding that many people along with several hundred head of livestock, into such a small space for as long as was contemplated, and then set sail into the North Atlantic Ocean with its known violent nature. The trip was expected to take anywhere from six to twelve weeks!

The uncertainty of the length of the voyage had to do with the uncertainty of favorable winds and weather since the ships were powered by sails alone. Another interesting aspect of sailing the great oceans in those days was that there were only the most rudimentary of navigational tools. They had magnetic compasses but essentially no maps. They really didn't know how far it was across the Atlantic. They could only measure Latitude, not Longitude. A North Latitude could be measured at night by measuring the angle between the North Star and the horizon. This angle is precisely the Latitude. In the day the angle of the sun above the horizon and a simple computation would also give your Latitude, if you knew what day it was. Longitude was a different matter. Longitude can only be measured if you know the precise time in relation to a fixed reference. We now use a fixed reference called Greenwich Mean Time, the time kept at the British Naval Observatory in Greenwich, England. In 1630 there were no clocks precise enough, or rugged enough to go to sea, and maintain an accurate time for very long. Distance traveled East and West was therefore guessed at or "Dead Reckoned". It is surprising then, that a ship captain with no map, no control over the power of his ship, and no way to tell where he was at any particular time, would estimate the length of the trip at all!

The trip, being a money making proposition, was not free. The price was five pounds per adult with children going at a reduced rate. In addition, household goods and other freight was priced at four pounds per ton. This was no small item, on the shores of New England they would have only what they brought with them. There were four classes of passengers. 1) those that paid their full cost. 2) those with critical skills who were paid for them in some form, cash or grants of land. 3) those who paid a part of their fare and had agreed to labor at the rate of 3

shillings a day on arrival to pay off the rest. 4) indentured servants whose fare was paid by their masters who were to receive 50 acres of land for each servant transported. If one thinks through this idea of indentured servants and the social conditions of the English Monarchy discussed above, it is not difficult to arrive at the conclusion that the institution of slavery as we later knew it in America, is a part of our English heritage.

The Fleet began to assemble at Southampton, Winthrop arriving there on the 10th of March. He supervised the loading of the ships as they arrived and opened his Journal to record the trip on the 30th of March. On 6 April, the four lead ships moved to the West end of the Isle of Wight and lay there at anchor waiting for the other seven still loading at Southampton. On the 8th of April, 1630, the four vessels Arbella, Ambrose, Jewel, and Talbot weighed anchor and departed, the others actually leaving two or three weeks later. These were the Charles, Mayflower, William and Francis, Hopewell, Whale, Success, and Trial.

Winthrop's journal records some of the details of the trip, and it could not have been too pleasant a one, even for those having the best of accommodations. There was considerable seasickness in the early going and there were several bad storms. Nearing the New England coast they ran into a very bad storm and of the 240 cows and 60 horses on the ships, they had to destroy 70 cows which were injured on the tossing ships. Winthrop does not record the deaths in the human cargo, but of the seven hundred passengers embarking according to Winthrop's records, 200 died in route or shortly after arrival. They fared somewhat better than the Pilgrims of Plymouth, fully half of that company died in the first year.

The cause of the high casualty rate was scurvy, a disease caused by lack of vitamin C in the diet. Its effects would appear about six weeks after no vitamin C was eaten. In 1630 this was not known, so the shipboard diet was designed not on nutritional requirements but on what foods could be easily preserved. None of the usual stores contained fresh fruits or vegetables, though later it was discovered that citrus fruit would prevent the disease and oranges and lemons became standard shipboard fare. Water was also a problem. The ships actually carried more beer than water, the alcohol in the beer preventing the growth of bacteria which fouled it as happened with stored fresh water. Beer also had some of the necessary vitamin C, though that was not known either. The colony continued to suffer the effects of scurvy until the following Spring when a ship arrived with a store of lemons.

The ships arrived at Salem where a previous settlement had been established in 1628. The Arbella landed on June 12, the Jewel and Ambrose, June 18, Mayflower and Whale on the 1st of July, Talbot on July 2nd, William and Francis and Hopewell arrived on the 3rd, Trial and Charles on the 5th and Success on the 6th. Salem is a small harbor on Massachusetts Bay a few miles north of present day Boston. There is a list of the passengers that were known to arrive on the Arbella but no other passenger list survives. It is known from other evidence however, that there were at least two men on these ships whose blood we share, Robert Bates and Richard Ambler. A third, William Cross, may also have been in their company. A fourth, George Slauson, was less likely of the original group, but arrived in that area not too much later if not in 1630. Descendents of the later three named men married into the Bates family line. Indeed, Robert Bates would later lose his wife and subsequently marry the widow of William Cross.

The early arriving settlers were not happy with Salem, and sought a better location. On the 17th of June they moved to the Boston Harbor area on the Charleston Peninsula where 12 men had settled in 1629. Many, under the leadership of Sir Richard Saltonstall, then moved from there about four miles up the Charles River to a place they named Watertown. It was here that they planted their first crops and set up their town. They were in place by 30 July when they established their church.

Watertown became the most populous town of the Massachusetts Bay Company settlements, and soon became too full to support the settlers who had originally come and those that followed. As a result, Watertown became the source of new settlements all along the Massachusetts and Connecticut coast. One of these settlements was Wethersfield, now a suburb of Hartford Connecticut. From this town other settlements were born, one of them being Stamford Connecticut. That was the path followed by Robert Bates.

The Bates family line which delineates much of our English heritage is shown on the chart on the following page. Each generation is discussed to the detail that is currently known.

BATES

ROBERT BATES - SUSANNAH SMITH
- 1675

JOHN BATES (1) - SARAH CROSS
1641-1711 - 1712

JOHN BATES (2) - MARY SMITH
-1726

NEHEMIAH BATES - SUSANNAH SLASON
1704 - 1708 - 1750

NEHEMIAH BATES JR. - ELIZABETH SCOFIELD
1735 -

JACOB BATES - ABIGAIL SMITH
1773 - 1850 - 1860

NEHEMIAH BATES - ELIZABETH BARNES
1803 - 1806 -

ANSON R. BATES - ELIZABETH ALLEN
1846 - 1850 -

CORA ABIGALE BATES - DAVID GEORGE SITES
1873 - 1948 1858 - 1945

ROBERT BATES. Much of our English blood stems from the Bates family line whose American primogenitor was Robert Bates. His arrival in America was the earliest known of our ancestors. He was a member of the Winthrop Fleet of 1630, though it is not known on which ship he made the journey. It is likely that he was one of the skilled artisans, though his trade is not known. It may also be that he brought indentured servants with him, since he acquired more land than the 100 acres allotted to each settler. He certainly was not of the nobility. Since his name does not appear on any of the original documents that established Churches in towns where he is known to have lived, he likely was not a Puritan.

One reference declares that Robert Bates came from England with one of Sir Richard Saltonstall's colonies in 1630, where he settled in Watertown, Massachusetts. The reference is one of many which we have on the Bates family, especially in the early years of the Colony. The most complete is a book titled "Bates, Selleck, and allied Families of Stamford, Connecticut" by Henry S. Gorham, 1938. This book carries the Bates family line from its 1630 beginning in Watertown, Massachusetts through seven generations, leading to Nehemiah Bates' arrival in Missouri in about 1850. This book was discovered after considerable original research on the Bates family line and has been found to be very accurate in all areas where other documentation has been found. Other sources confirming the Bates genealogy are:

- a. The Fairfield County, Connecticut Probate Records, several volumes.
- b. The Stamford Registration of Births, Marriages and Deaths, which includes information from the first records of the town from 1641 to 1825.
- c. A History and Genealogy of the Families of Old Fairfield.
- d. The Lineage Book of the Daughters of the American Colonists.
- e. A book titled the Genealogy of the Puritans.
- f. Federal Census data, 1790 through 1880.
- g. A book titled History of Stamford, 1992.
- h. Records of the First Congregational Church of Stamford.

Collectively, these references establish beyond any reasonable doubt the validity of our English Heritage as brought to us through the Bates family line.

As noted above, Robert Bates and his fellow settlers were not an homogenous group. There were different ideas relating to religious practice among the several groups, and they were no more compatible in the New World than they were in England. As the old saying goes, "Where ever you go, there you are". The English brought with them their religious intolerance, in spite of the fact that many had left England to avoid that very thing. Amazing as it might seem today, still in 1777, all of the then established States in the new world, except Pennsylvania and Rhode Island, forced their citizens, regardless of their beliefs, to support an official church. Thomas Jefferson declared that "to compel a man to furnish contributions of money for the propagation of opinions which he disbelieves and abhors is sinful and tyrannical". It was not until the Bill of Rights was signed that Church and State would be separate in America. We have Jefferson to thank for that principal of freedom.

In 1630 in America, unlike in England, there was room to maneuver so to speak. If you didn't fit in, you could relocate to new areas with others of your particular persuasion. If there was better opportunity or land somewhere, you could move to it. And the new arrivals did so, frequently. Robert Bates moved on to Wethersfield, Connecticut in 1636. This might have been a move based on religious differences, but it was more likely due to the overcrowding of Watertown.

Wethersfield is located on the Connecticut River a few miles down river from Hartford, and is now a suburb of that city. Robert Bates became the owner of 182 acres of land in that area, a no doubt amazing circumstance for a six years removed English Commoner. However, according to the book "History of Stamford", he became involved in a dispute over an unknown issue relating to the church. The dispute could not be resolved. There was apparently quite a significant problem that defied solution by outside mediators or by the congregation itself. It was therefore decided that the congregation would split. The Hartford Colony had purchased a tract of land which now comprises the southwest corner of Connecticut, lying on Long Island Sound west of Norwalk. On present maps it is easily recognized as that toe of Connecticut projecting into the state of New York just east of present day New

York City. This tract of land was offered up as a location for the group that had agreed to leave Wethersfield. In the summer of 1641, 28 men and their families established a new town, Stamford, in that area. Robert Bates sold his 182 acres in Wethersfield on 4 May, 1641 and became one of the original settlers of Stamford, finally finding a place of his liking among men of his political and religious persuasion.

In the "History of Stamford" there are several references to Robert Bates. In the settlement of the cost of the land in Stamford to the Hartford Colony, the settlers were assessed a total of 100 bushels of corn. The assessment was divided among the settlers with Robert Bates' share being 3.1 bushels. There is also a record as to how much land each of the settlers received as his to farm. Robert Bates was allotted a full 10 acres in addition to the lot in the town site on which to build his home. This was considerably less than the 182 acres he had owned in Wethersfield, but these were not the limits of his eventual holdings in Stamford.

Robert Bates married three times. The name of his first wife was probably Susanna Smith according to one reference. There is no information as to where or when this marriage occurred, but the years of birth of their children suggest that it was after Robert Bates came to Wethersfield. His two known children were of this marriage. One was a son who was named John. He was born in 1641 and therefore either in Wethersfield or Stamford since Robert Bates moved from Wethersfield to Stamford in the summer of that year. The other was a daughter named Mary. The year or location of her birth is not known, so neither is it known if she was older or younger than John.

On 26 June, 1657 Robert Bates married a second time. This marriage was to Margaret Cross who was the widow of William Cross. William Cross was also an early arrival in the New World. He fought in the Pequot Indian War in 1637 against the Mohicans of John Fennimore Cooper's book "Last of the Mohicans". William and Margaret had six children, one of whom was Sarah. Sarah and John Bates, who were therefore step brother and sister, later married.

Robert Bates married a third time, year not known, to Susanna Hoyt. Susanna Hoyt's husband died in Stamford in 1657, the year that Robert Bates had married Margaret Cross. Susanna's will was probated in 1673/4. Robert had therefore lost a wife, remarried, and lost a wife again between 1657 and 1673. He himself passed away on 11 January, 1675, his death "occurring in the night." His age at death nor his year of birth is known. His will, probated 1 November, 1675, names son John, daughter Mary, grand son John, and son-in-law John Cross. In the "History of Stamford" it is also noted that "He bequeathed certain Negroes, who are to be made free at 40 years of age." Robert Bates was therefore a slave owner. This is not the only reference to slavery noted in the Bates genealogy. To find slavery being practiced by the Bates family is somewhat surprising since this practice is not usually thought of in connection with Puritans of New England.

It is interesting to speculate on Robert Bates' ownership of Negro slaves. As previously noted, he may have had indentured servants when he first came to America, and they, having worked out their indenture, were no longer in his service. He therefore needed replacements and the slave trade between Africa and the English colonies no doubt provided them. It is not known what that service might have been. His will is not quoted in the references, only that there was a list of lands that he owned when he died. It is clear from land records and wills of his descendants that this list was likely extensive. The land holdings, and the fact that he owned slaves, indicates that Robert Bates was a man of means at his death. The slaves therefore could have been for farming, domestic work, or laborers in a saw mill the family is known to have owned. Slave ownership no doubt persisted in this family for a long time. Evidence will be cited later showing that members of the Bates family still owned slaves as late as 1800.

THE WILLIAM CROSS FAMILY. As noted above, Robert Bates married a second time to the widow of William Cross. William Cross may have been one of the settlers arriving with the Winthrop Fleet of 1630. If he did not, then he arrived not long afterward. He is known to have fought in the Pequot Indian War of 1637, and he is known to have been a early settler in the town of Windsor, which lies a few miles north of Hartford on the Connecticut River. In 1644 he moved to Wethersfield just south of Hartford where he became a land owner. He finally moved to Fairfield, a small town on the coast some 20 miles or so east of Stamford. There is some indication that he was a sea-faring man. It was in Fairfield that he died in 1655.

William Cross and Margaret had six children, Nathaniel, Samuel, John, Sarah, Hannah, and Mary. Two years after William Cross died, Margaret married Robert Bates as noted above. There were no children of this marriage. William and Margaret Cross' daughter Sarah married John Bates, son of Robert Bates.

JOHN BATES SR. as noted above, was born in about 1641, probably in Stamford, Connecticut. He married Sarah Cross, who was his step sister by virtue of his father's marriage to the widow Margaret Cross, mother of Sarah. The date of this marriage is not known. They had three children, John Jr., Jonathan, and Samuel. The dates of birth of these three children are not known.

The book "Bates, Selleck, and Allied Families of Stamford" notes that John Bates was an "Ensign of Militia in the Stamford Trainband" in the year 1685. It is not clear what a "Trainband" was but the necessity of maintaining military preparedness to deal with Indians was a constant requirement in the early days of the colony. This book further notes that John Bates was a "Deputy to General Court in 1689/90". What these duties might have been, civil or military, and their nature is not clear. His wife Sarah also is foot noted. She is noted as being a "useful and skillful midwife" and also "Gave her testimony as midwife in October of 1692 in the Clawson Witchcraft Trial."

Witchcraft trials are an interesting foot note in early American history. The problem of witchcraft in the early days of Massachusetts and Connecticut is well documented in the infamous Salem Witchcraft trials which occurred some 20 years later. The essentials of this particular trial are found in "The History and Genealogy of the Families of Old Fairfield" and is quoted as follows:

"On 28 May, 1692, complaint was made by Sargent Daniel Westcott that Mrs. Samual Clawson had bewitched his servant girl, and a bill was found against her by the Grand Jury. The water test was applied, and it was found that she swam like a cork when put in water bound hand and foot. A lot of stupid and ridiculous testimony was taken, but there was also testimony in her favor given by some of her neighbors, and the Petit Jury returned a verdict of not guilty." Let us hope that the testimony given by Sarah Bates was for the defense!

There are many entries in the land records regarding the disposition of land held by John Bates Sr. Collectively they indicate that he was a man of no small means since several houses and land parcels of five and ten acres are mentioned as well as a saw mill. John Bates Sr. died sometime before 1713 as surmised from a land entry transferring land of John Bates Sr., deceased, between sons John Bates Jr. and Samuel Bates. Sarah also died about this time, her death being reported as occurring in 1711/12.

JOHN BATES JR. was the oldest son of John Bates Sr. and Sarah Cross. There is no reference to his date of birth but it was in Stamford, Connecticut. John Bates Jr., like his father, married three times. The first occurred on 18 January, 1693 in Stamford to Elizabeth Lockwood. Elizabeth bore John four children whom they named John, Nathaniel, Elizabeth, and David. The birth of their fourth child David is recorded as 23 May, 1702, which coincides with Sarah's death. She therefore probably died in childbirth.

On 28 December, 1702 John Bates Jr. remarried. His second wife was named Sarah Smith, and together they had six additional children. They were named Nehemiah, Hannah, Sarah, Mary, Daniel, and Ruth. All were born in Stamford. Sarah lived until 20 February, 1726 when she died, also at Stamford. John Bates Jr.'s third wife was named Hannah Mead, whom he married on 15 January, 1727. There were no children from this marriage.

John Bates Jr. carried the rank of Lieutenant in the West Company of Stamford in 1716, but there is no information as to how long he served in what was apparently the local militia. He was also a man of means if his land transactions were any indication of his wealth. He is recorded as giving land to almost all his sons at one time or another, is termed a "planter" in one transaction, and gave his home in Stamford to his son by his second wife, Nehemiah. It is not clear when John Bates Jr. died but it was before 4 Aug 1752 when his will was probated. He had written the will in 1745 and there is also a record of a land transaction in 1748. He likely died shortly before the will was probated. When his third wife Hannah died is not recorded.

NEHEMIAH BATES was the first born of John Bates Jr.'s marriage to Sarah Smith. He was born on 29 March, 1704 in Stamford, Connecticut and died there in May of 1776. Nehemiah married Susannah Slason on 27 November, 1734 in Stamford. Susannah was the daughter of James and Mehetable Slauson. Her genealogy is extensive, and will be discussed at this time before returning to the Bates family line.

THE GENEALOGY OF SUSANNAH SLASON

Part of the genealogy of Susannah Slason has been taken from the Mormon Church Ancestral File computer program. A submission to that data base by Mr. Christopher Clark of Santa Barbara California was discovered while researching the Bates family line. Mr. Clark's submission, which apparently deals with the Slason family, takes branches of that family back to the year 1260 in England. Mr. Clark had not responded to attempts to communicate with him to determine his sources. Some of his efforts are presented here on the following page and later in the Mormon Church Pedigree Chart format. We have independently traced these family lines back to their arrival on American shores. The American primogenitors of those lines, like Robert Bates, arrived very early in our history and were his contemporaries. However, verification of the presented ancestral lines in England has only been done in the case of the Belden family. The research of our European heritage will be left for later efforts. The Pedigree Chart on the following page is focused on Susannah Slason and indicates four major family lines; Slason, Belden, Ambler and Bates. Each will be discussed in turn.

AMBLER Susannah Slason, was the daughter of Mehetable Ambler and James Slauson. According to Mr. Clark, the Ambler line begins with Thomas Ambler, born in about 1560 in Lindsey, Yorkshire, England. He had a son named Richard and also a grandson named Richard. The second Richard Ambler is thought to have been a passenger with the Winthrop Fleet of 1630. If he was not, then he arrived very shortly after that. In any case, he is known to have lived in Watertown, Massachusetts in 1637. One reference has him living in Cambridge, Massachusetts, a present suburb of Boston, while a second places him in Boston proper in 1643.

Richard Ambler's wife's name was Sarah, maiden name unknown but known to have been born in England in about 1612. It is not known if Sarah came to America with Richard but it is thought not since their first known child was born in December of 1639 in Watertown. Their second child named Abraham died at birth, and so they named their third child Abraham also. He was born on 22 September, 1642, also in Watertown. In 1650 Richard bought land in Stamford, Connecticut and lived out the remainder of his life there. It is not known when he died, but he was still living in 1699. He therefore lived to at least the age of 88.

Sarah and Richard Ambler's son Abraham was born in Watertown on 22 September, 1642. Abraham apparently became a prominent man in Stamford, being elected to the Connecticut Legislature as a Deputy in 1674, 1677, 1678, 1679, 1681, 1682, 1690, 1691, and 1692. He was a Justice (believed to mean Judge) in 1699, the year of his death. On Christmas Day, 1662, Abraham married Mary Bates, daughter of Robert Bates and sister of John Bates of our Bates family line. They had at least six children, all born in Stamford. The last of these was Mehetable, born around 1674, who became the wife of James Slason. Their daughter Susannah was therefore the great grand daughter of Robert Bates, who was the great grandfather of Nehemiah Bates. Susannah Slauson and Nehemiah Bates were therefore second cousins when they married.

SLASON. Mr. Clark has traced the Slason line back to Richard Slawson, born in 1585 in Southwark, Surry, England. The name Slason has many variations in its spelling including Slason, Slauson, Slawson, and Slossen. Richard Slawson's wife was named Anne Angell, also of Southwark, Surry, England, born in 1589. Their son George Slauson, was born in about 1615 in Southwark. George Slauson arrived in the New World some time between 1630 and 1637. At the later date he is found in Lynn, Massachusetts, located about half way between Boston and Salem on Massachusetts Bay. He later went to Sandwich, a small community on Cape Cod near the mainland, but soon moved to Stamford, Connecticut. He is listed as being one of the very early settlers in Stamford, arriving there in 1642. A Thomas Slawson, who may have been his brother, also arrived there in 1642. George Slauson probably married his first wife, name unknown, in the New World, since his first son, John, was born in about 1641 in Sandwich, Barnstable

County, Massachusetts. Eleazer was the second son, born in Stamford Connecticut in 1642, as was his younger sister, Hannah, born in 1644. George Slason was apparently a prominent man in Stamford. He served as Magistrate in 1657 and 1659. He also served as Deputy to the Legislature in 1663.

Every genealogist hopes, (or perhaps fears) to find an ax murderer in his past. The closest we have come relates to John Slason, oldest son of George. John married a woman by the name of Sarah Tuttle in New Haven, Connecticut in 1663. Sarah was killed in 1667 with an ax by her brother, Benjamin Tuttle who, "though probably insane, was executed for it anyway, 13 June year following." Perhaps a more directly related case will turn up in future research.

George Slason's first wife died in her later years since George married a second time in 1680. He married the widow of Joshua Jennings, Mary (Williams) Jennings. This marriage lasted until George's death on 17 February, 1694.

Eleazer Slason, son of George, was born in about 1642 in Stamford. He married twice, first to Mary Chapman in 1672. They had two children, Eleazer Jr. and Martha. Mary must have died not too long after Martha's birth since Eleazer married a second time to Susannah Belding in 1680. Eleazer and Susannah's children were James, Susanna, Ebenezer and Nathaniel.

Eleazer Slason also testified in the Clawson Witchcraft Trial. He testified in favor of the accused Elizabeth Clawson, "that he had lived her near neighbor for many years, and always observed her to be a woman for peace, and without malice." It was probably testimony of this kind that saved the unfortunate woman.

Eleazer died in 1698. In his will it is noted that among his assets were 20 barrels of cider, which along with most of his other goods, he left to his son James. It was James Slason who married Mehetable Ambler at Stamford, Connecticut on 3 December, 1702. Their daughter was Susannah H. Slason, the focus of the Pedigree Chart.

BELDING/BELDEN/BAILDON The record of this family name begins with Hugh de Baildon in 1195, though our primary reference for the early history of this family, "Ancestors and Descendents of Richard Belding of Wethersfield, Connecticut", as compiled by Frances Belden Backus, begins some 7 generations before that in 1066. In addition, this book traces the genealogy of Sir Francis Baildon through many ancestral lines, all of which include English Royalty, and indeed, royalty throughout Europe. Some references predate Charlemagne, and in addition to him include William the Conqueror and most of the English Kings. Indeed, the book begins, "William, Duke of Normandy, born at Falaise in 1025, surnamed the Conqueror from his triumph over Harold at Hastings, October 14, 1066, crowned King of England by Aldred, Archbishop of York, at Westminster Abbey, December 25th same year, married Maud or Matilda, daughter of Baldwin V, Count of Flanders, 5th in descent from Ethelwida, daughter of Alfred the Great, 10th from Charlemagne....." Though it is an arduous task, Sir Francis Baildon can be located at the 24th generation from Alfred the Great through the entire list of English Kings to Edward III. However, this edition of our family history will not address our European heritage to any extent, certainly not the elaboration of the genealogy of Sir Francis Baildon. If the reader is interested, the above reference can be located in the DAR archives, the LDS Library in Salt Lake City, Utah, and the Library of Congress. As for Sir Francis himself;

He was Sir Francis Baildon of Kippar, Yorkshire, England, born in 1560 and Knighted 23 July, 1603. He was married four times, his first and second bearing him children, those of our interest from the second wife whose name was Margaret Goodricke whom he married in about 1587. This marriage produced eight children, one of them a son, Richard Belden, who was born in 1591. It was Richard Belden who immigrated to America.

From the "Americana", No. 4. October 1919 by the American Historical Society, "Richard Baildon was baptized 26 May, 1591., settled in New England toward the 17th century, owned eight pieces of property in Wethersfield Connecticut. During his life time he accumulated considerable real estate and laid a foundation of wealth for his progeny. His descendants have been marked with a keen business and commercial genius, sterling morals, and intellectual force. Held several town offices and was prominent in local affairs. Died 1655, wealthy beyond the standards of his day; highest type of cultivated Englishman who came to the New World. He brought three sons, William born about 1622, Samuel born about 1629, and John...."

Highest type of cultivated Englishman and that bit of flowery prose aside, a published genealogy by some of William Belden's descendents states that "Richard is supposed to have had a brief experience as a gentleman highway-man around London". In fact it is thought that the ramifications of this excursion from the normal behavior thought to be appropriate for an Englishman of royal blood, had cost him his inheritance of the family fortune, if there was one, and his arrest for robbery had certainly sullied his reputation. His friend, Sir Richard Saltonstall may have suggested this way out, and he apparently took it. In any case, Richard Baildon arrived in the New World in 1635 with his three above mentioned sons. It is not known if his wife Margaret had come with the family, there is no record of her death either in the New World or in England.

Interestingly, Richard began his career in the New World as a herder. He contracted with the town of Wethersfield to care for twelve score or 240 head of cattle for six months, price 24 pounds, twenty shillings in advance. His sons also became herders, really cattlemen of their day. They all had their own registered ear marks for cattle and hogs, "William - slit on both crop of near ear, John - slit on top of the far ear the near holl, Samuel - near ear swallow tailed or forked and slit of the far ear". The "near ear" is the left ear, the "far ear" is the right. Crop and holl refer to parts of the ear. This method of "branding" by ear marks was no doubt suitable in early New England. Apparently all live stock was communally cared for and controlled unlike later in the western states. Free roaming strays and theft were not a problem. The ear mark method no doubt proved to be unsatisfactory in the Old West, it was too easy to remove the mark simply by removing the ear. Any wolf or coyote could do that. Brands burned into the hide as permanent marks evolved to solve that problem.

As stated above, Richard died in 1655 leaving a considerable estate for his time. While the inventory is available, his heirs were not listed. There is positive evidence that Samuel was Richard's son, but there is no positive proof that William and John were. In spite of that, historians and genealogies are in general agreement that they were. His oldest son was William Belden who had been born in 1622 in England and had come to the New World with his father in 1635. William lived in Wethersfield most of his early life, and it was there that he married a woman named Thomasine, maiden name unknown, in 1644. In 1646 he moved to Norwalk, Connecticut where he died in 1655. Before his death he fathered six children, four sons and two daughters. His oldest daughter was Susanna Belden, mother of James Slason, and grandmother of Susannah H. Slason, the focus of our Pedigree Chart. The second oldest son was named Daniel, and though he is not of our line, the story of his life reveals just how savage life in the new world could be.

Daniel had served in the Colonial Wars and in King Phillips War and by 1670 had taken a wife by the name of Elizabeth Foote. By 1695, she had born him 14 children. The family had moved to Deerfield, Massachusetts in 1686. From the town records of Deerfield;

"Elizabeth wife to Daniel Belden ye head of the family together with Daniel Beldon, his son John Belden and Thankful Belden their children were all of them slaine by the enemy Sept. 16, 1696. The Indians came along from up Green River to the town and assaulted Mr. Daniel Belden's house; took Mr. Belden, his son Nathaniel and daughter Esther captive, killed his wife and three children and wounded Samuel and Abigail but they recovered although Samuel had a hatchet stuck in his head some of his brains came out at the wound."

A more detailed account was given by a minister, Samuel Williams;

"It being lecture day, the people were got out of ye meadows so that they might attend the lecture, so that ye enemy came as far as Mr. Daniel Belden's house that was within gunshot of ye fort. Mr. Belden, being busy about his work was but just got home from ye fields and left his cart, it was loaded with corn, and went into ye house and left ye oxen with ye cart and ye Indians rushed upon them and took him prisoner and his son Nathaniel, aged 22 years and his daughter Esther age 13 and killed his wife and his sons Daniel and John and his daughter Thankful and one of them took his son Samuel from ye cart, but he kicked and scratched and bit, so that ye Indian set him down and struck ye edge of his hatchet into ye side of his head. He tried twice or thrice to pull it out and so left him for dead and as he came to himself he looked up and saw them running from him; he bled considerably and brains came out of ye wound and he went in a dazed condition toward ye fort till he came to ye little bridge where he fell off and was carried to Mr. Williams and was so bad as left for dead but it please God his life was spared and his

wound healed and he is yet living; He was once or twice accounted to be dying and once was accounted dead a day or two after his being wounded. Abigail Belden, another daughter was shot in ye arm as she was running to ye fort but it is generally thought ye bullet struck her came from ye fort. Sarah Belden, another daughter hid herself among some tobacco and so escaped.

Ye first night following the raid the Indians lodged in a round hole near the river above the one half rock at N.F.D. St where the fires were fresh, thence set away for Canada by ye way of oak Creek leaving Connecticut River. When Mr. Belden and company came to ye fort called Oso the males were obliged to run the gauntlet. Mr. Belden being very nimble or light footed man received but a few blows save at first setting out, but the other men were much abused by clubs, fire brands, etc.

The story goes on to tell of the captivity in Canada and final release after the end of hostilities between the English and French. Daniel got back to Deerfield by way of Albany, the Hudson River, New York City and finally boat back to Massachusetts.

In 1699 Daniel married a woman named Hepzibah Buell. This woman had been previously married to a Thomas Wells who subsequently died. After his death she was fined by the County Court for "wearing silks" and she became a licensed beggar in marked contrast to her younger days of wealth. In 1693 she returned to her home town of Windsor. While she was there the town was attacked by Indians. Hearing that her children were outside the palisades, and in spite of efforts to restrain her, she rushed to their aid and was, with her three daughters, "knocked on the head and scalped." She recovered from this ordeal, went to Deerfield, and there married Daniel Belden in 1699. Enough was not yet enough however, the Deerfield massacre occurred in 1704, when the town was again attacked by the Indians and French. Hepzibah was taken prisoner by the Indians. She was killed by them when she could not keep up on the forced march to Canada. The story of the Deerfield Massacre is one of the most documented dramas of the early American Frontier. Sheldon's History of Deerfield is probably the definitive account of that episode.

Daniel married a third time, this time to a Sarah Hawks, also a widow. Daniel finally died in 1732, and Sarah lived until 1751.

Susannah Belden was the younger sister of Daniel Belden and oldest daughter of William Belden. She married Eleazer Slason in Bedford, Westchester County, New York in 1680. As previously noted, James Slason was a son of this marriage, and he was the father of Susannah H. Slason.

NEHEMIAH BATES CONTINUED. Returning to the Nehemiah Bates and Susannah Slason family, they had six children, three sons and three daughters. Son Isaac died at the age of one while Nehemiah and Abraham grew to adulthood, as did all three daughters Susanna, Sarah, and Hannah.

Nehemiah died in May of 1776, just two months before the Declaration of Independence. He missed an epic time in American history, but his sons did not. There is no record in any of the references that Nehemiah Jr. served in any military capacity during the Revolution. His brother Abraham however, did serve, but on the side of the English.

On 7 October, 1778 appears in the Probate records an entry which states that "Abraham Bates of Stamford, who has joined the enemy.....". He was not alone, there were several names of other Stamford men who were loyalists and fought on the side of the English. Abraham Bates became a Private in the 5th Company of Captain David Waterbury III's 4th Regiment. On 7 October, 1778 a commissioner was directed to inventory Abraham Bates estate and that inventory was completed and filed on 11 November of that year. The purpose of the inventory was confiscation of the property by the state of Connecticut. We have a copy of the inventory record which reveals a net worth of over 770 Pounds, most of it in real estate and his house. On 27 April, 1781 it was recorded that:

"Abraham Bates of Stamford, having gone over to join the enemies of the United States, on application of his brother Nehemiah Bates, commissioners were appointed to partition his estate." It appears from the inventory that much of the land held by Abraham was owned jointly with his brother Nehemiah, and this entry along with others were attempts to straighten out the legal aspects of the forfeiture and subsequent titles.

This legal action was not an isolated case, there were many other Stamford men who chose to remain loyal to King George, and they suffered the same fate of forfeiture of their worldly goods as a result. In the book "History of Stamford" an entire chapter is devoted to the list of Stamford men who were Loyalists. In addition to Abraham, three other Bates men appear on the list, these all probably being relatives of Nehemiah and Abraham. After the war many of the Loyalists fled to Canada, though some remained in the United States, but not many who survived returned to their original homes.

Abraham Bates survived the war and is located in 1795 in New York City where he is identified as a merchant. The legal ramifications of the forfeiture were still being adjudicated in that year. One entry addresses a parcel of land that has on it a grist mill and boulding mills, so there must have been considerable money involved in the process. This along with the land entries for his father, Nehemiah Bates Sr. indicate that the Bates family in Stamford prior to the Revolution was of considerable means. It also appears that the Revolutionary War was a turning point in the financial fortunes of the Bates family line. The family was obviously split ideologically, and a great deal of the family wealth was lost to the state on legal grounds. Reputation and social status were also no doubt diminished.

A final item of interest regarding Abraham Bates is his entry in the 1790 First Federal Census. That census notes that he is the head of a household consisting of his family and two slaves. It would appear that some parts of the Bates family continued to practice slavery from the early times of Robert Bates in the mid 1630's till at least 1800.

NEHEMIAH BATES JR. was born on 11 September, 1735 in Stamford. He also had three marriages during his lifetime. The first was to Mary Smith on 30 or 31 January, 1760. Mary had been born on 17 August, 1736. Two children were born of this marriage, Isaac Bates, 3 February, 1763, and Theodosia Bates, 22 January, 1768. Theodosia lived for only two years. In 1770 this Bates family is noted as being members of the 1st Congregational Church in Stamford. Mary (Smith) Bates died on 7 January, 1771.

On 13 November, 1772 Nehemiah Bates Jr. married Elizabeth Scofield. They are noted in 1774 as being members of the 1st Congregational Church in Stamford. From this marriage came Jacob Bates, 28 August, 1773, Ebenezer Bates, 7 February, 1775, Asa Bates, birth date unknown, and Theodosia Bates, 28 September, 1779.

It is not known when Elizabeth Scofield died, but Nehemiah Bates Jr. married a third time to a woman named Mary. Nothing more of her is known, other than her first name. She was however, the mother of two more of Nehemiah Bates Jr.'s children. They were Sarah Bates, 27 June 1782 and Martha Bates, 21 April, 1785.

It is not recorded when Nehemiah Bates Jr. died. The last land transaction in his name was shortly after the birth of his last child, Martha Bates in 1785. It is noted that the number of land transactions or other probate records relating to Nehemiah Bates Jr. is dramatically reduced from those relating to his family back to the time of Robert Bates. It is pretty clear that the fortunes of the Bates family in Connecticut was in decline with this generation as a result of the Revolutionary War.

JACOB BATES was born on 28 August, 1773, the first born son of Nehemiah Bates Jr. and Elizabeth Scofield. The birth was in Stamford, Connecticut. He was baptized on 8 May, 1774 in the 1st Congregational Church in Stamford. Jacob married twice, the first time to Mary Lawrence who was born in 1778. The marriage took place on 25 November, 1796 in the 1st Congregational Church. There were two children born of this marriage, Augustus Bates, 19 August, 1797 and Betsy Ann, 19 March, 1800. Mary Lawrence died six months after this birth at the age of 22 on 20 December, 1800.

Jacob Bates married for a second time on 19 December, 1802 to Abigail Smith. There is conflicting information on when Abigail was born. She is noted in one reference as dying at the age of 76 in 1860 placing her birth in 1784. There is an entry in the 1850 census for Fairfield County, Connecticut that lists an Abigail Bates at the age of 70, placing her birth in 1780. There is no other information as to who her parents were or where they came from.

Jacob's marriage to Abigail was very fruitful and long lasting. Ten children were born of this marriage, seven sons and three daughters. The births spanned the years 1803 through 1825, with all births taking place in Stamford, though there is some information that indicates that the last two, Martha and Ann Elizabeth were born in Clinton Township, Dutchess Co., New York. This is likely correct in spite of the fact that Jacob and Abigail are buried in Stamford. As we shall see later, there was some sort of connection to Dutchess County, New York since one of Jacob and Abigail's sons married a woman from that place.

There is, however, very little other information regarding Jacob Bates and his family. There are no land transactions noted or any other entry such as a will cited from the Probate Records. In addition, this is the last generation of the Bates family cited in the book "Bates, Selleck, and Allied Families of Stamford". There is one entry, however, that serves to connect Jacob Bates in Stamford, Connecticut with the Bates family in Missouri from which we are descended. That entry is: Nehemiah Bates, born 8 December, 1803, married to Elizabeth Barnes.

NEHEMIAH BATES had married Elizabeth Barnes who was born in Clinton Township of Dutchess County, New York on 28 June, 1806. It is not known whether the marriage took place in Dutchess County, New York or in Stamford, but their three children noted in the 1860 Missouri Federal Census were all born in Stamford. They were Edwin Bates, born in 1843, Anson R. Bates, born in 1846, and Francis Bates, born in 1849. These birth dates seem quite late since the first would have occurred when Elizabeth was 37 years old, and the last when she was 43. The 1850 Federal Census for Stamford reveals that there were indeed other older children. In 1850 there is a son Sandford, age 18, and a daughter Catherine, age 16 listed. Edwin at this time is only 8, so there is an eight year gap between these sets of children indicating that others were probably born and died at a young age.

It was Nehemiah Bates, six generations removed from the Bates progenitor Robert Bates who had come to America in 1630, who finally joined the movement to the West. That move took place sometime between 1850 and 1860, over 220 years after Robert Bates sought religious, economic, and social freedom in the New World. He had found all of that. These freedoms were secured by his and the following generations, though the economic well being of his line by 1850 had no doubt significantly declined. It is very likely that Nehemiah Bates moved West to restore the family wealth which apparently began to decline after the Revolutionary War. It does not appear that he or any of his descendants realized any significant improvement in economic status as a result of his move, but the West offered the opportunity. He sought that opportunity in Missouri.

The Nehemiah Bates family is located in Jeddo Township of Knox County, Missouri in August of 1860. Knox County is the northeast corner of Missouri, one county south of the Iowa border and one county west of the Mississippi River. It is not known what led Nehemiah to this place in the West but it appears that he did not migrate alone. There are other families close by in this census that are familiar names in Bates history in Stamford, Connecticut. In the census the neighbors are noted as being Connecticut natives. One is a Smith family and another is Scofield. James Smith is a farmer while William Scofield is a blacksmith. Nehemiah is listed as a farmer. The two older children in the 1850 census are no longer with the family, but the three younger sons Edwin, Anson, and Francis are there, as is Charity Barnes.

By 1870 the Nehemiah Bates family is dispersing. Nehemiah and Elizabeth remain in Jeddo Township with their household now reduced to themselves and son Francis, who has taken a wife by the name of Lydia A. Palmerston. Edwin Bates has his own household and is married to a woman named Sarah and has two children named Alice and Edwin. Anson R. Bates has taken a job as a farm laborer in Fabius Township on a farm owned by a George Sykes. He is not yet married. Charity Barnes is still alive at the age of 83 but is living with a different family at this time.

In 1880 Nehemiah and Elizabeth are living in the household of Anson R. Bates who had taken a wife in 1871. They are now in their 70's and it appears that Anson has returned to the home farm to work it and care for his aging parents. So far no record of Nehemiah's or Elizabeth's death has been located, nor has one for Charity Barnes for that matter. It is surmised that all are buried in Jeddo Township, Knox County, Missouri on or near Nehemiah Bates' home farm.

ANSON R. BATES had been born in Stamford Connecticut in 1846 and had migrated to Knox County, Missouri with his father's family between the years of 1850 and 1860. As noted above, he lived with his father until about 1870 when he is hiring out as a farm laborer. In 1871 he took a wife. Her name was Elizabeth M. Allen.

Very little is yet known of the Allen Family. Elizabeth was, according to her death certificate, the daughter of John H. Allen who had been born in Tennessee. The mother is not recorded. Elizabeth had been born on 18 March, 1850 in Missouri. We have found the John H. Allen family in the 1850 Federal Census in Warren Township of Marion County, Missouri. This census records John H. Allen as a farmer, 28 years old, hence born in about 1828 in Tennessee. It identifies Elizabeth's mother as Jane, age 22, hence born in about 1828, also in Tennessee. There is a son in the family, Alfred, born in about 1844, also in Tennessee. Finally, there is Elizabeth being two months old at the time of the census and born in Missouri. There is a discrepancy in the age. If the census was recorded on 30 October, 1850 as noted, then Elizabeth should have been 7 months old at the time of the census. The noted two month age entry is probably in error.

From this census data it appears that John Allen and Jane were married somewhere in Tennessee in about 1843, Jane being a mere 15 years of age at the time. Some time after the birth of their son Alfred in 1844, John and Jane migrated to Missouri where Elizabeth was born, probably in Marion County in March of 1850. It is also possible that Jane was John H. Allen's second wife and son Alfred and Elizabeth were half siblings. There is currently no evidence to support that conjecture.

John H. Allen and his family are also found in the 1870 Federal Census in Union Township of Marion County. His occupation is listed as a plasterer. In this census John's wife Jane does not appear. It is probable that she died since there are six children now in the family, the youngest being seven in 1870. Her death therefore would have been after 1862 and before 1870. John Allen's oldest son Alfred does not appear in this census either. He would have been 26 years of age so this is not surprising, but he is not found with his own family in Missouri in this census. Since he would have been of prime age for the Civil War, it is also possible that he died in that conflict.

While those two family members no longer appear, several other children are listed in John H. Allen's household in 1870. Along with daughter Elizabeth, now 20, are: Eugina, age 18, Martha J, age 16, Hattie, age 11, Rosa L., 9, and finally a son, John, age 7. We have no further information on these other Allen children.

Elizabeth Allen was 21 years of age when she married Anson R. Bates, their wedding record showing that they were married on 23 September, 1871 in Knox County. The Allen and Bates families lived about 30 miles apart at the time of the wedding, though it is not clear why the wedding should take place in Knox rather than Marion County. The 1880 Federal Census noted above shows Anson as head of household with his wife Elizabeth and two daughters, Cora A., age 6 and Hattie F., age 3. Anson's parents, Nehemiah and Elizabeth, are listed in his household as boarders with Nehemiah listed as Anson's father. Anson is probably living on his father's original farm in Knox County.

There is a bit of conflicting data regarding Anson R. Bates' wife Elizabeth. On Cora Abigale Bates's death certificate, Cora's daughter Emma has reported that Abigale Bates' mother was Elizabeth Scofield. However, Anson's marriage to Elizabeth Allen clearly took place, and Elizabeth Bates' 1924 death certificate identifies her father as John H. Allen. It is therefore clear that Emma Sites was not aware of the true maiden name of her grandmother when her mother passed away.

The obituary of Cora Abigale Bates, Anson's oldest daughter, states that the Anson R. Bates family migrated to Burleigh County, North Dakota in 1882. It is not known if Anson's parents came with them to North Dakota or not. Their age would seem to rule out such an adventure, but it is entirely possible that they made the trip. There is evidence that this migration was a group enterprise with at least Sirean Suverly and David George Sites making the journey with them. They all settled in the Glencoe area near the Burleigh and Emmons County line.

The 1885 North Dakota State Census locates the Anson R. Bates family in Burliegh County in Township 37, Range 76 which is on the southern edge of the county. The family is listed with Anson R., Elizabeth M., Cora A., and Hattie F. There is no listing for Anson's parents who were living with them in Missouri, leaving the question of what happened to Nehemiah and his wife Elizabeth still open.

Anson R. Bates homesteaded the land he was on in the 1885 census. On 4 May, 1887 Anson made a final payment to the government of \$8.00 giving him ownership of the Northeast Quarter of Section 34 of Township 37, Range 76. The Bates family lived on this quarter section until about 1891 when they relocated to McClean County, North Dakota on a farm about 65 miles north and near the Missouri River. While they lived on the farm in Burliegh County, a newspaper, The Emmons County Record, was started in Hazelton, a small community further to the south in Emmons County. Like all small town newspapers, there were reports of the local social scene, and the A. R. Bates family was mentioned frequently. It was from these newspaper accounts that the departure of the Anson Bates family from the area, and also the budding romance between David Sites and Cora Abigale Bates was recorded. In fact, David Sites also relocated at this time to a place near where the Bates family resettled, no doubt to pursue his romance with Cora Abigale. While it is clear that the Bates family moved to McClean County in 1891, it was not until 1893 that the sale of the Bates homestead in Burliegh County was recorded.

In January of 1893, David Sites and Cora Abigale Bates were finally married and David Sites apparently moved back to the Emmons County area at that time. The marriage took place in the town of Stewartsville, a small community in southern Burliegh County near the Bates' previous home. It is not known if the Bates family had returned to this Livona District as it was called, or if the wedding was planned for an area where many of the old friends of both families still lived.

In any case, Anson R. Bates decided that farming the North Dakota Prairie was no longer for him, and he and his wife Elizabeth and remaining daughter, Hattie Florence, moved to the city of St. Paul, MN, probably in the year 1893. The St. Paul City Directory of 1894 lists the A. R. Bates family as living at 1105 Suburban Ave. in that city.

Anson Bates is again listed in the St. Paul City Directory in 1895. Directories are then not available for the years 1896-1902. However, the Bates family appears in the 1900 Census in St. Paul, and again in the 1905 Minnesota State Census. In the former, Hattie Florence appears, but in the latter she does not. She is listed however, as Hattie F. Schultz, wife of William Schultz, living at the same address as Anson and Elizabeth in 1905. According to their marriage license, Hattie and William had been married in St. Paul on 17 October, 1900. It is interesting to note that the marriage record names her as Florence H. Bates. She seems to have changed the sequence of her given names at will for some reason. However, her real name was probably Hattie Florence since her parents name her that in the 1880 census when she is 3 years old.

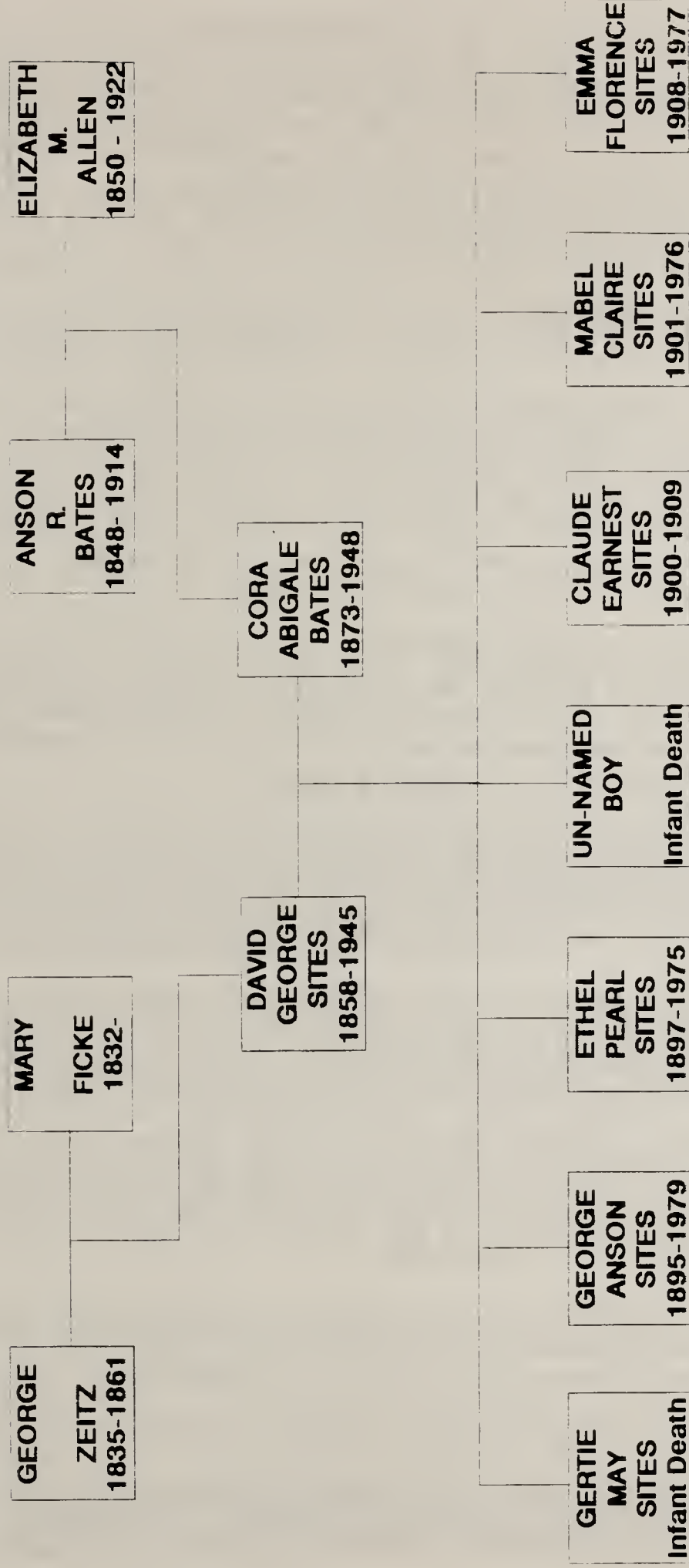
Anson Bates appears in the St. Paul City Directories for the years 1903-1907. In all these listings, Anson is noted as being a working man in several different businesses including wood working and with a company that appears to be either involved in making furs or manufacturing leather goods. In the 1908 St. Paul City Directory it is noted that Anson R. Bates has relocated to Santa Clara, California. It is not known for sure, but William and Hattie Schultz probably went there with them at that time.

Anson and Elizabeth are found in the 1910 Federal Census in Santa Clara. However, on 11 July, 1914, Anson died of heart disease at the age of 62. His death certificate has been obtained and it is noted that he was buried in the Santa Clara Cemetery. Elizabeth apparently then went to live with William and Hattie, where she appears with them in the 1920 Federal Census in the town of Sunnyvale near Santa Clara. Coincidentally, this is the small city in which one of her great grandsons would chose to live some 50 years later, though he did not know at the time that his ancestor had preceeded him in this home selection.

Elizabeth died in 1922 at the age of 72, also of heart disease. Her burial place is not noted and it is not known if she still lived with her daughter at the time she died.

Hattie Florence is remembered by the family as Aunt Flo, and that her married name was Rose. Indeed, the 1948 obituary of Cora Abigale, her sister, states that Cora was survived by a sister, "Florence Rose of Los Angeles". It is therefore likely that William had died, or he and Florence had divorced, and Florence had remarried a man named Rose. Hattie Florence did have at least one child. In the 1920 Federal Census of Sunnyvale, California there is listed a 2 year 6 month old son named Lawrence W. Schultz. Whether or not there were other children is unknown. Nothing more is known of Hattie Florence or her family.

FAMILY OF DAVID GEORGE SITES



DAVID GEORGE SITES

David George Sites, George and Mary Sites only son, was born on 6 October, 1858 in Knox County, Missouri. The time and place of his birth were attested to by Mary Sites when she made application for a pension for her children due to her husband's death during the Civil War. His father, George Sites, died of typhoid fever while in the Union Army in December of 1864 when David was a lad of six. His mother Mary supported the family until 1869 when she married Jacob Miller. Jacob was a widower with two sons, Henry and Adam. Adam Miller and David Sites were the same age and Henry Miller was three years younger.

David lived in the Jacob Miller household until he left for North Dakota around 1883. He is listed in both the 1870 and 1880 Federal Census as a member of the Miller household but with no further amplifying information.

It is likely that David Sites migrated to North Dakota with other families from Knox County. Sirean Suverly, whose wife was David George's older sister Emma, no doubt immigrated at that time and it is also likely that the Anson R. Bates family migrated with the group. The precise date is not clear, but it took place some time after 1880 and before 1885. The 1885 North Dakota state census for Emmons County lists David as a 26 year old bachelor farmer living with the Sirean Suverly family. The Anson R. Bates family is listed in 1885 in Burleigh County which borders Emmons County on the north. According to David George's Sites obituary, he migrated to Burleigh County in 1883 and moved to Emmons County in 1885, the year of the census.

In the year 1884 a newspaper, THE EMMONS COUNTY RECORD, began publishing. Mrs. Mary Jo Wolden of Mount Vernon, Washington, a grand daughter of Sirean and Emma (Sites) Suverly, has taken from preserved copies of this newspaper articles and notes relating to the above group of Missourians who migrated to North Dakota. We are grateful for her work in that it provides some details in the life of David Sites that illuminates his life and time that we would have never known. This work will be referenced frequently.

David Sites apparently continued to live with the Suverly family for some years. There is no evidence that he started his own farm until 1898, some five years after his marriage. There is some evidence that he was an independent farmer on rented land prior to that time, but there is no clear evidence one way or the other. The Emmons County Record gives us some idea of David Sites during his prolonged bachelor days.

On July 5th, 1888 The Record reported an exceptionally merry and enjoyable supper and dance that lasted till daylight, with David Sites and Cora Bates both in attendance. In June of 1889 the Record reported that David Sites paid his relatives a visit, he has been working for Mr. A. R. Bates in Burleigh County during the summer. Later that July David attended an ice-cream festival at the Livona Church, one of many young bachelors present.

In December of 1890 it was reported that "Miss Cora Bates, who formerly lived at Glencoe, but now whose home is 65 miles up the River in McLean County, is visiting Livona friends and is staying with the Si Suverly family. David Sites is then mentioned several times as participating in social events through the winter and spring of 1891. Then in April of that year the Record reports that:

"D. G. Sites will remove to Sheridan County in a short time. Dave is a good old boy and will be missed by his many friends. Someone told Darby that Dave was getting tired of making flapjacks and that he intended to take unto himself a wife. Good for you Davey, old boy. Let us know when the affair will come off."

In late May of 1891 David did move, but the Record corrected its previous report with the following.

"Dave Sites is busy moving his property to the northeastern part of Burleigh County, near Storm Lakes. Dave did not intend locating in Sheridan County, as we previously stated, but is in Burleigh, four miles from the Sheridan County line."

There are no further entries relating to David Sites or the Bates family until the summer of 1895. However, eighteen months after David moved north to Sheridan County, on 24 January, 1893, David George Sites married Miss Cora Abigale Bates, the daughter of Anson R. Bates, in the town of Stewartsdale, a town which, like many others of

the time, no longer exists. Stewardsdale was located about five miles north and five miles west of Glencoe, also no longer existing, which was on the Emmons and Burleigh County line. David George was 35 years old while Cora Abigale was only 20. It is not clear why the wedding would have taken place there. It may have been that Anson R. Bates, Cora's father had decided to move to St. Paul, Minnesota, and they returned to the vicinity of their early years to be among old friends for the occasion.

David and Cora's first child, Gertie May, was born in either late 1893 or early 1894 and died as an infant. What is presumed to be her grave is with that of several Suverly family members now buried in the Glencoe Cemetery. The Suverly family had established a cemetery on their own property and several Suverly family members, as well as others, were buried there. All of these graves were moved to the Glencoe Cemetery around 1970 when the Missouri River was dammed and Lake Oahe was formed, submerging the portion of the Suverly property that contained their family cemetery. Over the years, the identity of all the individuals buried in the Suverly Cemetery were lost, and as a result they are identified as "unknown" after their move to Glencoe. One of the relocated graves however, is marked "Sites Infant". This is probably Gertie May's grave, though another possibility exists. David and Cora had a son, born in 1898, who also died as an infant but was never named. The marked grave could be his. The "Sites Infant" grave is presumed to be that of Gertie May since she was no doubt originally buried in the Suverly cemetery while the grave of the infant son could have been on the Sites farm or some other nearby cemetery.

In January of 1895, Cora bore her first son, George Anson Sites. It is not known exactly where this birth occurred since it is not known where in Emmons County David and Cora lived at that time. In January of 1897, Ethel Pearl was born, and in 1898 the un-named infant son was born. The location of these later two births is also unknown, but on 9 March of 1898 David filed on his own homestead farm. Since the recording of the filing was likely after the fact, David and Cora had probably moved onto their homestead prior to that time. How much earlier could only be guessed at, but it could have been as early as 1894 or so.

The homestead consisted of 160 acres of land identified as the south 1/2 of the SW 1/4 of Section 13 and the west 1/2 of the NW 1/4 of Section 24 of Township 135W, Range 78N, of Emmons County, North Dakota. These two parcels of land adjoined each other and formed an "L" shape. The land was along Badger Creek which flowed through both parcels and was about a mile from where Badger Creek flowed into the Missouri River. Part of the land was in the Missouri River flood plain and part was on the first terrace above the flood plain. The Livona post office was about two miles east of the site David had chosen to erect his farm house.

Pictures of the original house still exist, though its exact location on the farm is not known. It is thought to have been on the lower portion of the land, as were the original barn and other out buildings. The construction was of hewn logs and heavily chinked with some sort of mortar between the logs. The roof was covered with sod, a common practice for the pioneers of the Great Plains. Since his land was along the river bottom, there were no doubt plenty of trees from which to build his first home, though many settlers on the North Dakota prairie were hard pressed to find any wood at all, and used sod as their primary building material for the whole house, walls and roof. While North Dakota is still relatively treeless, there are considerably more trees now than when the settlers first arrived. Other than those along waterways, most trees have been planted as wind breaks to protect crops and buildings or as decorative additions to the treeless landscape.

From the Book of North Dakota Place Names comes the following description of Livona.

Livona was a rural Post Office established Dec. 31, 1883 with Lavina Livingston as Post Master. It was named for the Post Master, with an unexplained change in the spelling, although others say it was named for the Livonia District of Russia. It was located 13 miles west northwest of Hazelton. For over 50 years the post office was run by members of the Wesley Baker family, either from their farm home or from a country store nearby. A population of 32 was reported in 1890. On June 30, 1955, Post Master John Henry Baker, a grandson of Wesley, closed the facility and it was relocated ten miles north into Burleigh County, where it became a rural branch of the Bismarck Post Office.

In April of 1899 a fifth child was born to David and Cora. This child was a son and he was named Claude Earnest. Claude was handicapped, the specific affliction not being known but thought to be mongolism. The Emmons County Record reported on 16 September, 1909 the following:

"Claude, the 9 year old boy of Mr. Mrs. David Sites of Livona died at the family home last Monday after a short illness and was buried last Tuesday. Summer Complaint was the immediate cause of his demise. The little fellow had never been strong and when attacked by the dread disease, quickly succumbed. His parents, who are among the earliest settlers in the river district have the sympathy of all in their bereavement." It is not known where he is buried. It could have been in an unknown grave on the Sites farm or in the Glencoe Cemetery. No evidence exists to support any location.

The 1900 Federal Census records the David George Sites family in the Burr Oak School District of Emmons County, with David, Cora, George, Ethel and Claude. This census is of particular interest since David George Sites was the census taker or Enumerator, and he signed it as such. Presumably this record as made by one of our ancestors is accurate and can be assumed to contain no errors, a risky assumption with some census records! David was apparently active in community affairs. In his obituary he is noted as having served on the school board for about 25 years. It is also remembered that he contributed his skills as a carpenter to the construction of the North Dakota State capital building in Bismarck. This wooden building later burned and no longer exists.

He was also apparently an innovative farmer. His obituary records that he was the first person in the Livona district to try to raise corn. He crossed a strain of yellow feed corn with a pure white flint variety. The result of this cross was claimed to have been the start of what was known in 1945 to be the Falconer variety of corn.

On 27 May, 1901 Cora bore her sixth child, Mabel Claire Sites. David and Cora's seventh child, Emma Florence Sites, did not follow until 22 February, 1908. The later was an eventful month for the Sites family. Just five days after Emma's birth, the Patent on the land David had applied for homestead ten years earlier was "proven" and David then owned the 160 acre farm that supported his family.

No early photographs of David and Cora survive but later photos reveal that David was a short man of slight build. He was probably about 5 foot 4 inches and probably weighed less than 140 pounds. Those that remember him recall that he was seldom seen without a hat. Cora, on the other hand, was a very large woman. Though she was not exceptionally tall, she grew very fat, probably as a result of some medical problem. Her daughter Emma was also very heavy, though some family members thought that much of her weight problem was self induced. In later years, Cora's weight became such that she was not able to perform normal household chores and became semi-invalid, spending her time between her rocker in the living room and her bed.

In the 1910 North Dakota federal census, the Sites family appears on the homestead farm in Emmons County with all living children present. George was 15, Ethel was 13, Mabel 8, and Emma, 2. On the same page of the census on which they appear also appears the Edwin E. Scott family. The Sites and the Edwin E. Scott families no doubt knew each other at that time, though this Scott family was to leave the area for Dickinson that year. Mabel's future husband Glenn was six years old then. Also in the county at that time lived the Washington C. Scott family, with son Clyde, age 17, and Eva, age 14, future husband and wife of Ethel and George Sites. The Scott families and their history in Emmons County is related in previous chapters.

In 1912 David George Sites gave his son George Anson a sow and her litter to raise. George, who was about 17 years old at the time, did a good job of it and when it came time to market the animals, made a good deal of profit on the enterprise. With the money he earned from the project, George bought the family an organ. This was not only a family but a community event. The Emmons County Record reported in February of 1913 that "George Sites has invested in a new organ and now there will be music in the air." It is remembered that the purchase price was about \$60.00, a significant sum in 1913. The purchase was made through a mail order from Sears and Roebuck. The bellows which produced the air for the organ were foot operated and it was quite an addition to the family parlor, not only as a piece of furniture, but also as an expansion of the home entertainment possibilities of the family. Most of the Sites children were musically inclined, almost all of them being able to play the violin or fiddle.

The organ remains in the family today, now being in possession of Margorie (Sites) Stene of Ada, Minnesota. The instrument is still in working order and was the center piece of a sing-along of old church hymns at an impromptu gathering of friends and relatives at the Stene home in the Spring of 1990, the scene probably not too different from that enjoyed by the ancestors of those gathered around the organ at an earlier time and place.

In the 1915 North Dakota census the family is still intact with no change. However, it appears that George Anson was counted twice. He not only appears under his father's household but also in the Oscar Forsyth household, probably working as a hired hand. It is known that George worked as a hired man on other farms as well. The Oder farm was visited in 1990 and Mrs. Myrwin Oder, the former Naome Buckley, related that the visitors were served coffee in the same kitchen that George Sites had eaten many a meal while he worked for Mr. Oder many years before. This lady also provided a copy of the "History of the Glenco-Sloan Memorial Presbyterian Church", the church related to the Glencoe Cemetery where David George and Cora Abigale Sites are buried. This church was established in 1885 and is still in use today. Some interesting notes about that church and cemetery are presented here.

The church was organized in 1885 by Reverend Isaac Oliver Sloan and local members of the community. Rev. Sloan was called with a salary of \$150.00 per year. The land for the church was donated by a Dugald Campbell with two restrictions. The first was that if the land was ever used for other than church purposes it would revert to the heirs of Dugald Campbell. The second was that no part of the church property was to be used for a cemetery. Why this restriction was placed on the property is not known but it accounts for the rather unusual circumstance that finds the church on the north side of the Burleigh/Emmons County line in Burleigh County, while the church cemetery is across the road in Emmons County. Construction of the church was begun in May of 1885 but it was not fully completed until 1889.

The church ladies organized the Woman's Missionary Society and started a long tradition in the church of three day festival Glencoe Suppers. For several years there was no kitchen equipment in the church, so a stove had to be borrowed from a farmer's wife, hauled to the church, used for three or four days, counting heat up and cool down time, and then hauled back to the farm that loaned it. The menu's were impressive. Roast venison, pressed prairie chicken, mutton pies and gallons of oyster stew. One record indicates that Mrs. Anson R. Bates and Mrs. George Buckley baked and decorated four and five tiered cakes which were auctioned off with the proceeds going to the church. Some sold for as much as \$10.00.

The first woman to be married in the church was asked some years later what she wore to her winter wedding. Humph! she replied, "I wore my old brown coat and overshoes." The church was not heated, and the wedding party's appearance must have been unusual to say the least! At Elsie Smith's baptism, she had on such a long gown of lace and ribbons that while her mother carried her to the altar, her father carried the train. One winter Sunday the Welsh family got ready for church and wrapped the baby in several heavy bed quilts to keep it warm. While enroute in the sleigh, the mother peaked into the quilts to check on the baby and couldn't find her in the huge pile of quilts. The child had somehow fallen out of all the quilts un-noticed, and they had to back track at a gallop to rescue the baby from the snow. These stories reveal something of the life and times of the pioneer life in the early days in North Dakota.

In March of 1916 the Record reported that: "D. G. Sites was in town over Monday night for the first time since early last fall. He took out a big supply of provisions and is now prepared for bad roads or any other drawback. Mr. Sites is contemplating erecting a fine residence this summer."

Indeed, David used his carpentry skills to construct a new frame house. He placed it on the first terrace above the Missouri River flood plain near the edge of the terrace and facing the river bottom. The barn and other out buildings were close by, also up on the higher ground. A well was dug and a windmill installed to pump water for the stock tanks and for use in the house. A road led down the hill to the lower land, that part being used to raise potatoes, corn, and other crops requiring good moisture, while the upper land was used for grain crops such as oats and wheat. This location for the house would have been much more desirable than down on the lower part of the farm. During a family summer visit in 1939, the lower land was so infested with mosquitoes the visiting

children could not wander in the area for long, being driven to higher ground in short order. The trade off must have been the cold wind in the winter since the upper portion of the land was openly exposed to the wind from the north and west.

The new house was very well constructed. It had a full basement and the foundation walls were of concrete. The house was two stories high with the stairway to the upper floor being nearly in the center of the house dividing the lower floor into the living/dining room area and the kitchen and the upper floor into two sets of bedrooms. The house still stands today, but not on its original site, and unfortunately, essentially destroyed by fire.

The house was moved to a farm on Braddock Road in the north central part of Emmons County when the land on which it had been built became part of the land cleared for the waters of Lake Oahe formed by damming the Missouri River at Pierre, South Dakota. The house was moved to the new farm site and was improved with new siding, a utility room and bath and an attached garage. When the house was visited in the Spring of 1990 it was unoccupied and had suffered a severe fire which had apparently started in the utility room. The fire had gutted a great deal of the lower part of the house. It is doubtful that the house will ever be repaired and used again.

On 14 March, 1917, the Reverend J. W. Cabbage performed an unusual wedding ceremony in Hazelton. George Anson Sites married Eva May Scott and George's sister Ethel Pearl Sites married Eva May's brother, Clyde Luverne Scott in a double ceremony. The following appeared in the Emmons County Republican newspaper.

DOUBLE WEDDING OCCURS YESTERDAY

TWO POPULAR YOUNG COUPLES ENTER MATRIMONIAL CONTRACT, QUIET WEDDING

Rev. J. W. Cabbage had his hands full yesterday culminating contracts, the making of which Dan Cupid was responsible. The young folks made partners for life were Mr. Clyde Scott and Miss Ethel Sites and Mr. George Sites and Miss Eva Scott. The ceremony took place at the residence of Rev. J. W. Cabbage at two o'clock yesterday afternoon, March 14th, and was a very quiet affair, only the immediate members of the families being present.

All four of the young folks are well and favorably known throughout this section of the county and have scores of friends who wish them a safe journey over the matrimonial seas.

It is understood that country folks out west of town had a general roundup of forces last evening and wound up with a big double shirivari!

The young couples will settle down to house keeping in the west country. It is reported that Mr. and Mrs. Scott will reside on the Jas. Farrell farm and Mr. and Mrs. Sites will for the present live on the W. C. Scott farm where Mr. Sites will be employed.

The 1920 Federal Census for Emmons County, Livona Township, lists David George Sites and Cora with their two daughters Mabel and Emma living at home. Mabel is noted as having an occupation of teacher in a "common school". Emma is cited as having no occupation. There are no other facts of interest in this census.

In 1924, David and Cora's daughter Mabel Claire Sites, married Glenn Leroy Scott in Bismarck and so by the time of the 1925 census, David and Cora have only Emma left in their household.

In 1926, David and Cora's children, George Anson and Ethel Pearl, along with their families, left Emmons County. They migrated to the Ada, Minnesota area with their spouse's parents, Wash and Sadie Scott. In 1930, their daughter Mabel with her husband and family moved to South Dakota from Bismarck. This was at the beginning of the Great Depression years, which David and Cora, along with Emma, lived through on the original homestead. It is not known how difficult these years were for the Sites family but David was able to retain possession of his land and to maintain his household in spite of his advancing years. In 1930 David would have been 72 years old. The Record reported in 1935 the following. "Maybe some of the old timers would like to know that Mr. David Sites is feeling fine and looking good, and put up eight big stacks of hay, besides a lot of alfalfa, all by his lonesome." Again

in August of 1937 in the Record: "David Sites has put up his hay this year all by himself, and that some job for a man 78 years old." It is a testament to David's pioneer toughness that he was able to sustain the farm, Cora, and daughter Emma through this difficult time.

David and Cora continued to live on the homestead property until May of 1945. The Emmons County Record newspaper reported that;

"David Sites entered the St. Alexius Hospital May 27th with heart trouble. His oldest daughter, Mrs. William Hahn of Lidgerwood arrived last week to be at his bedside. His many friends have called on him and Ye Scribe attended to legal matters for his wife. Mrs. Sites is a semi-invalid."

The piece requires a bit of interpretation. The St. Alexius Hospital where David was taken after what was probably a heart attack, was in Bismarck. The Mrs. William Hahn referred to was David and Cora's oldest daughter, Ethel Pearl, whose first husband, Clyde Scott, had died in 1940. Ethel had married William Hahn in Lidgerwood in 1941. Ye Scribe was Mrs. Anna Corbin, a neighbor of the Sites family who lived in the Livona District and wrote newsworthy notes about that area for the Hazelton based Emmons County Record newspaper. Mrs. Sites was indeed at this time a semi-invalid. She probably weighed in excess of 350 pounds and spent her time between her rocking chair and her bed being unable to move about because of her weight.

On 13 June, 1945 David George Sites passed away. His obituary appeared on the 28th of that month in the Emmons County Record.

LIVONA PIONEER DIED RECENTLY

Remains of David Sites Laid to Rest in Glencoe Cemetery

One of the oldest pioneers in the Livona community, David Sites, passed away in a Bismarck hospital on Wednesday, June 13, we have learned. Mr. Sites was 87 years of age at the time of his death.

Born in Knox County, Missouri on October 6, 1858, the deceased came to Burleigh County, North Dakota 62 years ago and two years later moved to Emmons County. Mr. Sites was a prominent figure in the Livona territory and served on the school board there for about 25 years. It has been said that Mr. Sites was the first person in the Livona country to try to raise corn. He crossed a strain of yellow feed corn with a pure white flint variety. The result of this cross was claimed to have been the start of what is now known as the Falconer variety of corn.

Mr. Sites married Miss Cora A. Bates at Stewartsdale in 1893. She together with four children survive. The children are George A. Sites of Portland Oregon; Mrs. Ethel P. Hahn of Lidgerwood; Mrs. Mabel C. Scott of Portland Oregon; and Emma F. Sites of Livona.

Funeral services were held in the Glencoe Church on June 15. The interment was in the Glencoe Cemetery. Pallbearers were Ed Suber, Joe Gilman and John Watkinson of Livona and Bert Buckley, Wallace Kyes, and Jake Opp of Bismarck.

With David's death, Cora and Emma were unable to care for themselves and the farm. World War II was winding down and none of the surviving children could assume responsibility for the farm and care for their sister and mother. They therefore moved to a small house in Hazelton and rented the farm for income. In 1947 Cora sold the farm to Henry Opp and continued to live in Hazelton. They remained there until Cora became ill in the fall of 1948. She also entered the St. Alexius Hospital in Bismarck and died on the 14th of November of that year. Her obituary is as follows.

HAZELTON WOMAN DIES IN HOSPITAL

Mrs. Cora Sites, 74, one of the earliest settlers in the Glencoe and Livona Districts of Emmons County died last Sunday at a Bismarck hospital. Mrs. Sites had been in failing health for several years and had been hospitalized for five days.

Mrs. Sites was born Cora Bates in Missouri, Nov 27, 1873. She came to North Dakota with her parents in 1882, settling in the Glencoe area.

She married the late David Sites Jan 24, 1893. They lived on a farm in the Livona district until recent years when they moved to Hazelton. Mr. Sites died in 1945.

Mrs. Sites is survived by four children, Emma Sites, Hazelton; George A. Sites and Mrs. Glenn Scott, Portland Oregon; and Mrs. F. W. Hahn, Lidgerwood. She also leaves a sister, Mrs. Florence Rose of Los Angeles. Three children preceded her in death.

Funeral arrangements were not available at press time but services will be held at the Glencoe Church with interment in the family plot in the church cemetery.

Emma subsequently married John Rykman and continued to live in the Emmons County area until 1977, dying in July of that year in the hospital at Linton.

ADDRESS AND PHONE LIST

NAME	STREET	CITY	ST ZIP	PHONE
BAKKEN, VALEREE	1914 EAST DIVIDE AVE.	BISMARCK	ND 58501	(701) 222-3372
BEESON, BONNIE	7977 COUNTY ROAD 15	WAHPETON	ND 58075	(701) 274-8944
BIETHAN, LYNETTE	1475 N. W. EL DARADO CT.	ROSEBURG	OR 97470	(503) 672-1115
CASE, THELMA D.	ROUTE 2	VILLISCA	IA 50864	
CRANOR, EDNA	974 ROAD 2150	AUSTIN	CO 81410	(303) 835-3530
CRANOR, EDNA	BOX 545	ALMONT	CO 81210	(303) 641-3147
DUNBAR, MARGUERITE	HCR 46 BOX 7	OELRICHS	SD 57763	
EMERT, LOIS L.	735 OLIVE AVE. APT D1	NOVATO	CA 94945	(415) 892-1007
FASHANT, BETTY	11833 KUMQUAT ST.	COON RAPIDS	MN 55448	(612) 755-2626
FINDLEY, GEORGE R.	600 E. THIRD	VILLISCA	IA 50864	
FLEENER, RITA	1669 N. 24TH ST.	FORT DODGE	IA 50501	(515) 576-1072
FORD, FERN	2891 LOMA PLACE	BOULDER	CO 80301	(303) 449-0118
GRENZ, LORENE I.	223 WEST STREET	McCLUSKY	ND 58463	(701) 363-2413
HAHN, UVA	3403 E. MAIN SP 116	MESA	AZ 85213	
HASSELL, FLOYD D.	4/74 MILRAY AVE.	WOLLSTONECRAFT	NSW 2065	AUSTRALIA
HASSELL, FORREST	7413 SOUTHFIELD WAY	STOCKTON	CA 95207	
HOLDER, CATHY	5505 S.W. ILLINOIS	PORTLAND	OR 97219	
HUGEN, SHIRLEY	RT 1	LOVILLA	IA 50150	(515) 946-7710
KING, EDWIN E.	979 5TH AVE W. BOX 567	DICKINSON	ND 58602	(701) 225-8819
KING, JAMES W.	2714 RIVER OAK DRIVE	ORANGE PARK	FL 32073	(904) 278-2286
KING, WAYNE	707 WILLOW AVE.	BELLVIEW	NE 58601	
LANG, BETSY	10980 S.W. BERKSHIRE	PORTLAND	OR 97225	(503) 626-9509
LARSON, SUSAN	16881 LYONS AVE S.E.	PRIOR LAKE	MN 55372	(612) 440-5513
LORD, CHRISTINE	217 AMANDA COURT	OREGON CITY	OR 97045	(503) 655-4947
MARTINEZ, GERTIE	7590 RICKREALL ROAD	RICKREALL	OR 97371	(503) 623-9541
MUNDAL, DON	3707 10TH ST. N. UNIT C.	FARGO	ND 58102	(701) 232-8544
NELSON, JULIE	26110 IPAVA AVE.	LAKEVILLE	MN 55044	(612) 469-2640
PETERSON, MAVIS	314 N. HARRISON	LAKE MILLS	IA 50450	(319) 592-5529
RICHARDSON, KAREN	1009 N.W. MORGAN LANE	GRANTS PASS	OR 97526	(503) 479-0753
ROBERSON, KAREN	RT 2 BOX 2682A	KENNEWICK	WA 99337	(509) 582-8876
SANDERS, DAVID	425 BRAZIL DRIVE	HURST	TX 76054	(817) 577-2572
SANDERS, KEN/JANET	511 McFARLAND RANCH RD	ALEDO	TX 76008	(817) 441-7741
SANDERS, KEN/RAINY	700 N. BENTSEN PALM DR. #292	MISSION	TX 78572	(210) 519-8967
SANDERS, KEN/RAINY	6110 PLEASANT RIDGE RD. #4486	ARLINGTON	TX 76016	
SCOTT, ALLEN T.	1605 PLEASANT VALLEY ROAD	CHEHALIS	WA 98532	(206) 748-3186
SCOTT, CLAYTON	12179 VIA LOMA VISTA	YUMA	AZ 85367	(602) 305-5021
SCOTT, DEB	NABRE, AGSO, GPO BOX 378	CANBERRA, ACT	2601	AUSTRALIA
SCOTT, DERELD	121 VERDUGO DRIVE	LODI	CA 96240	(209) 386-6427
SCOTT, DONAVON	229 FAIRFAX	SECURITY	CO 80911	(719) 392-6286
SCOTT, EDWIN E.	P.O. BOX 448	LAFAYETTE	OR 97127	(503) 864-3132
SCOTT, GEORGE RICH	% JUDY SCOTT, 1902 N. 9TH ST.	FARGO	ND 58103	(701) 298-0953
SCOTT, JUDY	1902 N. 9TH ST.	FARGO	ND 58102	(701) 239-4925
SCOTT, KENNETH M.	1401 80TH ST. E.	INVER GROVE HTS	MN 55077	(612) 451-9026
SCOTT, MIKE	#46 DUNDEE DR. #2	MINOT AFB	ND 58704	(701) 727-9228
SCOTT, PATRA K.	432 4TH AVE. N.	GREYBULL	WY 82426	
SCOTT, RICHARD	1902 N. 9TH ST.	FARGO	ND 58102	(701) 239-4925
SCOTT-MULLEN, SUSAN	4301 BROOKVIEW DR.	CASPER	WY 82604	
SITES, LESTER	812 PIPER AVE.	SUNNYVALE	CA 94087	(408) 739-5504
SITES, SUSAN	22330 HOMESTEAD RD #119	CUPERTINO	CA 95014	(408) 736-4491
STENE, BRIAN	1444 PEARSON DRIVE	MAPLEWOOD	MN 55119	(612) 773-0986
STENE, MARJORIE	106 S. 4TH ST. W.	ADA	MN 56510	(218) 784-2850
STEVENS, BILLIE	3205 78TH ST.	DES MOINES	IA 50322	(515) 276-0172
TAYLOR, BILL	7602 SUNSET DRIVE	RALSTON	NB 68127	(402) 331-4426
WOLDEN, MARY JO	2142 MANN ROAD	MOUNT VERNON	WA 98273	
WOLF, RITA	558 4TH AVE. S.W.	DICKINSON	ND 58601	
WRIGHT, GRACE L.	406 NUCKOLS	RED OAK	IA 51566	(712) 623-2284





0113685